



*S.<sup>r</sup> Atwill Lake Bar.<sup>t</sup>*

# Modern History; OR, THE PRESENT STATE OF All NATIONS.

DESCRIBING

Their respective Situations, Persons, Habits,  
Buildings, Manners, Laws and Customs, Religion  
and Policy, Arts and Sciences, Trades, Manufactures  
and Husbandry, Plants, Animals and Minerals.

By Mr. *SALMON*.

**VOL. XXX.**

Being the Third Volume of *AMERICA*, contains,

I. A Description of *Chili*,  
*Patagonia* or *Terra Magellanica*,  
and *Terra del Fogo*.

II. Of *La Plata* or *Paragua*.

III. Of the Country of the  
*Amazons*.

IV. Of the *Spanish* Islands  
of *Cuba*, *Hispaniola*, and *Porto-  
Rico*.

V. A summary of the State  
of *Spanish America*.

VI. A Description of *Bra-  
zil*, or the Dominions of *Por-  
tugal* in *America*.

VII. A State of the *British*  
Plantations, particularly of *Vir-  
ginia*.

*The whole illustrated with MAPS and CUTS.*

**L O N D O N**

Printed for the AUTHOR: And sold by J. ROBERTS, in  
*Warwick-Lane*; and the Bookfellers in Town and Country.

**MDCCLXXVII.**





THE  
INTRODUCTION  
TO THE  
THIRD VOLUME  
OF  
*A M E R I C A.*



N this Introduction to the third Volume, I shall take an Opportunity of considering some Objections that have been made to the modern

Introduc-  
tion to  
the third  
Volume.

History of *Africa*, and of giving an Answer to the Letters of several of my Correspondents, in relation to the Conduct of the remaining Part of this Work, which is now brought near a Period.

It seems, in treating of the Discovery of *America*, I had observ'd, that *Aristotle* and the Ancients in general were so far from knowing any thing of *America*, that they knew nothing of that Part of *Africa* which

The An-  
cients  
knew no-  
thing of  
*Africa* be-  
yond the  
Equator.



## I N T R O D U C T I O N.

which lies near or beyond the Equator; for even *Pliny* assures us, that it was generally held in his Time, *That the middle Region of the World, where the Sun continually run his Course, was parch'd and burnt up with Fire.* And tho' the same celebrated Writer mentions a Tradition, that *Hanno* and some other *Carthaginian* and *Phenician* Adventurers had sail'd round *Africa*, it is evident he did not believe it; for he could not then have asserted, that the Torrid Zone was not habitable, which those Adventurers must have pass'd twice, and sail'd 35 Degrees to the Southward of the Equator in that Voyage, and seen the Sun for a whole Year at least to the Northward of them.

The Ancients must then have known that the Countries under the Equinoctial were habitable. They must have known another Hemisphere, been acquainted with other Stars and Constellations than those that are visible to the Northward of the Equator: Which were such remarkable Discoveries, that if they had been once made, would never have been forgot by those learned and polite Nations the *Egyptians*, *Greeks*, and *Romans*: And consequently I thought it reasonable to conclude, that the South of *Africa* was no more known to the Ancients than *America* was.

Objections to this Opinion.

In answer to this Opinion, some Gentlemen of my Acquaintance, in order to undeceive me, I presume, were so good as  
to

# INTRODUCTION.

3

to send me the following Passages out of *Herodotus*, with some Remarks upon them.

*Herod. Lib. iv. Cap. 41, 42. Africa Mari est manifestè circumflua, exceptò duntaxat ubi Asiæ contermina est; Neco Ægyptorum Rege hoc primo demonstrante, is enim misit navibus Phenicis quosdam, præcipiens ut transvecti Columnas Herculeas penetrarent ad Septentrionale usque mare, atque ita ad Ægyptum remearent.*

This Direction to go to Hercules Pillars, and penetrate to the North, is unintelligible.

*Phenices igitur à Rubro mari solventes abierunt in mare Australe, qui, cum Autumnus advenisset, applicatis ad terram navibus, sementem faciebant in quamcunque Africæ partem navigantes pervenissent, ac messem expectabant—Deinde messorum frumento navigabant. Ita biennio consumpto anno tertio ad Herculeas Columnas declinantes in Ægyptum remearunt, referentes quæ apud me fidem non habent, sed fortè apud alios: In prætereundo Africam se habuisse solem ad dextram.*

“ This is the Fact, as related by *Herodotus* (says these Gentlemen) and the Question is, how these Men, thus sent out by *Neco*, should really know that *Africa* was surrounded by Water; that it might be sail’d round within the Space of three Years; that in Autumn they must be obliged to go on Shore, and stay there long enough to sow Corn and reap it; and in the Voy-

A 2

“ age

## INTRODUCTION.

“ age \* *all along have the Sun to the Right-*  
 “ *hand, unless they had really perform’d*  
 “ *this Voyage.*——It will not be enough  
 “ to say, that you can’t see how such a  
 “ Voyage could be performed, or to tell  
 “ us of high Seas, cross Winds, or to  
 “ argue from Consequences; *viz.* How  
 “ came it about that the King of *Egypt*  
 “ planted no Colonies in those new-dis-  
 “ covered Countries? When a Fact is so  
 “ well circumstantiated as this before us;  
 “ and when modern Experience shews  
 “ those Circumstances to be exactly true,  
 “ nothing but showing a down-right Im-  
 “ possibility for such a Fact being per-  
 “ formed can any way invalidate it. ’Tis  
 “ plain, from *Herodotus*, that from the  
 “ Testimony of these Men, he believed  
 “ that *Africa* was surrounded Southward  
 “ by Water——All that seem’d to him  
 “ incredible in their Narrative was——That  
 “ the Land of *Africa* should run out so  
 “ far to the South, as † *that these Men*  
 “ *should see the Sun in the greatest Part*  
 “ *of their Voyage to the North of them.*  
 “ You must not think that this Story was  
 “ slighted, and look’d upon as a Fable in  
 “ those Days.——  
 “ A thousand Causes, Difficulty of the  
 “ Voyage, a small Prospect of Advantage  
 “ ——Troubles that immediately succeeded

\* This is impossible.

† The Passage in *Herodotus* does not say so.

## I N T R O D U C T I O N .

5

“ in *Egypt* might hinder its being further  
 “ prosecuted — However, we find about  
 “ 115 Years after *Necus*, that the matter  
 “ was disputed in *Xerxes*’s Court — For  
 “ *Herodotus* tells us in the same Book,  
 “ Chap. 43. — That when one of *Xerxes*’s  
 “ great Men had offended him, instead of  
 “ putting him to death, he ordered him,  
 “ by way of Punishment, to endeavour to  
 “ make this same Voyage, viz. To  
 “ \* *set out to Egypt, and to sail by the*  
 “ *Streights round Africa into the Red-Sea.*  
 “ — This great Man accordingly under-  
 “ took the Voyage ; and after he had sail’d  
 “ some Months beyond the *Streights*,  
 “ probably discouraged by the Difficulties  
 “ from Wind, Sea, &c. he return’d, tell-  
 “ ing *Xerxes* the Voyage could not be  
 “ perform’d — But this Answer was so  
 “ far from satisfying that Monarch, that  
 “ he put him to death for his former Crime.  
 “ — From whence it is further evident,  
 “ that the Ancients, at least some of them,  
 “ believed that *Africa* was *Mari Circum-*  
 “ *flua*.

Since this kind Intimation from my Friends, I have observ’d that several modern Writers are of Opinion, that other Adventurers, besides the *Phenicians*, had furrounded the South of *Africa* in those early Ages.

The Opi-  
 nion of  
 some  
 modern  
 Writers  
 of this  
 Matter.

\* Directly contrary to the *Phenician* Voyage.

Mr.

Mr. Birch-  
et

Mr. Secretary *Birchet*, in his *Naval History*, particularly affirms, that the Ancients were acquainted with the South of *Africa*, and had sail'd round it by the *Cape of Good Hope* more than once; for which he quotes *Herodotus* also, and mentions *Plutarch*, *Pliny*, and some others of the Ancients, to have been of that Opinion.

Quotes  
*Herodotus*  
also for it.

In the fourth Page of his *Naval History*, speaking of the Navigation of the Ancients he says, “ *Herodotus* tells us, that *Necus*, King of *Egypt*, after he had laid aside his Project of cutting a Canal from the Nile to the *Red-Sea*, sent out some *Phenicians* to make Discoveries; who sailing from that Sea, launched into the Southern Ocean, where, when Autumn came on, they landed in *Libya*, sow'd Corn, and staid till it was ripe, whence having got in their Harvest they departed; and when they had been absent two Years, arrived the third in *Egypt* by way of the *Pillars of Hercules*. They reported, says he, (*what who so will may believe for me*) that in their Passage about *Africa*, they had the Sun on their Right-hand; and in this manner (he goes on) was *Libya* first known; (*which, by the bye, (says Mr. Birchet) is an ample Testimony that the Cape of Good Hope was known and doubled by the Ancients, and that too long before the Time of Hanno the Carthaginian.*)

# INTRODUCTION.

3

Page 12. He says, “ *Pliny* tells us, that Cites Pliny for Hanno's Voyage.  
 “ *Hanno*, in the flourishing times of *Carthage*, sail'd round *Africa* from *Gades*,  
 “ or *Cadex*, to the end of *Arabia*, and  
 “ publish'd an Account of his Voyage. P. 104.  
 “ speaking of the Conquest of *India* by  
 “ *Alexander the Great*, he says, he gave  
 “ Orders afterwards to *Nearchus* and *Onesicritus*, who were most skill'd in Navigation, to take the strongest and best  
 “ built Ships of his Fleet, and penetrate  
 “ as far into the Ocean as they could with  
 “ Safety, and then return to him, either  
 “ by the River *Indus*, or *Euphrates*, the  
 “ former of whom (*Nearchus*) as *Plutarch* tells us in the Life of *Alexander*,  
 “ having coasted along *Arabia*, *Ethiopia*  
 “ and *Libya*, came about to the Pillars  
 “ of *Hercules*, and return'd through the  
 “ *Mediterranean* to *Macedonia*. For which Plutarch is cited.

From whence 'tis observable, that there are no less than three Voyages mention'd by the Ancients to be made round the South of *Africa*, besides that perform'd in part by the *Persian* Nobleman *Xerxes* sent on the like Expedition. But this still renders it the more surprizing that we have no better Account from the Ancients of the Southern Part of *Africa*; of a Southern Hemisphere, or of the Countries under the Equinoctial; especially when the same Authors relate, that *Hanno* the *Carthaginian*, and the *Persian* Nobleman, wrote a very particular History of their respective Voyages: Had they been

been really perform'd, would not some one of those remarkable Particulars have reach'd us as well as the general Report or Tradition that they made those Voyages? And would not some one of those Powers, or some other naval Power, acquainted with this grand Discovery, have attempted to plant Colonies, or make Settlements on those golden Coasts of *Guinea* and *Zangubar*; or those fruitful Countries about the Cape, where they must of necessity have been on Shore, if ever they made that Voyage? I must confess there are still some other modern Writers of our own Nation that seem to give Credit to those Authors; who relate, that the Ancients sail'd round *Africa*; and among the rest, those Gentlemen that are employ'd by the Booksellers to furnish us with a *Universal History*.

Page 267 of their first and only Volume yet extant, they relate the Story of *Pharaoh Necus's* sending the *Phenicians* round *Africa* by the *Cape of Good Hope*; and Page 406 they mention it again, with the following Note or Remark, *viz.*

The Opinion of our Universal Historians.

" *We see then the Portuguese were only*  
 " *the Re-discoverers of the Cape of Good*  
 " *Hope. Here we will take Leave to*  
 " *animadvert a little upon a celebrated*  
 " *Author, \* who will have it, the Phenici-*  
 " *ans made it a common Practice to trade*  
 " *with India by the way of the Cape of*

\* *H. et.*

Good

## I N T R O D U C T I O N.

9

“ Good Hope *from the time of Solomon.*  
 “ This is incredible on many Accounts;  
 “ 1. The *Phenicians* had no such Temp-  
 “ tation to undertake so long and dange-  
 “ rous a Voyage as we have; the Voyage  
 “ to them must have been much longer  
 “ than it is at present to us. 2. They are  
 “ not above half so far from *India* as we  
 “ are. 3. *It is incredible that the Struc-*  
 “ *ture and Rigging of their Ships were*  
 “ *rightly adapted for so unfavourable a*  
 “ *Navigation; nor is it likely that they*  
 “ *could at once furnish themselves with*  
 “ *Stores and Provisions sufficient for their*  
 “ *Use and Necessities, and at the same time*  
 “ *have any great Cargo of Goods on Board.*  
 “ 4. These Disadvantages consider’d, it  
 “ must appear that they might have been  
 “ supplied with all the Eastern Commodi-  
 “ ties in general at a much cheaper Rate  
 “ from the *Egyptians* and *Edomites* on the  
 “ *Arabian Gulf*, and from *Syria* on the  
 “ *Euphrates*; and this certainly was a  
 “ Part of the Trade they drove from *Syria*  
 “ to *Egypt*. 5. *It is not to be imagined,*  
 “ *if the contrary Practice had been usual,*  
 “ *that all Memory of it would have been*  
 “ *lost; that the Romans in Ovid’s Time*  
 “ *would have talked of the Torrid Zone*  
 “ *as uninhabitable; and that Herodotus*  
 “ *would have reckoned it as so noble a*  
 “ *Transaction of Necus’s Reign, that he*  
 “ *sent the most expert Phenicians he could*  
 “ *procure to explore the Shores of Africa;*

B

“ or



## I N T R O D U C T I O N.

“ or that the same in other respects most  
 “ \* knowing Historian would have dis-  
 “ puted the Credibility of what the Sailors  
 “ reported on their Return, that they had  
 “ the Sun on the Right-hand of them, it  
 “ being the ancient Custom, as we have  
 “ some-where read in *Plutarch*, to set the  
 “ Face to the † Westward ; in which  
 “ Posture the Sun must be on the Right-  
 “ hand of him who is to the Southward  
 “ of its Course, which they must have been  
 “ over and over again who doubled the  
 “ *Cape of Good Hope*. In short, the *In-*  
 “ *dian* Commerce by that Rout could have  
 “ answered no manner of End to the  
 “ *Phenicians*, nor could they have been  
 “ tempted to frequent it, situated as they  
 “ were, between *Egypt* and *Syria*, the  
 “ two great Magazines of whatever the  
 “ East afforded.

The  
 Universal  
 Historians  
 refute  
 their own  
 Opinion.

It is observable that some of these Reasons, offer'd by our Universal Historians, against the *Phenicians* trading with the *East-Indies* by the way of the *Cape of Good Hope*, appear of equal Force against their sailing round *Africa* at all, as the *Unfitness of their Ships for such a Voyage*, and their acknowledg'd Ignorance of the *Torrid Zone after this pretended Voyage was made*.

\* Whether *credulous* would not have been a more proper Epithet.

† *Quere*, If many more had not a greater Veneration for the East than the West.

I pro-

## I N T R O D U C T I O N. II

I proceed now to make some further Objections against this pretended Voyage of the Ancients round the *Cape of Good Hope*, and to enforce those already made.

Further  
Reasons to  
shew the  
Ancients  
never sail'd  
round  
*Africa.*

And in the first place, as these *Phenician* Mariners are supposed to be the most skilful Artists of that Age in marine Affairs, how came they not to speak of this remarkable Passage with more Propriety, or indeed more intelligibly? How came they not to say that the Sun was for the most part to the Northward of them in that Voyage? or why did they not say it was in their Backs when they stood to the South, and in their Faces when they return'd to the North; and *only on their Right-hand when they doubled or turn'd about the Cape of Good Hope*, the most Southern Promontory of *Africa*? as in truth it must have been, if ever they had made that Voyage.

2. This appears to have been no more than a Report, an uncertain Tradition in the time of that Historian. *Herodotus* is so far from citing any Author where it was to be found, that he plainly tells us he did not believe it. He had related a great many other incredible things in his History, but this had obtain'd so little Credit in the Age he liv'd, that even this credulous Writer gave it up as a fabulous Relation, and durst not avouch the Truth of it. Nor is it any more improbable that the Ancients should conjecture that *Africa* was surrounded by the Sea than the

## I N T R O D U C T I O N .

Moderns should believe that there is a North-east or a North-west Passage round *Asia* or *America*, which we have been endeavouring to find out these two hundred Years; and notwithstanding our numerous Disappointments, it is still believ'd by some there is such a Passage.

But should it hereafter be found out, will it follow, that because People have a great while conjectur'd there was such a Passage, that therefore it was known and used heretofore?

Again; *Pluto* expressly says, that there was a vast Island beyond the *Atlantick Ocean*, equal in Dimensions to *Asia* and *Africa*: And that there were several intermediate Islands which rendered the Passage easy thither; all which we find exactly true at this Day; and yet no Man, I presume, will take upon him to say that the Ancients ever made a Voyage to *America* and back again: From whence I infer, that such lucky Guesses as these, tho' People may have happen'd to guess right, are far from proving that such Voyages were known or used by the Ancients. It is much more wonderful that *Plato* should describe the Situation and Dimensions of *America*, than that the Ancients should guess that either the North or South Parts of our Continent were surrounded by the Sea.

3. The Time limited for this Voyage is much too short: it was impossible the Ancients then (or indeed the Moderns now, with

## I N T R O D U C T I O N.

13

with all the Advantages they have) should coast round that Part of *Africa* from the *Red-Sea* to *Hercules Pillars*, as those *Phenicians* are said to have done within the Space of two Years, and return in the third to *Egypt*; for in sailing upon any Coast almost, especially on unknown Shores, there is no advancing in the Night-time. It is to this Day a Rule ever to lie-by in the Night-time upon an unknown Coast. Even upon our own, which we know so well, few will venture to sail in the Night; and those who have done it, have too often reap'd the Fruits of their Temerity: Among other Instances, we may remember, Sir *Cloudsly Shovel* and several of our Men of War were cast away on our own Coast in the Night-time, when there was no Storm, only a moderate Gale of Wind: And we lost great Part of another Fleet in the Mouth of the River *Canada*, tho' they were furnish'd with Pilots (even in the Day-time) in foggy Weather; which I mention to shew the extreme Difficulty of a coasting Voyage, tho' we know the Countries never so well. I take it for granted therefore, that these *Phenicians* never durst or could sail in the Night-time, or in foul and foggy Weather in the Day-time on that unknown Coast: And if this be admitted, the two Years in which they are supposed to make this Voyage must be reduc'd to one at least, as they were oblig'd to lie-by, or remain at an Anchor

## I N T R O D U C T I O N.

Anchor above half the two Years, for want of Light or bright Weather, how else should they avoid the numerous Rocks and Sands that must be found upon the Coast, and particularly at the Mouths of Rivers, in a Voyage of that Extent.

But further, it is admitted in the Relation of this Voyage, that these Mariners went on Shore in some Part of *Africa*, and remain'd there at one time long enough to sow and reap their Corn, which, if we suppose to be about six Months, this reduces the remaining Year to half a Year— It must be remember'd also, that upon all Coasts between the Tropicks (within which the greatest Part of this Voyage must be perform'd) they have annually a fair and a tempestuous Season by turns, and that during the stormy Season no Ship (even with all the Advantages we have at this Day of building Sails and Compass) can sail, or even live upon the Coast; and there are four of these tempestuous Seasons between the Tropicks within the Space of two Years, in which there is an absolute Necessity of getting out to Sea at a Distance from the Coast, or putting into some very secure Harbour; and consequently every coasting Vessel must remain in Harbour several Months every Year within the Tropicks, or infallibly be cast away; whence it follows, that several Months more must be lost within the Space of two Years.

Add

## INTRODUCTION.

15

Add to this, that upon the Western Coast of *Africa* a little to the Northward of the Equator, the Wind constantly sits opposite to those who sail to the North-west for three thousand Miles and upwards; which must be another very considerable Hindrance to a Vessel coasting it from the *Cape of Good Hope* to the *Streights*, if it did not render such a Voyage absolutely impracticable, till the Compass was found out; for then a Ship could not stand out to Sea and avoid those Winds. Sure I am, that no Ships, of what Nation soever, at this Day pretend to coast it to the Northward in their Return from *Guinea*, but stand out to Sea and take a vast Compass to avoid those Winds.

Let it be consider'd further, that the coasting along all the Bays, Creeks, and Mouths of Rivers must make the Passage three times as long as we make it now, who sail most part of the Way at a Distance from the Shore in a direct Line, and are not oblig'd to follow all the Turnings and Windings of the Coast; and consequently the *Phenicians* must be three times as long in performing this Voyage (if it was practicable at all) as we are now.

It is worth our Observation also, that the *Portuguese* who first found the Way round *Africa* by the *Cape of Good Hope* (of the Moderns at least) and actually coasted it as the *Phenicians* are supposed to have done, were threescore Years (instead of three)

three) before they could double the Cape, tho' they had all the Advantages of Ships, Sails, Compass and Skill the Moderns are possess'd of, and could stand out to Sea when they met with cross Winds, or a dangerous and uneven Coast; and sail against or upon a Wind, as the Sailors term it, which the Ancients never pretended to, and if they had, could never have practis'd this Part of Navigation with Success, since they were oblig'd to keep near the Coast, where a Ship wants Room to tack and turn about as she may in the Ocean.

4. And with me it is a very great Objection to the *Phenician* Voyage, that it is pretended to be made *all at once, the whole Coast of Africa discover'd in one Voyage*, which cannot be said of any Country of a fortieth Part of that Extent. The usual and most rational way of making Discoveries is by slow Degrees. He must be a mad Man that would run precipitately over Rocks and Sands without sounding as he went along, or taking any Precautions to secure himself from Shipwreck upon an unknown Coast. These very *Phenicians*, when they sent out Colonies in the *Mediterranean*, put into Harbour and fix'd themselves in the first fruitful Country they came at on the *African* Shore (where *Carthage* afterwards was founded.) Here they remain'd a considerable time before they advanc'd further,  
and

## I N T R O D U C T I O N.

17

and it was many Years before they reach'd the Mouth of the *Streights*, and still some Ages before they discover'd the West Coast of *Africa* as far as *Cape Verde*, North Latitude 15.

But these Adventurers, in *Herodotus*, are said to surround this Quarter of the World at once, without making one Settlement, or planting one Colony by the way, or once returning to their Principals to give an Account of the Difficulties or Success of the Voyage, or requiring further Supplies or Re-inforcements to enable them to pursue it.

It appears also very odd to me, that these People should go on Shore in Autumn to sow Grain ; for the tempestuous or rainy Season is their Spring between the Tropicks, and the Season for sowing ; whereas in Autumn, all Corn and Fruits are ripe ; in the fair or dry Season is their Harvest, and this also is their Season for sailing ; and had they remain'd on Shore at this time, they had lost the Opportunity of sailing that Year, and instead of half a Year must have remain'd a whole Year on Shore ; besides, they would have been troubled to have made their Corn grow in the dry Season.

5. It is another very considerable Objection to the Reality of this Voyage, that neither the *Egyptians*, *Greeks*, *Carthaginians*, or *Romans*, ever made a second Attempt to discover the South of *Africa*,

C

if



if the Way had been thus happily trac'd out for them. As for the Story of the *Persian* Nobleman sent upon this Expedition, it has very much the Air of Fable. He must have been an egregious Fool to return to *Xerxes* again, who prosecuted him capitally, when he was got so far out of his Power, especially when he had done nothing to merit his Favour; and it is observable also, that they make this *Persian* to take the quite contrary Way in attempting this Voyage that the *Phenicians* are said to have done, which cannot be presumed, when the former had met with such Success the other Way: Besides, the Story of this Nobleman makes rather against the Feasibleness of this Voyage than for it, inasmuch as after he had attempted it, he declar'd the Voyage was impracticable. All that can be concluded from this Relation therefore is, that there was a Report or Conjecture about that time, that *Africa* was surrounded by the Sea on the South, which no body disputes.

6. It is very strange also (as has been hinted already) that these *Phenicians* should not take notice that they had pass'd under the Sun twice at least in this Voyage: that they had lost many of the Northern Stars, and discover'd a new Hemisphere: that the Sun, between the Tropicks, always brought stormy Weather, and Deluges of Rain along with it when it was vertical: and that it was always fair Weather when the

## I N T R O D U C T I O N .

19

the Sun was at the greatest Distance from them, directly opposite to the Seasons without the Tropicks, where the Approach of it usually brings fair Weather, and the Absence of the Sun is attended with Storms and foul Weather.

7. It is equally strange, that they should give no manner of Account of any one Nation or People they had seen ; or of any one Plant or Animal upon all the Coast, when they are said to have been half a Year on Shore at a time ; and that they should not mention those mountainous Seas at the Cape, which no Man, in these latter Ages, ever pass'd without Astonishment.

8. I should have expected also, that the Name of this great Commander, who piloted and conducted this happy Fleet round *Africa*, should have been transmitted to us. The Name of *Columbus*, who found out *America*, is known to every Man almost ; to many, more than the Name of the Prince that employ'd him : And how comes the Name of this *Phœnician* Captain to be entirely lost.

9. If it be necessary at this Day to proceed with Caution, and to advance slowly from one Point or Harbour to another, and obtain the Knowledge of the Coast by Degrees, how much more was this necessary than when they durst not go far to Sea for want of a Compass, but must sail close to those Rocks and Sands near the Shore, and might expect to be shipwreck'd by

every extraordinary Blast of Wind upon the Coast, or to have been driven out to Sea beyond a Possibility of recovering the Coast again, particularly when they came near the *Cape of Good Hope*, call'd by the *Portuguese* at first *Cabo Tormentoso*, or *The tempestuous Cape*, from the frequent and unparallel'd Storms they met with there ; where the Waves run in a literal Sense Mountain high ; and the tall Ships we build at this Day have no way to save themselves from perishing, but to run before the Storm under a little piece of a Sail just enough to keep the Ship in a steady Course ; for if they bring to, so that the Waves beat against the Side of the Ship, she is filled with Water, or over-set ; and if they have not Sea-room, but are upon a Lee-shore, they must inevitably perish ; for there is not a Port within 500 Miles of the Cape either Way where a Ship can ride securely in these Storms : Nor is it possible to drop their Anchors in such stormy Weather. Nay, if they were actually moor'd in Harbour, in some of those Storms they must be driven from their Anchors and wreck'd on Shore in the Winter Season ; and those Storms are very frequent even in the Summer. The Guard Ship, which belongs to the *Dutch* there, is forced to lie moor'd with vast Iron Chains. No Cables will hold her in these Storms. And if our present Shipping cannot live upon this Coast in stormy Weather,  
how

how should the slight low-built Galleys of the Ancients live on that Coast where there are no Harbours for so many hundred Miles; especially when they did not know the proper Seasons for sailing, and what Winds they should meet with, as we do now in every Latitude? Our Ships that pass the Cape in the Winter Season at this Day never care to come within the Sight of it; for all their Security, in these Storms, is to get Sea-room, so as they may run before it. They seldom pretend to bear up against the Wind, as they do in other Seas. From whence I conclude, that less than a Miracle could not carry the slight low-built Galleys of the Ancients round the Cape. They durst not run out to Sea if the Wind would permit them, for want of a Compass, and because their Ships or Galleys were too low and open to live in those Seas; and if the Wind sat on Shore, it was impossible they should escape being dash'd to pieces.

10. Another Consideration that occurs is the Difficulty of stowing or laying in Provisions for such a Voyage, or of getting them by the way——That it was impossible they should lay in for a fourth Part of such a Voyage, Wood, Water, Flesh, Corn, &c. is evident from the Make of such shallow coasting Vessels, because they had not deep Hulls or Holds, as our high-built Ships have; for if they had, they must, in many Places, have kept a great  
Distance

Distance from the Coast on account of the Rocks and Sands that lie near the Surface of the Water, and run out several Leagues into the Sea, even out of sight of Land at the Mouths of great Rivers, many of which were to be passed in this long Voyage : And how they should pass such Shelves, tho' they did not draw much Water, is not easy to be conceived ; for when we come upon a strange Coast, in the smallest Ships, we are forced to heave the Lead and sound the Depth of the Sea all the Way we go ; and when we come to the Mouth of a River, with all these Precautions, the skilfullest Sailors do not care to enter it without the Assistance of a Pilot of the Place : Even the Mouth of the River *Thames*, which we know so well, is never enter'd by a Ship of any Burthen, by the Way of the *Downs*, without a Pilot. How impracticable then must it be to pass or enter the Mouths of so many vast Rivers as occur in a Voyage round *Africa* ? But to proceed.

11. The Difficulty of getting Provisions by the way (if they were not laid in at first) upon many Coasts, particularly on Part of the *Guinea Coast*, is another Objection not easily answer'd ; for there runs a Surf or swelling Sea, which breaks upon the Shore with such Impetuosity, that no *European* Boat or Vessel can go on Shore there. We are forced in the fairest Season to make use of the Country Canoes or Floats, which

which cannot sink, to carry both Men and Goods on Shore, and these are often over-set. The *Phenicians* therefore could not go on Shore here in the fairest Season, and if they happen'd to be on this or any other such Coast in the stormy Season, they must inevitably perish. Our Ships at this Day do not pretend to ride out those constant Periodical Storms that arise between the Tropicks, but get out to Sea when they apprehend the Time approaches; and if they stay too long, are driven on Shore, as the *Phenicians* must infallibly have been.

12. And should it be supposed, that neither the Surf of the Sea, or stormy Weather, could prevent these People going on Shore for Provisions, yet in many Places this Coast is a dry barren Desert for many hundred Miles, where neither Wood, fresh Water, Corn, Flesh, Salt, or other Provisions are to be had. Let it be consider'd also, what Time must be spent almost every Week in going on Shore and getting Provisions, and this will induce us to believe the Voyage between *Egypt* and *Hercules Pillars*, or the *Streights*, could never be performed by People that had no Compass, or any Knowledge of those Coasts, in two or three Years.

13. Let it be consider'd further, that in Fogs and thick hazy Weather, between the Tropicks, and in the Winter-time and stormy Weather, without the Tropicks, they

they could neither have Sun or Stars to guide them : And if they ever lost sight of Land, and were so fortunate to fall in with it again, it was impossible to know which Way they were sailing : The Land could be no Guide to them, because this being the first Voyage, they are not supposed to know it ; and they must either lie still till they had better Weather and the Stars appear'd, or venture going back again, or at least out of their Way : Besides, on the other side of the Equator, they would have lost sight of many of the Stars they knew, and those few they could see in our Hemisphere must appear in such a different Position from what they used to see them here, that these could be no Direction to them in their Voyage.

14. These *Phenicians* also must have good Fortune not to have perish'd, or to have been very much diminish'd in their Numbers in so long a Voyage, since they must often have been oblig'd to on Shore in unhealthful Places between the Tropicks, such as the Coast of *Guinea* for Instance : And if they were only diminished and sickly, this must be a great Impediment to the prosecuting the Voyage, which depended as much upon the Strength of the Men at the Oar as on the Winds and Sails. We have had a late memorable Instance of the Unhealthfulness of some Coasts between the Tropicks in Admiral *Hofier's* Misfortunes, who buried the Sailors  
of

## I N T R O D U C T I O N.

25

of his Fleet twice over while he lay upon the Coast of *Terra-Firma*, before *Porto Bello*, and lost his own Life there ; and the Ships were so eaten up with the Worms, that it was found necessary to re-build them : And in both these Particulars the Coast of *Guinea*, and some others in *Africa*, are equally fatal. The Island of *St. Thomas*, under the Equator and near the Coast of *Congo*, is so unhealthful, that the *Dutch*, having ravish'd it from the *Portuguese* by Force twice, lost the Colonies they sent thither, and were forced to quit that Island to the *Portuguese* again, on account of the Unhealthfulness of the Country.

15. Another piece of good Fortune that must attend these *Phenicians* to enable them to perform this Voyage, must be a continual good Understanding with every Nation on this Continent, where they were forced to go on Shore for Provisions ; and yet scarce any People have been found more barbarous and inhospitable than those of *Africa* ; and if ever a Quarrel did happen between them and the *Phenicians*, in which the latter were defeated, this must have put a Period to the Voyage.

16. I have already mention'd the Ships of Admiral *Hofier*'s Squadron being destroy'd by Worms, and as the *Phenicians* are supposed to coast it all the Way for above 90 Degrees backwards and forwards, and to remain a considerable Time on the

D

Shores



Shores to get Provisions, their Vessels would probably have been too much impair'd in the Voyage to have accomplish'd it.

If it be objected that Ships which sail round *Africa* at this Day are liable to this and such other Misfortunes as have been mention'd, this is a Mistake; for Ships do not often sail all along the Coast at this Day, but far out at Sea, whereby they do not only avoid the contrary Winds, but also the Hazards of Rocks and Sands, and make the Way shorter by two Thirds than those People could do, who were forced to creep along the Shore; to go into every Bay and Creek, and into all the Mouths of Rivers they must encounter in this extensive Voyage.

I am very well satisfy'd, the most skilful Sailor in *Great-Britain*, who is best acquainted with the *African* Shores, would not undertake, for any Reward, to coast round *Afric* from *Egypt* to *Hercules Pillars*, or the *Streights*, within the Space of *seven* Years, *without a Compass*, tho' the *Phenicians* are said to have done this in two or three at most, and at a Time when they were perfectly ignorant of the Coast, and of the Winds and Weather they should meet with. And I am apt to think, that such a Voyage, either with Ship or Galley, *with a Compass*, could not be performed in many Years *without standing out to Sea*, and avoiding the never-variable contrary Winds. and those periodical  
Tempests.

Tempefts or Monfons, that never fail to vifit all the Coafts that lie between the Tropicks once or twice a Year.

17. Thofe that keep out at Sea have not only the Advantage of Sea-room to tack and turn which Way they pleafe, but their Weather is much better than near the Shore; and if they have not a Wind to their Purpofe they can run into the Way of one, which thofe who were forced to keep clofe to the Shore could not do.

18. The Ships we have now can lay in Provifion enough for their Voyage in their fpacious Holds, and by that Means are not oblig'd to go on Shore and hazard their being wreck'd on the Coafts. They alfo avoid the Danger of Difcafes, and the Outrages of the barbarous Inhabitants, and the Deftroction of their Veffels by the Worms, all which Misfortunes the *Phenicians* muft have been liable to; it being fcarce poffible they fhould recover the fight of Land again if they were driven a great Difance from it, and therefore they muft of neceffity have kept clofe to this unknown Shore moft of the Voyage.

19. And laftly, In other coafting Voyages in the *Red-Sea*, the *Mediterranean*, &c. they were acquainted with the Coaft, and if they happen'd to be driven out to Sea, when they recover'd fight of Land again they knew where they were; but here the Land could be no Direction to them, becaufe they never faw it before.

Besides, it seems to have been a Rule with the Ancients, always to sail in the fair Season, and never, if they could avoid it, in the Winter, when tempestuous Weather was expected, even without the Tropicks. This is evident from the Account St. *Paul* gives us of his Voyage from *Palestine* to *Rome*. They propos'd, he says, to have staid the whole Winter at some Port till the fair Season return'd; and yet the *Romans* had as good Ships and as skilful Sailors in those Days as any Nation.

In clear serene Weather, in Summer-time, they might venture out of sight of Land now and then, because they had the Sun and Stars to direct them, and Storms were less frequent then than in the Winter: But in this Voyage round *Africa*, in which they are supposed to be two Years at least, they must have had two Winters or stormy Seasons, if not more; for they must pass the Tropicks four Times, at each of which they might meet with the Monsoons, or annual Storms. And if they did not also meet with Storms without about the Cape, beyond the Tropick of Capricorn, and in the *Atlantick Ocean*, on this side the Tropick of Cancer, they must have been more favoured than ever any Ships were that have sail'd round *Africa* of late Years.

The Ob-  
jections  
against  
this Voy-  
age turn'd  
up.

The Sum of my Objections against this *Phenician* Voyage are; that this Tradition could not be credited by the *Greek* or *Roman* Historians, because they unani-  
mously

## I N T R O D U C T I O N.

29

mouſſy held, that the *Torrid Zone* (which muſt have paſſ'd twice in ſuch a Voyage) was not habitable: that the Mariners would have taken ſome notice of the Southern Hemisphere, and of the Countries they viſited South of the Equinoctial, if they had really made that Voyage.

That it was impoſſible to diſcover and navigate an unknown Coaſt of fifteen or twenty thouſand Miles Extent in the Space of two or three Years without a Compaſs, when the Mariners were neither acquainted with the Rocks and Sands upon that Coaſt, or with the Winds, Currents, or Seaſons they were to meet with in any Part of it, and wanted the Stars that uſed to guide them on this ſide of the Equator; that it is ſtrange no Nation ſhould make a ſecond Attempt, or ever ſettle one Colony in *Africa*, South of the Equator, or even near it, if the *Phenicians* made ſuch an expeditious and ſucceſſful Voyage round it, eſpecially ſince great part of *Africa* abound-  
ed in golden Sands, which muſt have been diſcover'd by them at the Mouths of thoſe Rivers they paſſ'd. It is a further Objec-  
tion to this Voyage, that the Ancients knew nothing of the annual periodical Winds or Storms between the Tropicks, and of their ſhifting regularly every half Year to the oppoſite Points: that the Winter or ſtormy Seaſon always advanc'd with the Sun, and they had the faireſt Weather  
when

## I N T R O D U C T I O N.

when it was at the greatest Distance from them, contrary to what happens in Countries without the Tropicks.

That the Gallies of the Ancients could never pass the *Cape of Good Hope* without many miraculous Incidents, if the Winds and Seas there were what we find them at this Day.

That in such Gallies they could neither lay in Provisions sufficient for the Voyage, nor could they stay to procure them by the Way, if it was perform'd within the Space of two or three Years : And if they would have gone on Shore from time to time for them, it would have been impracticable on many Parts of the Coast of *Africa*, because of the Surf, or swelling of the Sea in some Places; and in others, there are neither Wood, Water, or Provisions of any kind to be met with for some hundreds of Miles.

That they must have had extreme good Fortune not to have been destroy'd by Diseases, Enemies, or other Accidents on Shore, if they had escap'd the Dangers of the Sea.

They must have remain'd in Harbour near one Half the Time; on account of the never-failing tempestuous Seasons and contrary Winds, and must have lain by still longer on account of dark Nights and foggy Weather, which reduces the Time of their sailing to a very few Months,  
much

## INTRODUCTION.

31

much too small a Space of Time to encompass *Africa*, even with all the Advantages we are Masters of ; which Consideration alone is sufficient to overthrow the Credit of this Voyage.

But all these Objections, united and duly weigh'd, I persuade myself amount to a Demonstration, that this Voyage could never be perform'd by the Ancients within the Space of three Years at least, in the Opinion of any Seaman, who is acquainted with the Coast of *Africa*, and the Winds and Seasons upon that Coast, and sensible of the Hazard and Difficulty of sailing upon an unknown Shore without a Compass ; tho' speculative Men, who are unacquainted with Maritime Affairs, may, possibly, be of another Opinion.

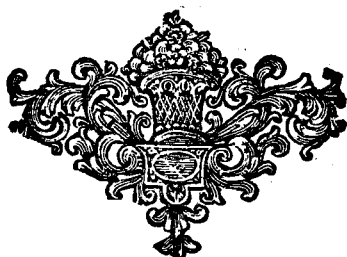
I shall conclude this Introduction with assuring the Gentlemen that have hitherto encouraged and supported this MODERN HISTORY, that, in pursuance of the kind Intimations they have frequently given me, I intend, as soon as *America* is finish'd, to take a Survey of the whole Work, in a separate Volume, and bring down the History of every Country to the Year 1737 ; and to add to it such further Discoveries and Improvements as have been made by other Travellers since I enter'd on this Work, with proper Remarks

A Review  
and a  
Continu-  
ance of the  
whole  
Work to  
the present  
Time  
intended,  
in one  
Volume.

on

32    I N T R O D U C T I O N .

on the Credibility of them : And am extremely pleased to find that the Sentiments of my Friends agree so perfectly with mine, that a Supplement of this Nature will be necessary to render the Work complete.



T H E



THE  
PRESENT STATE  
OF  
*C H I L I.*

---

C H A P. I.

*Of the Name, Situation and Extent of  
Chili, and of the Face of the Country,  
their Mountains, &c.*



HIS Country was named *Chili* by the first *Spanish* Adventurers, from a famous River and Valley of that Name, where they obtain'd a signal Victory over the Natives: Whether the People had any common Name for the whole Country before the *Spanish* Conquest I very much question, it not being united under one Sovereign, but divided into a great many little Clans or Tribes, commanded by their respective Chiefs, when the *Spaniards* arrived there; and every particular Nation

*Chili.*  
Name.

E

or



*Chili.* or Family had a distinct Name, which they receiv'd from or communicated to the several *Situation.* Countries they possess'd. *Chili*, in which I shall take the Liberty of comprehending *Patagonia*, the *Terra-Magellanica*, and *Terra del Fogo*, is bounded by *Peru* on the North, by *La Plata* and the *Atlantick* Ocean on the East, and by the great *South-Sea* on the South and West, extending in Length from North to South 27 Degrees, 30 Minutes; viz. from 25 to 57 Degrees, 30 Minutes, South Latitude: But the Breadth is very unequal, being about 400 Leagues broad in the North, and lessening gradually till it is not 100 broad in the South, and is consequently of a Pyramidical Form, the Northern Boundary being the Base, and Cape *Horn* the Summit of the Pyramid. The opposite Part of the Globe to this Country is the *East-Indies*.

*Face of the Country.* The Face of this Country very much resembles that of *Peru*; for all our Sea-men agree, that the Coast of *Chili* is a high bold Shore, and that further within the Land there arise other Hills, which the *Spaniards* call *Sierra's*, and above them the *Andes*, the highest Mountains in the known World, which extend, as has been observ'd in the Description of *Peru*, from *Santa Martha* in *Terra-Firma*, to the Straights of *Magellan*, that is, from 10 Degrees North to 55 South Latitude, running 65 Degrees from North to South. To the Description I have given of these Hills in *Peru*, I shall here add *Ovalle's* Account of them, and of the Face of this Country, which he had cross'd often between *Chili* and *La Plata* (as he informs us.)

*The Andes of Chili.* These Mountains, says that Writer, are a Prodigy of Nature, and without Parallel in the

the World, being a high Chain of Hills 1500 Leagues in Length, and 40 Leagues broad, with many intermediate Valleys: The Ascent is so prodigious that we employ three or four Days in arriving to the Top of them, and as many more in the Descent, that is, speaking properly, and only of the Mountain; for otherwise it may be affirmed that one begins to mount even from the Sea-side, because all the Way, which is about 40 Leagues, is nothing but an extended shelving Coast, for which Reason their Rivers run with such Force, that their Streams are like Mill-streams, especially near their Sources.

When we come to ascend the highest Part of the Mountains, we feel an Air so piercing and subtil, that 'tis with much Difficulty we breathe, which obliges us to fetch our Breath quick and strong, and to open our Mouths wider than ordinary, applying to them likewise our Handkerchiefs to condense our Breath, and break the extreme Coldness of the Air, and so make it more proportionable to the Temperament which the Heart requires. This I have experienced every time that I have passed those mighty Mountains.

*Don Antonio de Herrera*, and other Writers observe, that those who pass the *Andes* in *Peru* suffer great Reachings and Vomitings; because no one thing produces so great an Alteration at once as a sudden Change of Air, and that of the Mountains being so unproportion'd to common Respiration, produces in those who pass over it those surprizing and painful Effects. 'Tis true, that in that Part of the *Cordillera* in *Peru* which they call *Pariacaca*, there may be a Concurrence of other Causes, and a particular Disposition of the Climate, to which may

Chili.



be attributed some of these Effects: For if they were to be attributed only to the Height of the Mountain, we that pass it in *Chili* ought to find those Inconveniences as much or more, because the Mountain is highest without Comparison here; and yet I never endured those Reachings, or Vomitings, nor have seen any of those Motions in others, but only the Difficulty of Breathing, which I have mention'd.

Others experience other Effects, which I have often heard them relate; but certain it is, we go through these Mountains, treading as it were upon Clouds; when we ascend to the highest we can no longer see the Earth for the Clouds below, but the Heavens are clear, and the Sun shines out in its full Lustre.

The *Iris*, or Rainbow, which in the Valleys we see crossing the Heavens, we observe from this Height extended under our Feet; nor is it less admirable, that while we travel over these Hills, and see at a Distance Tempests and Storms falling into the Valleys beneath, the Serenity over our Heads exceeds that of the finest Summer's Evening.

Vulcano's  
in the  
*Andes*.

There are, in this *Cordillera*, or Chain of Mountains, sixteen Vulcano's, which at several times have broken out, and caused Effects very terrible and astonishing to all the Country. Amongst the rest, that which happened in the Year 1640 is worthy to be remember'd; it broke out in the Enemy's Country, in the Territory of Cacique *Aliante*, burning with so much Force, that the Mountain cleaving in two, cast forth pieces of Rocks all on Fire, with so horrible a Noise, that it was heard many Leagues off just like the going off of Cannons.

The first of these Vulcano's is called the *Vulcano of Copiapo*, and is in about 26 Degrees  
on

on the Confines of *Chili* and *Peru*; in 30. Degrees is that of *Coquimbo*; in 31 and a half that of *Liqua*; in 35 that of *Peteroa*; in 36 and a half that of *Chilau*; in 37 and a quarter that of *Antoco*; this is followed by that of *Notuco* in 38 and a half; that of *Villarica* is in 39; near this is another in 40 and a quarter, and in 41 is that of *Osorno*; and near that, in less than a quarter of a Degree, that of *Guana-truca*; and in a little more than 42 Degrees, that of *Quetrucahi*; and last of all are two more; one without a Name, in 44, and that of *St. Clement*, which is in 45 and a half.

These Mountains are supposed to be very rich in Mines, but there may be two Causes assign'd why their Riches do not manifest themselves more: The first is that general State Reason and inviolable Maxim among the *Indians* to conceal and not discover them to any other Nation. For if any one among them, either out of Interest, Negligence, or any other Motive of Conveniency, discovers any thing of this kind, his Death is infallible, and no Power on Earth can save him.

The other Reason to be assign'd for not seeking after these Mines is, the great Plenty of every thing necessary for Life; so that Hunger, which is the Prompter of covetous Desires, being wanting, there are few that care to run Hazards, and go through impracticable Desarts in search of hidden Treasure; especially finding already so much Gold in the Valleys and Rivers, that even the Mines in the *Low Countries* are not wrought.

The Difference which may be observ'd in passing the *Cordillera* between each side of the Mountain is so great that they seem two different Worlds (the East and West Parts.) One would

Chili.

Mines of the Andes.

Further Observations on the Andes.

Chili.

would think Heaven had placed these Mountains here to divide them as a Wall, and keep off from the West all the Storms and ill Weather of the East. Any one that travels to the Top of them may experience this clearly, for there he discovers both Horizons, and when he looks to the East, all is covered with gross Vapours, which seem to hinder the Light and shadow all the Country; and at the same time looking West, the Heavens are so bright that it causes Pleasure and Joy to look on them. The East side is full of a cloudy thick Air, which engenders Storms and Hail, with horrible Thunders and Lightnings. On the other side, in the West, there is not a Cloud to be seen, but all is clear and bright, as if in the Heavens themselves there were such a Partition as the *Cordillera* to divide the Climates; and upon Earth there is a Difference in the Trees, Plants, and Animals on each side.

A curious Observer contemplating once from this Height, this remarkable Difference, said, That Nature, in the Fabrick of this Part of the World, seem'd to have turn'd her Back upon the Eastern Provinces, and look'd with her Face only upon *Chili*, giving Blessings with both Hands to this last, and leaving the other as it were disinherited, and grieving at the Pre-eminency of its elder Brother. In going down to the Eastward also, there are fewer Fountains and Rivers, and those muddy, the Face of the Land melancholy, without so much as one green Tree to recreate the Sight, nor any pleasant Verdure; and when at last you meet with some, as in the Valley of *Uspallata*, the Heats begin to be intolerable, but when we go to the West 'tis quite otherwise; for as soon as we begin to descend, we meet with lovely Springs,

Springs, the Trees are green, the Groves frequent and pleasant, and the little Valleys are like so many resting Places in that great Stair-case ; from the very Foot of the Mountains one feels the Mildness of the Sea Air, and one is charm'd with the Harmony of the Birds and other delightful Objects.

At the Foot of the Mountains, on the East side, on the contrary, the Land is barren and little cultivated, neither are their Flocks of any kind fed or bred ; so that the Fields look like a barren Defart, but this may proceed possibly from the Thinness of the People, who have not try'd the Fertility of the Earth ; for the Plains below these are extremely fertile where they are cultivated.

The Springs on the West side of the Mountains do so fertilize the Fields below, that they keep the Earth fresh and green all the Year : And there is such Variety of Trees, so admirably disposed, that one would think they were planted by the Hand of Man ; many of these are loaded with Fruits of the Country, of which the *Indians* make excellent Liquors, and some of their Fruits are very good to eat. The Valleys also are full of odoriferous beautiful Flowers, produc'd by Nature without human Industry, and there are among them most extraordinary Physical Plants. The little Hills afford good Pasture, and in their Valleys, Olives, Almonds, and all sorts of Fruit-trees thrive extremely. In the Plains also are Vineyards, of which are made excellent Wines.

With the first Rains of the Winter, which are about the middle of May, the *Cordillera* begins to be cover'd with Snow, and to put on, as it were, a white Armour to hinder its being pass'd, not only by Men, but even by  
Animals

Weather  
on the  
Andes.

Chili.

Animals and Birds, which are so driven out of it by the Rigour of that Season, that there is not one remaining in it.

Even the *Silguerillo's* and *Sorsales* (Birds, which of their own Nature are so hot, that in the very Beginning of the Summer they take to the Mountains) as soon as they perceive that the Winter draws near, come in Flocks down to avoid its Rigour in the Mountains; and then the Ground being almost covered with them, it proves the Season of Pleasure, for the Youth of the Country take and carry Loads of them home, reserving some to put in Cages, their Notes being very sweet. The *Cordillera* is thus shut up five or six Months in the Year; so that till *October* or *November*, it cannot be passed without manifest Danger of one's Life, and in the midst of Winter not at all, because all the Paths and Ways are cover'd to the Height of many Yards; and if any one should be rash enough to attempt it, he would not be able to go forward or backward, as has happen'd to several who either upon some very pressing Concern and Interest, or flying from a Death which threaten'd them for their Crimes, have found it in these Desarts.

These are bury'd in the very Bosom of Frost and Snow, which preserves them without being embalm'd, and yet keeps them incorruptible and dry, for so they have been found after many Years; such is the Cold of those Mountains, that it dries up all the Moisture that can cause Corruption in dead Bodies, and so preserves them.

This Difficulty of passing the *Cordillera* is less at the Entrance than at the End of the Winter, because the Drifts of Snow are not then so violent as to shut up the Ways intirely.

In

## of CHILI.

41

Chili.

In those Seasons, therefore, some do venture to pass, tho' with great Danger, and sometimes they are so lucky as to get off well, because they meet with a clear Sky, yet at other times it costs them dear, and always 'tis with infinite Labour that they get through.

In short, every body has some Story to tell of the Mountain, and complain of it; for some lose their Toes, others their Fingers, some their Sight, some are be-numb'd and lam'd, and so remain all their Lives with great Infirmities. And I do not wonder at all at this, because tho' one should pass without a Storm, yet the Cold is so intense, that it cannot but injure Nature extremely in that Season, since even in the midst of Summer when we pass this Mountain, and in the lower Part of it we swet with Heat, as soon as we come to pass the Top we are forced to put on double Cloathing, and prepare the Stomach with good warm things to withstand the Sharpness of the Cold, and the Subtleness of the Air, which penetrates the Body through and through if it be not well cover'd.

'Tis necessary to observe, that it is of this Cold of the Mountain that Authors speak when they say, that the Cold of *Chili* is so severe, that the Rivers are frozen up, and Men frozen to death in the Fields; For this is true only of those uninhabitable Mountains where I believe at that Season the Rivers are frozen, and if any Springs do escape, they are very few, and that in the Valleys most secur'd and shelter'd.

And thus the Truth of what Historians relate may be reconcil'd; for they not knowing the Country, make no Distinction between the Mountains and the Plains, in which there never



Chili.

was seen any such Effect of Cold in any Part of them ; for the Sea Air, which is thick and moist, tempers the Sharpness of the Blasts from the *Cordillera* ; and for this Reason it is, that the Colds of the *Pampas* of *Cuyo* and *Tucuman*, on the East Side of the *Andes*, are so insupportable ; which being at such a Distance from both Seas, and not enjoying the Warmth of its Vapours, the Air in Summer is intolerably scorching, and in Winter so cold, and for want of Rain so dry, that 'tis common for Animals to be found dead in the Fields as well as Men,





## CHAP. II.

### *Of the Springs, Lakes, Baths, Rivers, Ports, Seas, Winds, Tides, and Seasons of Chili.*



Have already taken notice of <sup>Chili.</sup> the numerous Springs, Lakes and Rivers that are found on the Mountains of the *Andes* in *Peru*: There are as many on the Mountains of *Chili*; and 'tis

observ'd, that Springs and Rivers abound much more in the low Lands of *Chili* than they do in *Peru*. The Rivers which run from the *Andes* Westward, and fall into the *South-Sea*, both in *Peru* and *Chili*, as has been observ'd, are rapid Torrents, generally occasioned by the melting of the Snows on those Mountains, and the Declivity of the Ground, and consequently are scarce any of them navigable far from their Mouths; but near their Sources they run so violently, that there is no crossing them at some Seasons. There are Rivers also that precipitate themselves from the Tops of those high Mountains, forming the most beautiful natural Cascades that ever the Eye beheld, while others tumble from so vast a Height that their Waters disperse and fall upon the Valleys beneath in Drops like Showers of Rain; and when the Sun shines upon them, afford a most agreeable Prospect as they descend; of these,

Chili.

the Water-works in the Palaces of *Italy* and *France* are but faint Resemblances, and would be condemn'd by any one that had view'd those splendid Effects of natural Causes.

*Ovalle* mentions several famous Fountains in the Mountains of the *Andes*, particularly those call'd *Los Ojos de Agua*, or *The Eyes of Water*, in a Valley of about a Mile diameter, adorned with Ever-greens and Flowers, which make it the very Picture of Paradise, he says. This Valley is furrounded with prodigious high Rocks, and in the middle of it these Fountains spring up, throwing themselves with great Force into the Air; and falling down again form two large Streams, running in a winding serpentine Course through the Valley, sometimes at a Distance, and then approaching nearer each other till they unite at length in one Channel and form a considerable River, the Water whereof is as clear as Chrystal, and so extremely cold, that 'tis impossible to drink a Draught of it. He mentions also some Streams issuing from the *Andes*, that forcing themselves through a Mountain have a natural Bridge over them, form'd of a Rock, the Vault whereof is adorned with Stones of various Colours, which hang like Icicles from the Top and Sides of it, under which run five different Rivers of hot Water that cure many Diseases.

Baths.

There are many salutary Fountains also in the Plains and Valleys of *Chili*, particularly one that rises at the Foot of the Vulcano of *Villari-ca*, and runs into a neighbouring Lake. There are two more which rise near each other and form the River *Chico*, one of them hot and the other cold. The Baths of *Rancagua*, near the Town of *St. Jago*, are celebrated also for

for the Cure of many Distempers ; those of *Mayten*, *Mapocho* and *Conttially*, have the like healing Virtues ; but, my Author observes, those Fountains are the best that are farthest from the *Andes*.

The most considerable fresh Water Lakes are those of *Tagatagua*, near *St. Jago*, and that of *Puren*, in which the *Chilefians* had an impregnable Fortref, from whence the *Spaniards* could never drive them. They have also several salt Water Lakes, which have a Communication with the Sea, part of the Year. In stormy Weather the Sea forces a Way into them, and leaves them full of Fish ; and when the Communication with the Sea ceases, as it does in *January*, and the hot Weather comes on, the Water congeals, and leaves a Crust of fine white Salt a Foot thick.

I come now to speak more particularly of the Rivers of *Chili*, of which there are fifty large ones rising in the *Andes* and running Westward into the *South-Sea*, and these are join'd by many other lesser Streams that fall into them in their Course, none of them running more than 30 or 40 Leagues before they reach the Sea, and that so precipitately from those high Mountains, that they are not navigable (as has been hinted already) for a Vessel of any Burthen much beyond their Mouths.

The chief of these Rivers are, 1. The River of *Salado*, a salt River on the South Confines of *Peru*, which falls into the *South-Sea* in 25 Degrees of South Latitude, the Waters whereof are so hot that they cannot be drank. But, I presume, *Ovalle* talks merily when he relates that a Horse which drank plentifully of them was turned into Salt while he was drinking.

2. The

- Chili. 2. The River *Copiapo*, which discharges  
 { itself into the same Ocean in 26 Degrees South  
*Copiapo* Latitude.  
 River.  
*Guafo.* 3. The River *Guafo*, which falls into the  
 Sea in 28 Degrees: The last two forming good  
 Bays at their Mouths for Shipping to ride in.
- Coquimbo.* 4. The River *Coquimbo*, which discharges  
 itself into the *South-Sea* in 30 Degrees South  
 Latitude.
- Govanadore.* 5. *Govanadore*, in 31 Degrees 20 Minutes  
 South Latitude.
6. *Tongoy.*  
 7. *Lemari.*  
 8. *Chuapa.*  
 9. *Tongotoma.*
- Valpariso.* 10. *Valpariso*, and  
*Maypoco.* 11. *Maypoco*. All which discharge them-  
 selves into the *South-Sea* between 31 and 33  
 Degrees of South Latitude.
12. There are four or five smaller Rivers  
 which fall into the Sea together, near *Valpa-  
 riso*, as *Funnel* relates; but says, he does not  
 know another Instance of so many Rivers so  
 near together on the whole Coast of *Chili*.
- Maule.* 13. The River *Maule*, one of the largest  
 of their Rivers, the Mouth whereof is in 33  
 Degrees and an half.
- Itata.* 14. The great River *Itata*, in 34 Degrees.  
*Bobio.* 15. The River *Bobio*, in 37 Degrees,  
 esteemed the largest River in *Chili*.
- Imperial.* 16. The River *Imperial*, which falls into  
 the *South-Sea* in 38 Degrees 40 Minutes.
- Baldivia.* 17. The River of *Valdivia*, or *Baldivia*,  
 which discharges itself into that Ocean in 40  
 Degrees South Latitude.
- Chico.* 18. The Rivers *Chico*, *Balena*, and *Coro-  
 Coronado*, which fall into a great Bay, form'd by  
 the Island of *Chiloe* and the *Main*, between 41  
 and

and 43 Degrees of South Latitude, to the Southward of which are the River of *Martyrs* and the River of the *Apostles*, which fall into the *South-Sea* between 45 and 48 Degrees of South Latitude. Chili.

The chief Ports of *Chili* upon the *South-Sea* are, the Port of *Copiapo*, in 26 Degrees South Latitude; of *Coquimbo*, in 30 Degrees; of *Govanadore*, 31 Degrees 20 Minutes; of *Valpariso*, 32 Degrees 30 Minutes; of *Itata*, 34 Degrees 35 Minutes; of *Conception*, 37 Degrees; of *Santa Maria*, 37 Degrees 30 Minutes; of *La Moucha*, 38 Degrees 30 Minutes; of *Valvidia*, in 40 Degrees; of *Brewers-haven*, or *Carelmepo*, 41 Degrees 30 Minutes; of *Castro* in the Island of *Chilve*, 42 Degrees 30 Minutes. Ports.

The Seas that border upon *Chili*, if we include *Patagonia*, are the *Atlantick* on the East, and the *South-Sea*, or *Pacifick Ocean*, so nam'd from the fine serene Weather Sea-men meet with there, on the West; but this *Pacifick* Name is only proper to that Part of the South Sea which lies within 30 or at most 35 Degrees of South Latitude, for all that lies South of 35 is as subject to Storms as any other Sea, and the Winds as variable as in other Places. But to the Northward of 35 or thereabouts, the Winds are always southerly two or three Points upon the Shore, and these southerly Winds continue to blow 140 or 150 Leagues to the Westward of the Shore before they alter; and at 200 Leagues to the Westward, the true Trade Wind sets in at East South-east till you have pass'd the *Pacifick Ocean* and arrive at the *East-Indies*. Seas and Winds.

The Tides on this Coast rise but nine or ten Foot, it being an open bold Shore, with very few Bays or Harbours in it; and 'tis an Observation of *Dampier* and other Seamen, that the

Chili.

the Tide never rises so high on such a Shore as it does where there are Bays, Gulphs and great Rivers that confine it.

Seasons.

In speaking of the Seasons of *Chili* it is necessary to have regard to the three grand Divisions which are comprehended under that general Name; for these are as different from each other in many Respects as they are from any other Part of the World almost; only in this they all agree, that when it is Summer, in those Countries which lie to the Northward of the Tropick of Cancer, as *Europe*, *Asia*, and *North America* for the most part do, then it is Winter in *Chili* and all other Countries to the Southward of the Tropick of Capricorn.

The three  
grand  
Divisions  
or Provin-  
ces of  
*Chili*.

The three grand Divisions of *Chili* are, 1. That of *Chili Proper*, which lies between 25 and 45 Degrees of South Latitude, and between the Mountains of *Andes* and the *South-Sea*. 2. The Province of *Cuyo*, or *Cuito*, which lies between the *Andes* on the West, and *La Plata* on the East; and 3. *Terra Magellanica*, comprehending *Patagonia* and *Terra del Fogo*, and extending from 45 Degrees of South Latitude to *Cape Horn*, in 57 Degrees 30 Minutes, bounded by the *Atlantick Ocean* on the East, and the *South-Sea* on the South and West.

In *Chili  
Proper*.

1. In *Chili Proper* the Spring begins in the middle of *August*, and lasts to the middle of *November*, when the Summer begins, and lasts till the middle of *February*; and then follows the Autumn, which lasts till the middle of *May*, when they enter upon their Winter. The Trees are all bare of Leaves, and white Frosts cover the Ground in a Morning, which are usually dissolv'd however within two Hours after

after Sun-rise, and 'tis very seldom that any Snow falls in the Valleys or low Grounds.

Chili.

Neither the Heat or the Cold are so great here as in other Countries of the same Latitude, but that Part of the Country which lies next the Sea is warmer than that which is contiguous to the Mountains: Nor is there so much cloudy or rainy Weather here in Winter as in Countries that lie in the same Latitude either North or South. The North Wind, which brings wet Weather with it, seldom lasts more than two or three Days at a time, and then is succeeded by the South Wind, which is always attended with a bright clear Heaven, and brings Health and Pleasure with it. In Summer they have constant serene settled Weather without Rain; nor have they occasion for any, the Country is so well watered by the Rivers of melted Snow, which in the Beginning of the Summer descend from the Mountains of *Andes*.

Weather  
in the low  
Lands.

2. In the Province of *Cuyo*, which lies East of the Mountains of *Andes*, extending from *La Plata* to 45 Degrees, on the contrary, the Winter is extreme cold, it freezes in the House, and their Cattle die if left abroad; and the Heats are equally intolerable in Summer: Thunder, Lightning, and Tempests, are frequent here also in the Summer, and such Deluges of Rain in the Spring, as over-flow the Country; all which, it is supposed, the Mountains of *Andes* screen the Country of *Chili* Proper from: But then I find the Province of *Cuyo* has scarce any Rain in the Winter, only continued Frosts and bright settled Weather.

In *Cuyo*.

3. As to that Part of the Country which is call'd *Terra Magellanica*, and *Patagonia*, which I have comprehended within the Bounds

In *Terra*  
*Magel-*  
*lenica*.



Chili. of *Chili*, and lies between 45 and 57 Degrees 30 Minutes South Latitude.

This is a cold uncomfortable Country, and, according to our Seamen, who have surrounded it, the Cold is more intense here than in other Countries in the same Latitude in our Northern Hemisphere. Certain it is, that none of our *European* Adventurers have been invited either by the Air or Soil to plant Colonies either on the East or West Coast of *Patagonia*, or *Terra Magellanica*, hitherto, and the *Spaniards* that possess the rest of *Chili*, contiguous to this Country, perfectly neglect it, and do not think it worth their while to penetrate further Southward than to the Latitude of 45 or thereabouts; tho' they claim the Property of the Land as far as the Promontory of *Cape Horn*, the farthest Boundary of *South-America*.





CHAP. III.

*Of the Provinces and Subdivisions of Chili,  
and of their chief Towns, Buildings,  
and Fortresses.*



THE Provinces and Subdivisions of this Country are the same I mention'd in treating of the Air and Seasons, viz. 1. *Chili Proper*. 2. *Cuyo*, or *Cuito*; and 3. The Southern District of *Terra Magellenica*, in which is included *Patagonia* and the *Terra del Fogo*. Chili. Provinces and chief Towns.

The Province of *Chili Proper* is bounded by *Peru* on the North; by the Province of *Cuyo*, or *Cuito*, on the East; by the *Terra Magellenica* on the South; and by the *Pacifick Ocean* on the West, being about fourteen hundred Miles in Length from North to South, and scarce an hundred in Breadth from East to West, being confin'd between the Mountains of *Andes* and the *South-Sea*.

The chief Towns in *Chili Proper* are, 1. *St. Jago*. 2. *Conception*. 3. *Coquimbo*, or *La Serena*. 4. *Baldivia*, or *Valdivia*. 5. *Imperial*. 6. *Villa Rica*. 7. *Osono*. 8. *Castro*. 9. *Copiapo*. 10. *Guasco*. 11. *Angol*, or *The City of the Confines*; and 12. *Arauco*.

1. The City of *St. Jago*, situated in 34 Degrees South Latitude, 77 West of London, 2 Leagues West of the Mountains of *Andes*,

Chili.

and 18 East of the *Pacifick Ocean*, on a small River at the Foot of a Hill, in a pleasant and fruitful Valley, which is above 28 Leagues in Circumference, and watered by the great River *Maypo*, or *Maypocho*, on the Banks whereof the *Indian* Villages are very numerous. The *Spanish* Writers relate, that there were not less than fourscore thousand *Indians* inhabited this Valley when they first arrived there, which, from the great River that run through it, was call'd *The Valley of Maypocho*.

*St. Jago* being the Metropolis of *Chili*, before it was destroy'd by the Natives, was the largest and best built City in the Country, and, according to the usual *Spanish* Model, had a great Square in the middle of it, from whence the principal Streets ran in a direct Line, and were cross'd by others at Right-Angles. On the North Side of the great Square stood the Town Hall, in which their Courts of Justice were held; and on the West the Cathedral and Bishop's Palace; and the other two Sides were adorned by Piazzas and Balconies over them. Besides the Cathedral, there were several Parish Churches, Monasteries, and Nunneries, built with white hewn Stone, and richly adorn'd; and into the principal Streets were brought Canals from the River, which lies on the North Side of the Town, and from thence their Gardens and the adjacent Fields were watered: in the dry Season, the Town being plentifully supply'd with all manner of Corn and Fruits, both *European* and *Indian*, and with Flesh of all sorts from the numerous Flocks and Herds that are fed in the Valley that surrounds it. This was a Bishop's See, the Seat of the Governor of *Chili*, and the Courts of Justice here was a University, at least the Fathers had Schools

Schools in their Monasteries, and a Power of Chili:  
 conferring Degrees on such as had qualified  
 themselves for them by their Studies. This  
 City was founded by *Peter de Valdivia*, who  
 conquered this Part of *Chili* in the Year 1541.  
*Valparizo* is the Port Town to it.

2. The City of *Conception*, situated on a Conception.  
 fine Bay of the *South-Sea*, in form of a Cre-  
 scent, in 37 Degrees South Latitude, the I-  
 sland of *Santa Maria* lying before it, and  
 forming a good Harbour. The Town to the  
 Landward is encompass'd by Hills that rise  
 gradually one above another, and are planted  
 with Vines and Fruit Trees in a semi-circular  
 Form, affording a most agreeable Prospect  
 from the Sea. This Town also is a Bishop's  
 See, and was founded by *Valdivia*, in the  
 Year 1550.

3. *Coquimbo*, or *La Serena*, is situated in Coquimbo.  
 30 Degrees South Latitude, on a small River  
 in a fine Valley (from whence it takes the  
 Name of *Coquimbo*.) It stands in full View  
 of a Bay of the Sea, from which 'tis about  
 two Miles distant, over-looking a fruitful  
 Plain, which lies between the Town and the  
 Sea. The Place is of a pretty large Extent,  
 containing seven or eight Churches, and several  
 Monasteries, but of no great Strength, as the  
 Buccaneers relate, who took the Town and  
 burnt it in the Year 1680, with an hundred  
 Men only, tho' the *Spanish* Garrison consisted  
 of treble their Number; but the People had  
 carried off most of their Treasure and valuable  
 Effects. This Town also was founded by  
*Valdivia*, in the Year 1544.

4. The Town of *Baldivia*, or *Valdivia*, is Baldivia.  
 in 40 Degrees South Latitude, situated on an  
 Eminence, at the Point of a Peninsula, form'd  
 by

by two Rivers, which, with the Islands before it, make it the securest and most spacious Harbour on the Coast of *Chili*. It is defended also, by several Forts on the said Island and Peninsula; but, in the Opinion of Sir *John Narborough*, who visited this Port by the Command of King *Charles II.* in the Year 1670, the Town might easily be taken.

The Passage up to the Town for great Ships is on the East Side, being about 6 Leagues, but it is not above 2 Leagues from the Sea by another Passage on the West Side, by which the smaller Vessels go up. This Commander observ'd there were three Rivers fell into the Harbour, but they were not navigable much beyond the Town: What this Place is most considerable for besides the Harbour is, the rich Gold Mines in the Neighbourhood, in the working of which, *Péter Valdivia*, who founded it in the Year 1552, and gave his own Name to it, employ'd twenty thousand *Indians*, who finding themselves cruelly oppress'd, by being forced to dig in the Mines and do other intolerable Drudgeries, rose upon the *Spaniards*, re-took this and most of the Towns they had built, and making *Valdivia* Prisoner, 'tis said, pour'd melted Gold down his Throat, reproaching him, that his Avarice was not to be satisfy'd otherwise. The War continued between the *Spaniards* and the *Chilefians* for an hundred Years, and is not entirely ended at this Day; tho' the *Spaniards* have re-possest'd themselves of *Baldivia* and some other Places; but I shall enlarge upon these Articles when I come to treat of the History of this Country.

*Imperial.*

5. The Town of *Imperial* is situated on an Eminence at the Confluence of two Rivers, 39 Degrees South Latitude, about 24 Leagues to

to the Northward of *Baldivia*, being about 3 Leagues distant from the Sea, but the Port is not deep enough for Vessels of any considerable Burthen. Chili.

6. The Town of *Villarica*, situated on a Lake near the Foot of the *Andes*, in 40 Degrees South Latitude, 20 Leagues East of *Baldivia*. This Place obtain'd its Name from the vast Quantities of Gold found in the adjacent Country. It was taken and destroy'd by the *Chilefians*, in the Year 1604, who put every Man they found in it to the Sword, not sparing the Priests or Monks, and carried the Women into Captivity, in Revenge for the numerous Cruelties exercised on them by the *Spaniards*: Nor can I learn that the *Spaniards* have ever re-built the Town since, or even re-possess'd themselves of this Part of the Country.

7. *Oorno* is situated on a Bay of the Sea, in 41 Degrees South Latitude, about 20 Leagues South of *Baldivia*, and was built by *Hurtado de Mendoza*, who succeeded *Valdivia* in the Government of *Chili*. This Town was also destroy'd by the *Indians* in another Insurrection, but the *Spaniards* afterwards rebuilt it, and are possess'd of it at this Day.

8. *Castro* is situated on the West Side of the Island of *Chiloe*, in 42 Degrees South Latitude. This Town was built by the *Spaniards*, about the Year 1600, when the *Chilefians* had in a manner driven them from the Continent, and forced them to fly for Refuge thither. This Island of *Chiloe*, according to Sir *John Narborough*, extends from 41—40 South Latitude to 43—30. It is a fruitful Island, and bears good Wheat; and both here and at *Oorno*, over-against it, there is great Plenty of Gold, which the *Spaniards* purchase of the Natives; Castro.  
Chiloe  
Island.

Chili.

but the *Chilefians* will not suffer the *Spaniards* to search for Mines as formerly, keeping Possession of all the inland Country, and maintaining their Liberties to this Day, which they recover'd with so much Bravery after the *Spaniards* had enslaved them, and in Appearance establish'd their Dominion.

*Copiapo.*

9. The Town of *Copiapo* is situated 26 Degrees North Latitude, at the Mouth of a River of the same Name, which, with an Island that lies before it, forms a tolerable Harbour in the *South-Sea*. The Valley of *Copiapo*, to which this Town communicates its Name, was the first the *Spaniards* possess'd themselves of after their Conquest of *Peru*, being a fruitful and well-peopled Country.

*Guaſco.*

10. *Guaſco* is situated on a Bay of the same Sea, in 28 Degrees South Latitude, where Ships ride secure from the South and South-West Winds, but is not a Place of any Consequence.

*Angol.*

11. *Angol*, or *The City of the Confines*, is situated in 38 Degrees South Latitude, in a fine fruitful Plain 8 Leagues West of the Mountains of *Andes*, being wash'd by the great River *Biobio* on the South, and another River on the North, and is said to be founded by *Valdivia*, soon after the Town of *Conception*, from which it is about 20 Leagues distant.

*Arauco.*

12. *Arauco* is situated about 5 Leagues North of *Angol*, and gives Name to a Valley inhabited by the bravest People of *Chili*, who long defended their Country against the Invasion of the *Spaniards*, and when they were subdu'd by the irresistible Artillery, Fire-Arms, and Cavalry of the *Spaniards*, not being able to bear the Oppression of their Conquerors long, had recourse to Arms again, took the  
Towns

Towns and Fortresses that had been built to keep them in Subjection, and defeated and kill'd their General *Valdivia* in Battle, as will be more particularly related in the ensuing History.

2dly, The Province of *Cuyo*, or *Cuito*, in which I comprehend the Desarts of *Pampas*, is bounded by *La Plata* on the North; by the *Atlantick Ocean* on the East; by *Patagonia* on the South, and the Mountains of *Andes* on the West; being about a thousand Miles in Breadth generally from East to West, and extending from the 35th to the 45th Degree of South Latitude; of which the *Spaniards* are Masters only of a very small Part between the *Andes* and *La Plata*; the rest of the Country between the *Andes* and the *Atlantick* was never yet subdu'd.

I find but three *Spanish* Towns mention'd in the Province of *Cuyo*, viz. 1. *Mendoza*. 2. *St. John de Frontiera*; and 3. *Oromante*, or *St. Lewis of Loyala*, all of them upon the Northern Confines, the *Spaniards* possessing very little of this Country on the South and East.

1. *Mendoza* is situated in 35 Degrees South Latitude, on a Pass of the Mountains of *Andes*, between the Provinces of *Chili Proper* and that of *Cuyo*.

2. *St. John de Frontiera* is situated to the Northward of *Mendoza*, on the Confines of *La Plata*.

3. *Oromante*, or *St. Lewis*, is situated South-East of *Mendoza*, in 36 Degrees South Latitude, and 70 Degrees of Western Longitude, which is all the Description I can meet with of these three Towns.



Chili.  
 Patagonia. 3dly, The Province of *Patagonia*, or *Terra Magellenica*, in which I include the *Terra del Fogo*, is bounded by a Line drawn from the *Atlantick* to the *Pacifick Ocean*, in 45 Degrees of South Latitude, on the North; by the *Atlantick Ocean* on the East; and by the *South-Sea*, or *Pacifick Ocean*, on the South and West. The most Southern Promontory, call'd *Cape Horn*, lying in 57 Degrees 30 Minutes South Latitude.

In this Part of the World I meet with no Towns either of the Natives or *Europeans*, and therefore I proceed in the next place to describe the Houses of the *Chilefians*, and their Way of Life in these three *Chilefian* Provinces.

Buildings  
 of the  
*Chilefians*. The *Chilefians* do not live in Towns, but every Tribe extends itself on the Bank of some River in the Valleys between the Mountains, their Houses standing regularly, and at a Distance from each other; neither do they remain long in one Place, but remove for the Convenience of Pasture, and, as the Season of the Year requires, sometimes into the higher and sometimes into the lower Grounds, in which they do not find much Difficulty, for their Houses are all upon a Floor, slightly built of Wood, and consist of three or four Rooms only, which are so contriv'd that they can be taken asunder and remov'd one after another: Their Doors have neither Hinges, Locks, or Bolts, their Furniture being so mean, tho' they live in one of the richest Countries in the World, that they fear no Robberies: Their Beds are the Skins of Beasts laid upon the Floor, a Block or a Stone serves them for a Pillow, and they lay a Coverlet or two over them, made of the Wool of their Country Sheep. Their Dishes are of Wood, or made of some Calabash, or Goad,

Goad, which serve them also instead of Pails and Pitchers ; earthen Pots they have to boil and stew their Meat in ; a rough unhewn Block serves for a Seat, and another of the same kind for a Table ; and their Lances, Swords, and other Arms are the principal Ornaments of their Houses : This is to be understood of the *Indians* of the Province of *Chili Proper* ; for those who inhabit *Cuyo*, and the Plains on the East Side of the Mountains of *Andes*, are still less polish'd. Some of them live in Caves, and others, after the *Arabian* Way, are ever roving from one part of the Country to another ; and that they may do this with the greater Ease, they have no Houses at all, only a slight Tent made of the Skins of Beasts to shelter them against the Rain and Sun, and they have nothing to do but to take up their Tent-poles and Skins, whenever they are disposed to march.

Natives  
of *Cuyo* no  
fix'd A-  
bode.

They look upon it as a sort of Imprisonment to be confin'd to one Place, therefore have neither Houses, Gardens, Plantations, or Furniture to clog or stop their Progress.

The Liberty of wandering whither they please is esteem'd the greatest of all earthly Blessings. Sometimes, say they, we are pleas'd with the Freshness of a River Side, and weary of that, we resort to the Woods and Shades, and then again we remove to the open and champain Country. All the Pleasure of Life is in Variety. In one Season we hunt, in another we are employ'd in fishing, and in another we enjoy the Fruits of the Earth, which are produc'd spontaneously ; when these begin to fail us in one Country, we resort to another. Wherever we happen to encamp, that is our Home. We have no more Fondness for one

Chili.

Place than another. We go where we will, without leaving any thing behind us we much regret or desire, which uſes to torment thoſe who have fix'd Habitations when they are forced to part with them or from them: We fear no ill News, having nothing to loſe. Our Wives and Children are our only Treafure, and while we have theſe we want nothing.

As to the Natives of *Patagonia*, or *Terra Magellanica*, I could never learn there was a ſingle Town in the Country, and ſcarce any thing that looks like a Houſe; nothing but poor Huts of a pyramidical Form, juſt to ſcreen the miſerable Inhabitants from the Rigour of the Weather have ever been ſeen there, and very few of theſe; for this ſeems to be the moſt thinly inhabited of any Part of *South-America*.


Fortreffes.

As to the Fortreffes, and ſtrong Places of the *Chileſians*, according to the Account the *Spaniards* give us of them, they ſeem to reſemble thoſe of the ancient *Britons*. They were uſually ſituated in Woods, ſurrounded by Lakes, or Moraffes, and the Trees cut down and laid acroſs ſerv'd them inſtead of Walls. Where they had no Water or Marſhes to defend them, they made broad Ditches, and planted ſharp Stakes at the Bottom of them. In ſome Places the Ditch was cover'd over with a ſlight Cruſt of Earth, ſo that the *Spaniſh* Horſe fell in upon them when they leaſt ſuſpected it; and this ſeems to have been a common Stratagem all over *America* to dig Pits in the Roads and ſet Stakes in them whenever they expected to be attack'd by the *Spaniſh* Cavalry; but the *Spaniards* reveng'd themſelves with great Severity on the Natives whenever they happen'd to loſe either Men or Horſes by this Stratagem.



# C H A P. IV.

*Of the Persons and Habits of the Chile-  
fians ; their Genius, Temper, Arts,  
Manufactures, Food, Exercises, and  
Diversions.*

 HE *Chilefians*, according to Sir Chili.  
*John Narborough*, are of the Persons.  
middle Size, and strong limb'd,  
of a tawny Complexion, and  
have long black Hair exceeding  
harsh ; their Features tolerably good, their  
Teeth white and sound, active of Body, but  
of a dejected Countenance. They agree with  
the rest of the *Americans* in pulling the Hair  
off their Chins and other parts of their Body,  
as soon as it appears, with Tweezers, or Nip-  
pers made of Shells. Their Women are  
moderately tall, slender, and well-shap'd ;  
They braid and curl their Hair frequently,  
letting it grow to a very great Length.

When *Ovalle*, and other *Spanish* Writers,  
tell us that the *Chilefians* are very fair, it must  
be understood in Comparifon of those *Indians*  
that lie near the Equinoctial, and perhaps they  
may be fairer than some of the *Spaniards* and  
*Portuguese* ; but Sir *John Narborough*, who  
was an *Englifman*, esteem'd them very tawny  
compar'd with his Countrymen.

As to those *Chilefians* who inhabit the Pro-  
vince of *Cuyo*, and the Plains of *Pampas*,  
between

Chili.

between the Mountains of *Andes* and the *Atlantick Ocean*, these are People of a larger Stature than those of *Chili Proper*, and of a darker Complexion, and the Women paint their Faces or some part of them Green.

The third Province of *Chili*, denominated *Patagonia*, and *Terra Magellenica*, is the Country which our first Discoverers peopled with Giants, Dwarfs and Monsters: But none that have visited these Coasts the last hundred Years having seen any thing of this kind, the most credulous seem now ready to give up those Relations as fabulous, I shall say nothing more therefore of the People that inhabit this Tract of Land, but that the further we proceed to the Southward beyond the Equator, the more robust the People are, and the lighter the Colour of their Hair, as we find it in our Northern Hemisphere, and as they have very little Communication with any Part of the World, they are esteem'd as savage as any of the *Americans*.

The Men of *Chili Proper* wear a loose Garment made of the Wool of their Country Sheep, pretty full, and reaching down to their Knees or lower, which is put on like a Surplice, not being open before, or on the Sides, and has not Sleeves. They have a kind of open Drawers and Doublets, but no Shirts, any more than Shoes and Stockings, but wear a kind of Buskin, or Half-socking, on their Legs; and on their Heads a stiff Hat or Cap, cock'd up before like a Dragoon's Cap, the Crown of which is sometimes adorned with a beautiful Plume of Feathers, dy'd Wool, or a Nosegay of Flowers.

The Habits of the Women differ little from those of the Men, only they have no Covering  
on

on their Heads, but a kind of Coronet of Chili.  
 Wool of several Colours binds their Temples. Their Hair is part of it curl'd and braided, and the rest flows down their Backs to a great Length. The Women have also a kind of Sash with which they bind or swathe their Bodies from the Middle upwards, and when they go abroad, throw a Cloak or a Mantle over all.

On Festivals their Cloaths are of the same Orna-  
 Form, but finer, and of more beautiful ments.  
 Colours; and as they adorn their Heads with Feathers or Flowers, their Necks are cover'd with Chains of beautiful Shells, or precious Stones.

The *Indians* on the East Side of the *Andes*, in the Province of *Cuyo* and the Plains of *Pampas*, are not near so well cloathed as those on the West. They are contented with Leaves to hide their Nudities, and the Skins of Beasts serve them for Cloaks, or Mantles, which is all the Cloathing they wear as far as I can learn, and their Ornaments are some glittering Trifles which they hang upon their Lips, that are bor'd through for that Purpose, and rather disfigure than adorn their Faces, in the Opinion of Strangers.

As to the People of *Patagonia*, or *Terra Magellenica*, 'tis said, they go like the ancient *Britons*, perfectly naked, tho' they live in an exceeding cold Climate; so cold, that the *Spaniards* who were sent to build Forts and settle Colonies in the Streights of *Magellan*, all of them perish'd, and the whole Country is so disagreeable to *Spanish* Constitutions, that they have not one Colony in it, tho' they claim the Property of the whole as far as *Cape Horn*, the most Southern Promontory in *America*.

As

Chili.

Genius  
and Tem-  
per.

As to the Genius and Temper of the *Chilefians*, they are the bravest People of the new World, and to this Day remain unconquer'd, for the most part. The *Peruvian* Emperors formerly made some Impression on their Northern Frontiers, but were repuls'd when they came to the Valley of the *Araucans*, and could never penetrate further. The *Spaniards*, by the Advantage of their Artillery, Fire-Arms and Horse, which these People had never seen before, also subdu'd several of their Provinces; but when the Terror of these were over, and the *Chilefians* had learned the Use of Fire-Arms, and to manage Horses, they revolted and drove the *Spaniards* out of their Country, of which they at this Day retain but a very small part near the Coast of the *South-Sea*, as will be observ'd in the ensuing History.

Nor were these People less remarkable for their Wit than their Courage; they did not only learn the Art of War of the *Spaniards*, but excell'd them soon in warlike Stratagems, and their Generals became superior to the *Spaniards*: What gave their Enemies a vast Advantage of them at first was, their being divided under so many petty Princes, the Heads of their Clans; but they no sooner united under one Chief or General, than they became exceeding formidable.

The *Chilefians* are remarkable also for their Patience and Fortitude, being bred up to Hardships from their Infancy: They endured Fatigue, Heat, and Cold, to Admiration, inasmuch that they wanted scarce any Qualification that is requisite to form good Soldiers; and where they apply themselves to learn any other Art or Science, frequently excell their *Spanish* Masters.

In

In Temperance only they are deficient. In eating, drinking, and venereal Encounters they know no Bounds; particularly at their Festivals and Entertainments, which last several Days, they eat and drink most immoderately, scarce ever parting sober; and the Women, as well as Men, frequently drink to Excess, but then it is by themselves, and at different times; for when their Husbands carouse, they make it their Business to attend and take care of them when they are disorder'd, and prevent Quarrels, which frequently arise when they are elevated. Chili.

They eat very little Meat, except Venison, before the *Spaniards* arriv'd and stock'd their Country with Beef and Mutton, Hogs and Goats; for *America*; as has been observ'd, produced no such Animals, and now they seldom eat Flesh but at their Festivals: Their usual Diet is Maiz, or *Indian* Corn, boil'd, parch'd, or ground, and made into Paste, with Pulse, Roots, Fruit and Herbs: Their Drink is either made of their *Indian* Corn dry'd and steep'd, or of their Fruits, and is very strong and palatable; and in the Southern Provinces the *Spaniards* have introduc'd Grapes, and make good Wine, but the Northern Provinces are too cold for it. Their Food.

They dance, sing, and play upon Instruments at their Festivals, tho' they make but dull Musick with their wooden Drums and Flutes, as they are call'd; and if their Wind Instruments are made of the Bones of their Enemies, as some relate, it cannot be very harmonious. They dance round a kind of Maypole, as the common People sometimes do here, but with this Improvement, that they lodge several Boxes of good strong Liquor about



Chili.

about the Pole, and drink round to one another in the Intervals of their Dances till they are exceeding merry, and sometimes very drunk. And thus they frequently pass away whole Nights as well as Days; and it is when the Men are thus heated with Liquor that they resolve upon some Expedition against their Enemies, or on a Hunting-Match, in both which they will endure incredible Fatigues, tho' they live so luxuriously at other times: And indeed it is their laborious Exercise, and the Hardships they sustain in the Field, that makes them excell all other *Indians* in military Exploits, and gives them such robust Constitutions. Pain and Pleasure they experience alternately, and the Labours of the Chase, or a severe Campaign, give a Relish to their softer Amusements.

Exercises.

Their Children are bred up from their Infancy to endure Hardships, to manly Sports and the Exercise of Arms; and even their Women are not exempted from them, but attend their Husbands in the most hazardous Enterprises, in which they sometimes bear a part. The whole Nation is so addicted to War, that it seems to be both their Business and their Pleasure: Nor did they ever want an Exercise for their Courage during the Reigns of the *Peruvian* Emperors, who were perpetually invading and harrasing their Frontiers, tho' they could never make any great Impression on them. Since the *Spaniards* arriv'd, they have been in a perpetual State of War with those Invaders, and have learn'd of them to manage their Horses so well, and to use the Fire-Arms they have taken from the *Spaniards*, that to this Day they maintain the inland Country against them, suffering the *Spaniards* to possess

possess only some few Towns upon the Coast. This Genius for War, possibly, may be one Reason they have made so little Improvement in other Arts and Sciences ; for except those who form their Arms, their Bows, Arrows, Lances and Darts, there are very few Artificers among them : And indeed they have very little Occasion for Mechanicks, neither their Houses or Furniture requiring many Materials, or much Skill to put them together ; and their Cloathing is always the same, not shap'd to their Bodies, but loose about them, and they never alter their Fashions. However, it appears they understood Spinning, Weaving, and Dying pretty well, and could sew or tack their Cloaths together before the *Spaniards* came amongst them ; and where they apply themselves to learn any mechanick Art of the *Spaniards*, they make excellent Workmen.

Chili.  
Few Arti-  
ficers.

They had no Books, Letters, or Writings among them any more than the rest of the *Americans*, but assisted their Memories by *Quippo's*, or Knots, as the *Peruvians* did, and would cast up an Account by them with great Exactness : And many of them are now become the greatest Proficients in the Liberal Arts who live under the *Spanish* Jurisdiction.

Learning.

The Skill the Natives of *Chili* had in Physick and Surgery was very mean ; Bleeding, Purging, and Vomiting, and the Application of certain Herbs to their Wounds, was all they knew of this Science almost : And instead of a Lancet, they used a sharp piece of Flint set in a small Cane, not much unlike the Instrument we bleed Horses with. But the Natives are said to be of such strong, hale Constitutions, and use so much Exercise, that they have very little Occasion for Physick, and live frequently

Physick.

Chili.



to an hundred Years of Age, their Memory seldom failing them to the last, any more than their Teeth or Eyes; but if they are remov'd into *Peru* or any hot Climate, they soon sicken and die, as we find by the *Chileſian* Prisoners the *Spaniards* take and ſend to their Colonies nearer the Equinoctial.

Their  
Averſion  
to Servi-  
tude.

So averſe are they to Slavery, that there is no keeping them Prisoners long in their own Country: They will run any Hazard to make their Eſcape, and ſometimes die by their own Hands, ſo much do they dread the Cruelty of the *Spaniards*, who ſend the captive *Chileſians* therefore to the moſt diſtant Countries. Several of them however have eſcap'd back to their own Country, even from *Lima*, which is 500 Leagues diſtant from it; tho' they are forced to creep along by the Sea-ſide, and traverse all the Turnings and Windings of the Shore, which makes the Way as far again; and in this extenſive Journey they dare not enter any Town or inhabited Place for fear of being retaken by the *Spaniards*, inſomuch that they are forced to feed upon Cockles and other Shell-fiſh they find by the Sea-ſide. Nor are they leſs put to it for Water to drink in the *Peruvian* Deſerts than they are for Food: And a further Inconvenience is, that they are forced to ſwim croſs the Mouths of ſeveral rapid Rivers in their Paſſage; and yet do they frequently overcome all theſe Difficulties by Time and Patience, and arrive at their own Country.

*Ovalle* relates, that ſome of theſe *Chileſians* being taken captive and ſent in Chains from *Baldivia* to *Peru* on Board a Ship, found Means to get off their Fetters, and jumping into the Sea, ſwam on Shore when the Ship was  
more

more than a Mile distant from it: and that one old Man, who was not so fortunate as to get away with the rest, when he found all his Companions gone the next Day fell upon the Master of the Ship, and having wounded him in several Places with a Knife, threw himself into the Sea, but was shot before he could reach the Shore; which Occurrence *Ovalle* produces as an Instance of the Bravery of the *Chilefians*, and the Aversion they have to the being carry'd out of their Country.

Chili.





## C H A P. V.

*Of the Animals of Chili.*

Chili.  
  
 Animals.



IN this Country we meet with the *Peruvian* Sheep and Goats, and such other Quadrupedes as have been describ'd in *Peru*, but they don't seem to have abounded in four-footed Animals in any part of *America*, or to have had that Variety of them as we have in this part of the World. The *Spaniards*, however, transported thither almost every Species about 200 Years ago, which being left to run wild in their Forests, are vastly multiply'd, infomuch that 'tis said, the *Chilians* can now bring a Body of ten or twelve thousand Horse into the Field at a short Warning; and they carry on a very great Trade with the Hides of their black Cattle as well as the Flesh, which they dry and send to *Peru*, but are forced to burn or bury vast Quantities of Beef every Year, not having a sufficient Demand for the Flesh of those numerous Drovers they annually kill for their Skins.

Their Birds and Fowls also are much the same that are found in *Peru*; Eagles, Hawks, Parrots, and the Couder, a prodigious large and ravenous Bird of Prey, two or three of which will seize upon a young Calf or Heifer and devour them, and they are not afraid to attack Boys and Girls; but of these there are not many here, any more than in *Peru*.

The

The Parrots fly screaming in such numerous Flocks, that they obscure the Sight of the Sun, and never fail to come down from the Mountains into the Valleys at the Season of the Year when the Fruits are ripe, of which they destroy great Quantities.

At the time when they slaughter their Beef, there comes down another voracious Fowl, larger than a Duck, which gorges itself with the Carcases that are left in the Fields, so that it cannot fly till it has got rid of its Load; and they are hunted and knock'd on the Head by the Boys at this Season.

The Ostrich is another Bird the Natives hunt, and tho' he cannot fly, yet by the Help of his Wings he runs so swiftly that he frequently escapes from the fleetest Dogs and Horses.

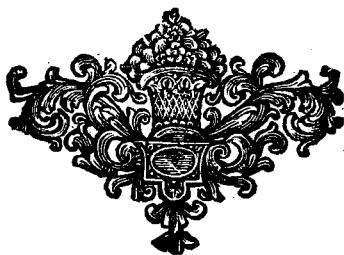
They have another long-leg'd Fowl, bigger than a Turkey, that wades through Ponds and Rivers, and lives upon Fish. These the *Indians* hunt for their Feathers, which are red and white, and take many more Fowls on the same Account; for Plumes of beautiful Feathers are the principal Ornaments of their Heads. They abound also in Singing-Birds of various kinds, many of them unknown to this part of the World; and they have several the same as ours, such as Linnets, Nightingales, Blackbirds, and Finches. Of tame Fowls they had but one Sort, between a Duck and a Hen, when the *Spaniards* arrived here, but now they have introduced all manner of *European* Poultry, which multiply exceedingly, and are much better Food here than in warmer *Climates*. These only, of all the People of *America*, can say they are Gainers by being acquainted with the *Spaniards*; for they still retain

Chili.

retain their Liberties (most of them) and have acquir'd the Possession of *European* Cattle, Fowls, Grain and Fruits, which they wanted before. They have also learn'd several Arts and Sciences of the *Europeans*, and in many Instances excell their Masters.

Fish.

Their Lakes and Rivers abound in good Fish as well as their Seas. Whales and Grampus's are frequently found on the Coast of *Chili*, and there is plenty of Albecores, Boneta's, Flat-fish, and Shell-fish.





CHAP. VI.

*Of their Forest and Fruit-Trees, Grain,  
Plants, Herbs, Roots, Flowers and  
Minerals.*



AMONG the Forest Trees of <sup>Chili,</sup>  
this Country, the principal are <sup>Forest</sup>  
the Cypress Tree, the Cedar, <sup>Trees.</sup>  
the Oak, the Pareguay, and  
the Cinamon Tree, so call'd,

I presume, from some Resem-  
blance it may have to the true Cinamon in its  
Colour ; but the Bark has neither that fine  
Smell or Taste as the true Cinamon has. This  
Timber is used chiefly in their Buildings, and  
they have also the Sandal, the Palm, the Pine  
Tree, and the Guayac, which is a Wood as  
hard and as heavy as Iron almost. There is  
another Tree call'd the Thorn-Bush, that grows  
in Clusters, or Groves, which is their ordinary  
Fuel near *St. Jago* : It has some Resemblance  
of an Oak, but more durable, the Heart of  
it is red and scarce ever decays. They make  
Charcoal of this Wood for their Furnaces and  
Forges. Both this and the Oak lose their Leaves  
in Winter, as well as their Fruit Trees, but  
there are some wild Trees that do not, tho'  
covered with Snow. The Mustard Plant,  
*Ovalle* relates, grows vastly large here : He  
says, he has travell'd many Leagues through  
Groves of Mustard, which were taller than  
Vol. XXX. K Man



Chili.

Man and Horse, and the Birds, as 'tis said in the Gospel, build their Nests in the Branches,

Flowers.

As soon as the first Rains fall in the Spring, the Fields are cloathed with green, and within a Month there is good Grass, with which Nature produces yellow Flowers in great abundance, and after these, a vast Variety of other Flowers, red, blue, green, yellow, &c. of which, *Ovalle* says, he numbered two and forty several Sorts at one Time: Nor did he reckon among these any of their Garden Flowers, or those brought from *Europe*, such as Carnations, Roses, Gilliflowers, Lillies, &c. and those wild Flowers smell extremely sweet Morning and Evening, as do several of their green Herbs, from which they distill perfum'd Waters.

Medicinal Herbs.

They have also Physical Herbs of great Virtue, and the *Spaniards* have discover'd many more, since their Arrival, than the Natives were acquainted with, some whereof will expell Poison.

*Ovalle* mentions a Plant call'd Quinchamali, which rises about a Foot above the Ground, and spreading like a Nofegay ends in little Flowers that resemble Saffron; this they take up and boil with the Roots, and the Liquor being drank hot dissolves any coagulated Blood in the Body, occasioned by Wounds or Bruises, preventing Impostumations.

Another of these healing Herbs is call'd Albaquilla, which grows on a Shrub almost as large as a Tree; the Leaves are fragrant and sweet to the Taste, the Juice whereof apply'd to green Wounds is a present Cure.

A third healing Herb grows like a Lock of fine Hair, and being boil'd in Water, and drank, cures Fevers and Pleurifies. There are

are Herbs that cure the Sciatica, others that dissolve the Stone in the Bladder, and, if we may credit *Ovalle*, here are Herbs that cure almost every Malady.

Chili.

The Fruits peculiar to the Country mention'd Fruits. by *Ovalle* are, the Pengu, a red Fruit of an oval Form, something bigger than a Filbert, which they boil and eat with their Meat. The Magne, whose Fruit is black, like a Mirtle Berry, and well tasted, but perfectly dyes the Mouth and Hands black. They have many other Fruits, of which they make good Liquor; but the most admired is the Murtilla, which grows in 37 Degrees beyond, and is the common Food of the Natives of that part of the Country. It is of a red Colour, and in Form like a small Grape with little Seeds in it, like those we find in Figs; this Fruit has a delicious Taste and Smell, and they make a Wine of it, which excells our *European* Wine, 'tis said, and all other Liquors, and is the more valuable because it grows in a part of the Country that is too cold for our Wine; and when it turns sour exceeds all other Vinegar in Flavour.

They had also a Seed call'd Madi, which afforded very good Oil before the *Spaniards* introduc'd Olives.

As to their Fruits in general, the *Spanish* Writers observe, that they have scarce any of those that grow in the Countries between the Tropicks, and consequently those that are found in *Mexico* and *Peru* are not many of them to be met with here. But then they have this Advantage, that whatever Fruits are carried thither from *Europe* thrive prodigiously, particularly Vines, Figs, Olives, Apple-Trees, *European* Pears, Apricots, Peaches, Quinces, Pome-Fruits. granates, Cherries, Plumbs, Oranges, Lemons, Citrons

*Chili.* Citrons and Almonds. But the Fruit that thrives most is the Apple of every kind, of which they have prodigious Orchards, and they are forced to thin them when they are small, or they break down the Trees before they are ripe.

*Corn.* Of Maiz, or *Indian Corn*, they had great plenty before the *Spaniards* arriv'd, but they had neither Wheat, Barley, Oats, Annis, Cummin, Coriander-seed, Linseed, Flax, Hemp, Peas, Cabbage, Lettice, Raddishes, Cardoons, Chicory, Endive, Cucumbers, Pursly, Garlick, or Onions, all which they have now in abundance, and in greater Perfection than they are to be met with here; and their Roots, particularly Turnips, grow to a prodigious Size.

*Ovalle* observes, that tho' every part of *America* is oblig'd to the *Spaniards* for some of these *European* Seeds and Plants, yet they are all to be found only in *Chili*. In some Provinces, says he, they have *European* Grain, in others Oil, in others Fruit, but in *Chili* they have now all manner of Trees, Plants, Seeds and Animals almost that are in *Europe*, and here they thrive and multiply to Admiration. He adds, that he has seen Apple Trees, Pears, Mulberry Trees, and Walnut Trees grow to the Size of Elms, Strawberries as big as Pears, and Quinces as big as a Man's Head: That Fruit is so plentiful that they enjoy it in a manner in common. No Man refuses to let another go into his Garden and take what he pleases; and he has seen their best Fruits grow wild in the Fields for a Mile together.

*Mines.* There are Mines of Gold, Silver, Copper, Quicksilver and Lead in *Peru*, but the *Spaniards* seem to slight all of them but the Gold. When

When *Valdivia* made a Conquest of part of this Country, 'tis said, he employ'd no less than fifty thousand *Indians* in working the Gold Mines; at which the Natives were so provok'd, that they made a general Revolt, defeated and kill'd *Valdivia*, and drove the *Spaniards* out of most of the Towns they had built. After which they made a Law, that it should be capital to discover a Mine to the *Spaniards* or any other Foreigners. Nor will they suffer a Mine to be opened now; so that tho' the *Spaniards* have repossest themselves of some Towns upon the Coast, they meet with no other Gold at present than what they purchase of the *Chilefians*, who gather none but what they find in the Sands of their Rivers, or on the Surface of the Earth, tho' there are more Gold Mines here than in any part of the World. Both the *English* and *Dutch* have endeavour'd to cultivate an Understanding with the Natives of *Chili*, in order to traffick with them for their Gold, but could never succeed. They look upon all Strangers to have the like Passion for Gold as the *Spaniards* have, and imagine, if they should suffer them to plant Colonies there, they would attempt to take their Country from them, as the *Spaniards* have done. And since I am now treating of the Produce of this Country, it may be proper to say something of the foreign Trade of *Chili*, which consists Foreign Trade. altogether in exporting that Produce to *Peru* and *Mexico*; namely, Gold, Copper, and other Metals, Hides, Tallow, dry'd Flesh, Fish, Corn, Fruits, Wine, Oil, Salt, Hemp, Flax, Cordage, Leather, Timber for Shipping and other Uses, Medicinal Herbs and Drugs: The chief Articles in these Exportations being Hides and Tallow. *Ovalle* relates, that

Chili.

that he has known twenty thousand Quintalls of Tallow exported in one Year from *Chili* to *Lima* only, and Hides and Leather in proportion. Their naval Stores are another great Article, which the *Peruvians* receive entirely from thence, as also the Copper, of which they make their great Guns and Bells: And the *Spaniards* of *Chili* take in return from *Mexico*, *Panama* and *Lima*, the Merchandise of *China*, *East-India* and *Europe*. At least this was the Nature of their Traffick when the *Spaniards* were possess'd of this Country, but no doubt it must be decreased in proportion to what the Natives have recovered from them.

What has been said hitherto upon this Head the Reader will observe relates to the Province of *Chili Proper*; as to that of *Cuyo*, which lies on the East of the Mountains of *Andes*, and between those Mountains and the *Atlantic Ocean*, we have not so perfect an Account as could be wish'd, nor indeed of any of the Inland Provinces. The Reader must be content therefore with such a one as I can collect from the Authors before me, among whom *Ovalle*, a Native of *Chili*, and who was Procurator for the Jesuites of that Province at *Rome*, is the principal.

The  
Difference  
between  
*Cuyo* and  
*Chili  
Proper*.

He repeats, in the first place, some Observations he made upon another Occasion, namely, that it is amazing to reflect when there are only the Mountains of *Andes* between the Provinces of *Cuyo* and *Chili Proper*, they should be so different in their Qualities, and in every Respect almost diametrically opposite to each other, tho' the Latitude be the same.

In *Cuyo*, he says, the Heats are intolerable in Summer, while the Weather in *Chili* is very temperate. In *Cuyo* Thunder, Lightning, Rain,

Rain, and Tempests are frequent in Summer, while in *Chili* they have settled serene Weather, without Thunder, Lightning, or Rain. In Winter the Weather is variable in *Chili*, but never excessive cold to the westward of the Mountains, whereas in *Cuyo* they have constant serene Weather in the Winter, and excessive hard Frosts, insomuch that the Cattle die in the Fields if they are not hous'd, and for five or six Months every Year the Passages of the Mountains are so lock'd up by the Snows that these two Provinces have no manner of Communication.

In *Chili* there are scarce any Snakes or poisonous Insects, but in *Cuyo* they abound, and they are tormented also with Buggs, Musquito's and other Vermin, of which they have none, or very few, in *Chili*.

As for Cattle, the *Spaniards* have pretty well stock'd this Province with all manner of *European* Cattle as well as *Chili*, and they have great Numbers of *Peruvian* Sheep and Goats of their own. They abound also in Corn and Wine, and their Fruits are said to have a better Flavour than those of *Chili*, their Summers being hotter, and of this there is such plenty that they supply the Province of *La Plata*, and even *Buenos Ayeres*, on the *Atlantick Ocean*, with dry'd Grapes, dry'd Peaches, Apples, Oil, and excellent Wine. But then this must be understood of that part of the Province that lies next the Mountains, for the Desarts of *Pampas* extend six or seven hundred Miles further Eastward, over which they are forced to pass in their Way to *Buenos Ayeres*. These, says my Author, are vast Plains, which, like the Ocean, afford an unbounded Prospect, but produce neither Trees

The  
Desarts of  
*Pampas*.

or

Chili.

or Herbage; and then proceeds to relate the Manner of travelling over those Defarts, which gives us some further Light into the Nature of this Country.

They travel, he says, in covered Carts and Waggon, made as commodious almost as an House, with Doors to shut, and Windows on each side to let in the Air; and they lay Beds, or Mattresses, on the Floor, on which they sleep great part of the Journey. These Waggon are drawn by Oxen, and they set out about two Hours before Sun-set, travelling all Night and till the Sun is an Hour high the next Morning, and then they bait (not at an Inn, for I can't learn there is a single House in the Country) but they rest and eat that Provision they carry with them, or take to hunting by the Way; for those that are disposed for rural Sports have Horses and Dogs with them, and take great Numbers of the Guanacoes and Vicunes, a kind of wild Sheep and Goats, Animals almost peculiar to *South-America*, which have been already describ'd in treating of *Peru*. They take also a great many Partridges, Francolins, and other Game, from whence one would be inclin'd to think it must be a mighty pleasant Journey from *Chili* to *Buenos Ayeres*; but Travellers inform us that they are subject to Inconveniences which very much abate the Pleasure of it, particularly the excessive Heats which oblige them to lie still all the middle of the Day, and then they have no other Defence from the Sun or Rain than what the Waggon affords at many Stages, tho' at some there happens to be small Brooks and Willows growing by them that afford the Traveller a refreshing Shade: But the greatest Inconvenience is the Want of Water, which they

they do not meet with sometimes for several Days Journey, and therefore are forced to carry Water both for themselves and their Cattle; and sometimes this is all spent, as my Author says it happen'd when he pass'd these Plains, and they must have perish'd if they had not happily been reliev'd by a Shower of Rain. But all this might be remedied if the Country was inhabited; for they meet with Springs it seems in many Places within a few Yards of the Surface: And the Rains alone, which happen frequently in Summer, might be preserved in Cisterns and Reservoirs, if there were any Towns or Villages in the Country; but at present, says my Author, these are the Difficulties we meet with in the Plains of *Cuyo*, *Tucuman*, and *Rio Plata*; adding, for many Leagues we do not see a Hill, a Tree, or a Stone, any more than Water, unless our Way lies near the Banks of the River *Plata*, or some other River.







## C H A P. VII.

*The History of Chili, containing the ancient and present State of that Country.*

Chili.  
  
 The  
 History  
 of Chili.



THE first Account the *Spaniards* receiv'd of *Chili* was from the *Peruvians*, who subdu'd the Northern Part of that Province in the Reign of their tenth *Inca*, *Tupanqui*, but afterwards met with so powerful an Opposition from the confederated *Chilefians*, that the *Inca's* determin'd to make the River *Maulle* the utmost Bounds of their Empire, and accordingly fortified the Banks of it against the Invasions of the *Barbarians*, as they call'd them ; for all we can learn of the ancient *Chilefians* from the *Peruvians* is, that they worship'd a great many Creatures animate and inanimate as Gods, and were very unpolish'd and unciviliz'd ; that they had no other Form of Government than the Patriarchal. Every Tribe or Family was governed by its respective Head, or Chief, who was succeeded by his eldest Son, or nearest Relation, on his Decease. And when they were invaded, or had Wars with their Neighbours, they made choice of the Man most famous for Courage and military Skill for their General. As to that Part of the Country that was conquer'd by the *Inca's*, the *Chilefians* were obliged to conform themselves to the Religion and Manners

ners of the *Peruvians*, and their Emperors made no Difference between these and the rest of their Subjects.

Chili.

*Don Diego de Almagro* was the first of the *Spanish* Generals who, after the Reduction of *Cusco*, the Capital of *Peru*, undertook an Expedition against *Chili*, in which he was introduced by the *Inca Paulla*, who put him in Possession of that Part of it which was under the Dominion of the *Peruvian* Emperors, about the Year 1535, as has been already related in the History of *Peru*: After which, *Almagro* subdu'd some of the more Southern Provinces of *Chili*, and probably would have extended his Conquests further, if he had not been oblig'd to return to *Peru* to make head against the *Pizarro's*, who had formed a Design to deprive him of his Share of that Province, and to have usurp'd the sole Dominion of all the Conquests the *Spaniards* had made to the Southward of the Equator.

*Almagro's*  
Expedi-  
tion to  
*Chili*.

*Valdivia*, or *Baldivia*, was the next *Spanish* Commander that attempted to extend their Conquests in *Chili*. He had served in the Wars of *Italy*, and was look'd upon as one of the best Officers that went over to *America*, for which Reason he was made choice of by the Marquis *Pizarro* to enlarge their Empire on that Side. *Valdivia* enter'd upon this Service in the Year 1540, and met with little Opposition from that Part of *Chili* which was Subject to the *Inca's*; but on his advancing further he was frequently encounter'd by the confederated Caciques. However, he penetrated as far as the Valley of *Mapocho*, which he found extremely fruitful and well peopled. In this Valley, being eighty Miles in Circumference, and situated 2 Leagues to the Westward

*Valdivia's*  
Invasion  
of *Chili*.

Chili.

of the Mountains of *Andes*, he founded the City of *St. Jago*, in the Year 1541, in 34 Degrees South Latitude, and built a Castle for the Defence of it and of the Gold Mines in the Neighbourhood, which he compel'd the conquer'd *Indians* to work in: At which the *Chilefians* were so exasperated, that they raised Forces and attack'd the Castle before it was well finish'd, and were very near carrying it; however, they were at length repuls'd, and *Valdivia* acquainting the Viceroy of *Peru* with the State of his Affairs, received a Re-inforcement of Troops from thence, under the Command of *John Baptista Pastene*. But still it appears he was not strong enough to make any great Progress; and the *Indians* giving out that there were very rich Gold Mines in a certain Part of the Country not far from *St. Jago*, drew a Detachment of his Forces (who went in search of them) into an Ambuscade, and cut off every Man of them except their Commander and a *Negro*, who escap'd to *St. Jago* by the Swiftnefs of their Horses. Whereupon *Valdivia* sent for another Re-inforcement of Troops to enable them to advance against the *Chilefians*; and built the Town and Castle of *Coquimbo*, or *Serena*, on a Bay of the Sea, in 30 Degrees South Latitude, to secure his Communication with *Peru*, and prevent the Supplies being cut off which he expected from thence.

In the mean time the Civil Wars breaking out in *Peru*, *Valdivia* was commanded thither with some of his Officers and Soldiers, and left his Conquests in *Chili* to the Care of his Lieutenant *Francisco de Villagra*; but the Rebels being defeated in *Peru*, *Valdivia* returned again to *Chili* with a good Body of veteran

veteran Soldiers, who had serv'd in those Wars. During the Absence of *Valdivia*, there happen'd a Misunderstanding between his Lieutenant *Francisco de Villagra* and *Pedro Sanchez de Hoz*, to whom the King of *Spain* had granted the Government of the further Part of *Peru* and *Chili*, and who with Reason therefore expected the Command of the Forces in *Chili* in the Absence of *Valdivia*; and indeed he had a Right to that Command before *Valdivia* himself, as he received his Commission only from the Marquis of *Pizarro*, who had no Authority in *Chili*; nor would *Don Sanchez* have submitted to *Valdivia*'s taking upon him the Command of that Army, but upon Condition of his being put in Possession of the richest Part of *Chili*.

Chili.

This *Valdivia* had agreed to, but his Lieutenant *Villagra*, taking an Opportunity to quarrel with *Sanchez* in the Absence of *Valdivia*, as has been intimated, made him Prisoner and cut off his Head, whether by the Order of *Valdivia* his Rival or not, is uncertain, but he appeared very well pleas'd with the Fact when it was done, having thus got rid of a Man that had so much Colour to claim the best Part of his Conquests, and look'd upon *Valdivia* himself as a Usurper.

While the *Spaniards* were thus engaged in Civil Broils both in *Peru* and *Chili*, the *Chileans* made their Advantage of them, surpris'd the *Spanish* Garrisons of *Copiapo* and *Coquimbo*, and putting them to the Sword, demolished both those Towns: And it was with Difficulty *Francisco de Villagra* defended himself in *St. Jago* itself till the Return of *Valdivia*, who bringing a good Army with him, restor'd his Affairs, drove the *Chileans* from the Valleys

The Civil Wars of the Spaniards in Peru and Chili.

Chili.

Valleys of *Copiapo* and *Coquimbo* again, and rebuilt the Towns the *Indians* had destroy'd there; after which he marched further Southward, and having pass'd the River *Maypo*, subdu'd the *Promoca's*, a warlike Nation, who had defended their Frontiers not only against the *Peruvian* Emperors, but against the *Spaniards* commanded by *Almagro*. He afterwards transported his Troops over the great Rivers *Maulle* and *Itata*, and observing an advantageous Situation on a Bay of the *South-Sea*, in 37 Degrees South Latitude, he founded a City there in the Year 1550, giving it the Name of *Conception*. But the *Chilefians*, enraged to see themselves thus bridled and restrain'd of their native Liberties by the Towns and Fortresses erected by the *Spaniards* in their Country, assembled in great Numbers, and harrafs'd the new City of *Conception* with repeated Attacks, killing a great many *Spaniards*, and endangering the Loss of their whole Army. *Valdivia*, however, finish'd the Fortification of that Town the latter End of the Year 1550, and having sent out a Party to discover the Country, advanc'd further Southward in the Beginning of the Year 1551, bending his March towards the Plains of *Angol*; and having cross'd the great River *Biobio*, founded the City of *Imperial* on a Hill at the Confluence of two Rivers in 39 Degrees South Latitude, 4 Leagues East of the *Pacifick Ocean*, and 40 to the Southward of *Conception*.


This City stands in a fine fruitful Plain, inhabited, as the *Spaniards* relate, by four-score thousand *Indians* when they arrived there, a very peaceable Nation, that gave them no Disturbance while they were building the City, and suffered *Valdivia* to parcel out both  
their

their Persons and their Lands among his Followers without Opposition.

From hence he marched towards the Mountains of *Andes*, and 16 Leagues to the Eastward of *Imperial* laid the Foundation of a City, which he call'd *Villa Rica*, from the Richness of the Gold Mines he found there. And here the *Spanish* Historians take the Liberty of censuring the Conduct of their Hero *Baldivia*, in endeavouring to grasp more than he could possibly hold with the few *Spanish* Forces he commanded. That brave People, they observe, had never been vanquish'd by the *Spaniards* in so many Encounters, if they had not been terrify'd and astonish'd at the Firing their Artillery and small Arms, which the *Indians*, at first, imagin'd to be real and not artificial Thunder and Lightning; and that those who discharg'd them were rather Gods than Men: Their Horses and the Men upon them, armed *Cap-a-pee*, seem'd also invulnerable, not being able to pierce their Armour with their Spears and Darts, which rendered the *Spaniards* still more terrible. But the *Chilefians* being at length undeceived, and finding their Enemies to be but Men like themselves, notwithstanding the Disadvantage they had in the Want of Horses, Artillery, and Armour, resolv'd to make another bold Push for the Recovery of their Liberties, being persuad'd they should be able, by their Numbers and Courage, to expell these Strangers out of their Country, who had so unjustly enslav'd them; in which they were not entirely mistaken, for the *Spaniards*, not considering that the Dread of their Arms and Horses was now worn off, grew remiss and negligent in their military Discipline, and attended more to the enriching themselves

The  
*Chilefians*  
revolt.

than

Chili.  than to the securing their Conquests, which was attended with many ill Effects ; for by compelling the *Indians* to dig in the Mines, they daily exasperated them more and more. And by assembling so many of them together at the Mines, gave them an Opportunity of forming Schemes, and executing them too with better Success than they could have done if they had remain'd dispersed in their respective Villages.

The *Araucans*, the bravest Nation of the *Chilefians*, had opposed the *Spaniards* with the greatest Success, but had been at last oblig'd to submit ; and this being one of the most desirable Countries in *Chili*, *Baldivia*, in the Distribution of the Lands, had reserv'd this Valley for himself ; and being sensible that the Natives were not to be kept under unless by pure Force, he erected three Castles in this Valley, and left Garrisons in them while he marched further Southward, and built the Town of *Valdivia*, as has been related ; where finding still richer Mines, 'tis said, he employ'd fifty thousand *Indians* in the working of them, and spent so much time there in amassing Wealth, that the *Araucans*, taking Advantage of his Absence, engaged the whole Country in a Conspiracy against the *Spaniards*, and chose the celebrated *Caupolican* for their General.

*Caupolican*  
General  
of the  
*Chilife*.

*Valdivia* receiving Intelligence of the intended Infurrection, return'd in some haste to the Valley of *Arauca*, where he found thirteen or fourteen thousand of the Natives assembled in Arms, whom he charged with his Horse, and oblig'd them to retire into the Woods and Inclosures as often as they appear'd, but was not in a Condition to disperse them entirely ; they

they frequently rallied and attack'd his Troops, and thus they continued to encounter him for several Days in a sort of Running-fight. Chili

The *Chileſian* General obſerving that his engaging the *Spaniards* with ſuch Numbers only occaſion'd Confuſion among his People, thoſe in the Front frequently giving way to the *Spaniſh* Cavalry, and diſordering the reſt of his Forces before ever they were engag'd, divided his Army into Battalions of a thouſand each, ordering them to charge the Enemy by turns. He repreſented to them, that the *Spaniards* were but an hundred and fifty Horſe; and that a thouſand of his brave Countrymen might eaſily maintain their Ground for ſome time againſt ſo ſmall a Number, notwithſtanding the Advantage the Enemy had in their Arms and Horſes. However, he only deſir'd they would make their utmoſt Efforts. He had no Expectation that the firſt Battalion ſhould gain the Victory, but when they found themſelves oblig'd to retire, requir'd them to take care in their Retreat not to diſorder the other Bodies, but rally themſelves, and draw up in the Rear, that they might be ready for a ſecond Charge; and the ſame Commands he gave to the Officers of the other Battalions. His Conduct.

In purſuance of theſe Orders, the firſt Battalion engag'd the *Spaniſh* Horſe with great Reſolution, and having held them in play ſome time, leiſurely retir'd, being ſucceeded by the ſecond and that by the third, and ſo on till the *Spaniards* had continued the Engagement for ſeven or eight Hours without Intermiſſion, and both Men and Horſes began to faint with the Labours of the Day, or for want of Reſreſhment; which *Valdivia* too late obſerving, made a precipitate Retreat, Vol. XXX. M ordering



Chili. ordering his Troops to take possession of a Pass about a Mile from the Field of Battle, where he did not doubt he should yet be able to defend himself against all the Power of the Enemy. But a *Chilefian*, who had been Page to *Valdivia*, and baptized by the Name of *Philip* (whose *Indian* Name was *Lautaro*) hearing his Master give Orders for their Retreat, deserted at that Instant to his Countrymen, and directed them to take possession of the Pass before the *Spaniards* could arrive there. He bid them (says the royal Historian, *De la Vega*) *make use of the Advantage they had in their Hands, recover their Liberties, and rescue their Country from Destruction, by cutting off those Thieves and Usurpers who had invaded it: And taking up a Spear, charged his late Lord, Valdivia, at the Head of a Company of Chilefians, while another Detachment of the Indians secured the Pass, as he directed them.*

*Lautaro*  
deserts to  
the *Chilese*.

The  
*Spaniards*  
routed.

*Valdivia*  
taken,

And now the *Chilefians* seeing the *Spaniards* unable longer to resist their Attacks, pressed them on every Side, without giving them a Moment's time to breathe, who finding Death inevitable, call'd upon *JESUS CHRIST*, but more upon the blessed Virgin and the rest of the Saints, to save them; but were all cut in pieces on the spot, except the General *Valdivia* himself, who was taken Prisoner while he was making his Confession to a miserable Priest in the same Circumstances, whom they kill'd immediately, but brought *Valdivia*, with his Hands bound behind him, before *Caupolican*, the *Chilefian* General, who ordering him to be ty'd to a Tree, that he might be executed with more Ceremony than those that fell in the Battle, *Valdivia*, 'tis said, meanly beg'd his Life of the Conquerors, addressing himself chiefly

chiefly to *Lautaro*, who was but a few Hours before his Slave. He promised, if they would spare him, to withdraw all the *Spanish* Forces out of *Chili*, and never more disturb their Peace, swearing by all that was sacred to perform his Promise; but the unrelenting Enemy was deaf to his Entreaties; even *Lautaro* observed, that it was Madness to trust to the Promises of a Captive who would infallibly change his Note if he was set at Liberty. Whereupon the General pronounced his Doom, and executed. tho' Authors differ about the Manner of his Execution. Some affirm, they poured melted Gold down his Throat, bidding him 'satisfy himself with that Metal he so violently thirsted after. Others relate, that one of the *Indian* Caciques, not bearing to hear it debated whether the Destroyer of their Country should live or die, beat out his Brains with a Club, without asking the General's Leave; and all the *Spanish* Writers agree that they made Trumpets and Flutes of his Bones, and preserved his Skull as a Memorial of that important Victory; which they celebrated by feasting and dancing after their Country Manner, and instituted publick Sports and Exercises, such as Running, Wrestling, and Leaping, to be observed annually in memory of it; and expecting the *Spaniards* would give them another Visit, they encamped in some of their most inaccessible Woods and Mountains; and *Campolican* constituted *Lautaro* his Lieutenant-General for the Services he had done in the late Battle, finding him every way qualified for that Post.

The News of *Valdivia's* Misfortune arriving at the City of *Conception*, his Lieutenant *Francisco de Villagra* assembled the *Spaniards* that

Chili.



were dispersed in the several Provinces of *Cbili*, and being joined with several thousand of his *Indian* Allies, marched to the Valley of *Arauca* to give Battle to *Caupolican*; but that General cunningly retir'd before him, till he found the *Spaniards* so far engaged in the Woods and Defiles that their Horse could be of little use to them: And then sending out Detachments to possess the Passes in their Rear, he boldly faced about and attack'd them in Front, ordering his Men not to stand to be shot at, but immediately advance and come to a close Engagement, mixing themselves with the Enemy, whereby they avoided the Mischief they used to receive from their Fire-Arms at a distance; and being much more numerous than the *Spaniards* and their Allies, by this Stratagem gained another memorable Victory, killing no less than two thousand five hundred *Spaniards* and *Indians* on the spot. After which, *Lautaro*, with a Part of the *Chilesean* Army, marched towards the City of *Conception*, and finding it abandon'd by the *Spaniards*, set fire to the Town and demolish'd it.

The  
*Chileseans*  
obtain a  
second  
Victory.

*Conception*  
abandon'd  
and burnt.

*Imperial*  
besieg'd.

*Lautaro* afterwards laid Siege to the City of *Imperial*, but the Winter coming on was obliged to raise it, by the great Rains which fall at that Season; tho' the *Spaniards* ascribe their Deliverance to a Miracle, assuring us, that the Virgin *Mary* appeared visibly to the whole Army over the City *Imperial*, and defended it against these Barbarians.

*Conception*  
rebuilt and  
destroy'd a  
second  
time.

The *Spaniards* afterwards rebuilt the City of *Conception*, but *Lautaro* drove them from thence a second time; and observing that the *Chilesean* Liberties would ever be precarious while the *Spaniards* had any Footing in their Country, he assembled a great Army and laid

laid Siege to the capital City of *St. Jago*, Chili.  
 where being unfortunately kill'd with an Arrow, Lautaro  
 the Siege was raised. kill'd

However, the Governor of *Peru* apprehending all *Chili* would be lost, sent his Son *Don St. Jago*.  
*Garcia de Mendoza* with a powerful Re-in-  
 forcement of Troops to suppress the *Araucans*,  
 who was so fortunate, after several Encounters  
 with various Success, to make their General  
*Caupolican* Prisoner, whom he put to death Caupolican  
 after he had persuaded him to declare himself taken and  
 a Christian. But this was far from putting an put to  
 End to the War, the *Chilefians* were deter- death.  
 mined to perish rather than become Slaves to  
 the *Spaniards*, and raising fresh Forces attack'd  
 all their Colonies at once, some of which were  
 taken and retaken several times; and thus the  
 War continued to be carried on with great  
 Obstinacy and Cruelty for upwards of fifty  
 Years, when it appears, by the *Spaniards* own  
 Relation, that they were driven with great  
 Slaughter from most of their Settlements in  
 that Country. The Spa-  
niards  
driven out  
of all Chili  
almost.

The royal Historian, *Garcilasso de la Vega*,  
 being then in *Spain*, informs us that he receiv'd  
 the following Relation of the Miseries of the  
*Spaniards* there from an intimate Acquaintance  
 in two Letters, one of which was dated from  
*St. Jago* in *Chili*, in the Month of *March*,  
*Anno* 1600, in which the Writer acquainted  
 him, That about Break of Day, on *Wednesday*  
 the 24th of *November*, 1599, five thousand  
*Indians*, whereof three thousand were Horse  
 and the rest Foot, seventy of them carrying  
 Fire-Arms, and two hundred of them in Ar-  
 mour (they had taken from the *Spaniards*) took  
 the City *Imperial* by Surprise, being guided  
 thither by a treacherous Spy, burnt and de- Imperial  
taken by  
the Chilese.  
 stroy'd

Chili. stroy'd the whole Town, killing and taking  
 four hundred *Spaniards*, Men, Women and  
 Children.

And in another Letter from *Chili*, in the  
 Year 1604, the Writer tells us, That of the  
 thirteen Cities which were established in this  
 Kingdom of *Chili*, the *Indians* had destroy'd  
 six, namely, *Valdivia*, *Imperial*, *Angol*, *Santa*  
*Cruz*, *Castro* in *Chiloe*, and *Conception*. They  
 overthrew their Houses, dishonour'd and prophan'd  
 the Temples, obscur'd the Brightness  
 of that Faith and Devotion which shined in  
 those Parts, and what is worse (says the Writer)  
 this Success hath encouraged and rais'd the  
 Spirits of the *Indians* in that manner, that  
 they are grown bold and confident, omitting  
 no Opportunity or Advantage which may  
 offer to rob or destroy our Cities and Monasteries  
 with Fire and Sword. They have learned  
 also many Arts and Stratagems of War; for  
 when they besieged the City of *Oformo*, and  
 compelled the *Spaniards* to retire within their  
 Works, they so straiten'd them that they  
 could receive no Sustainance, unless it were  
 some small Quantities of the Seed of Herbs,  
 and Leaves of Turnips, which too they were  
 fain to fight for and gain with the Point of the  
 Launce. In one of the Sieges of this City  
 they broke the Images of Christ and our Lady,  
 and other Saints to the great Dishonour of God,  
 which none but his infinite Mercy and Patience  
 could have suffer'd. In the last Siege which  
 the *Indians* laid to this Place they surpris'd  
 the *Spaniards* and kill'd the Centinels, and  
 without any Opposition entered and possess'd  
 themselves of the Town, exercising such Cruelty  
 as was agreeable to the Barbarity of their Na-  
 tures; for they butcher'd the Children, and  
 put

*Oformo*  
 Siege.

Taken by  
 Storm,

put the Women and Nuns in Chains, intending to carry them away into Slavery: But while they were thus busily employ'd in packing up and disposing their Booty, and plundering every-where without Order, the *Spaniards* took Courage, and with that Opportunity fell upon them, and God assisting their Endeavours, they rescued their Wives and Nuns from their violent Hands, and with the Loss of some few forced them to fly, and quit both their Prey and their City. The last Victory which the *Indians* obtained was when they took *Villarica* with great Effusion of *Spanish* Blood: They set fire to the four Quarters of the Town, and killed the Friars of *St. Dominick*, *St. Francis*, and the *Merceds*, with all the Clergy that were there, carrying the Women away Captives, many of which were Ladies of Quality and Condition. And this was the Fate of that City, which was once of Fame and great Renown, and illustrious among the neighbouring Cities of that new World. Thus far proceeds the Relation of *Chili* in the Year 1604.

and recover'd again.

*Villarica* taken and destroy'd.

To which nothing can be said (says *De la Vega*) but that *these were Judgments which God in his secret Providence permits for the Chastisements of Mankind*. Not reflecting that these Calamities were no more than the *Spaniards* richly deserved, who had unjustly invaded this Country, and made Slaves of the Natives without any manner of Colour or Pretence.

Remarks on these Calamities

The *Chilefians* afterwards recovered several other Places from the *Spaniards*, and almost expel'd them their Country, of which the *Hollanders* receiving Intelligence, their *West-India* Company, in the Year 1642, fitted out a Squa-

The *Hollanders* attempt to settle Colonies in *Chili*.

Chili.

a Squadron of Men of War under the Command of Captain *Brewer*, and having put some Land Forces on Board, order'd them to sail to the Coast of *Chili*, and settle Colonies there, not doubting to possess themselves of some of the Gold Mines of that Country; for they concluded, that every People which were Enemies to the *Spaniards* would be well received by the *Chilefians*.

The Account the *Dutch* were pleased to publish of this Expedition was of the following Tenour.

That *Brewer* and his Squadron set sail from the *Texel* on the 6th of *November* 1642, and arrived at *Fernambuco*, on the Coast of *Brazil*, in 9— Degrees of South Latitude, on the 22d of *December* following, where having consulted with Count *Maurice* of *Nassau*, General and Commander in chief for the *Dutch* in *Brazil*, he sailed from *Fernambuco* with five Ships well equip'd and provided with Necessaries, on the 15th of *January*, 1642-3, and on the 5th of *March* they came in Sight of the Streights of *La Maire*, as they are call'd, which is only a Passage between a small Island denominated *Slates Island*, and the most easterly Point of *Terra del Fogo*, in 54 Degrees odd Minutes South Latitude. They came to an Anchor in a Bay of *Slates Island*, to the Eastward of the Streights of *La Maire*, where having remain'd till the 25th of *March*, they sail'd round *Cape Horn*, suffering pretty much by stormy Weather, and losing the Company of one of their Ships call'd the *Orange Tree*, and arriv'd with the other four on the Coast of *Chili*, on the 30th of *April*, 1643; and on the 9th of *May* they came to an Anchor in a Bay of the *South-Sea*, in 41 Degtees 30 Minutes

Arrive on  
the Coast  
of *Chili*,  
*April*,  
1643.

Minutes South Latitude, to which they gave the Name of *Brewer's-Haven*, being a little to the Southward of the *Spanish* Town of *Carelmappa*. Chili.

An Officer being sent on Shore with a Company of Soldiers, they discover'd great Herds of Oxen, Sheep, and Horses, and some Houses, but the Inhabitants were fled; however, they supposed that Part of the Country to be in the possession of the *Spaniards*, by the large wooden Crosses they saw fix'd at the Entrance of the Houses; and going on Shore the next Day, they discover'd a Party of *Spanish* Horse, and some Cannon Shot were fired at their Boat.

A Company of fifty Soldiers being sent on Shore again, the 20th of *May*, they discover'd the Town of *Carelmappa*, and had a smart Engagement with a *Spanish* Party, consisting of ninety Men Horse and Foot, whom they defeated. Whereupon the *Spaniards* abandon'd the Town of *Carelmappa*, and the *Dutch* took Possession of it, where they remain'd till the 25th, and then setting fire to the Town, and killing the Horses they had taken in the Engagement, they retir'd to their Ships. Engage  
a *Spanish*  
Party.

They afterwards sail'd to the Town of *Castro*, on the Island of *Chiloe*, where they arriv'd on the 6th of *June*. There appeared a good Body of *Spanish* Horse and Foot on the Shore, but the *Dutch* no sooner landed some Soldiers than the Inhabitants set fire to the Town and abandon'd it, having before carried away every thing that was valuable. They land  
at *Castro*.

They relate that *Castro* was heretofore a fine *Spanish* Town, replenish'd with magnificent Buildings, pleasantly situated on a Hill, surrounded with fruitful Orchards and Gardens adorned with Fountains, and the Fields beyond well cultivated; and that at the time when



Chili.

the *Dutch* arriv'd there the Fruit then remain'd on many of the Trees, tho' it was in the Beginning of their Winter.

The *Dutch* having taken an hundred Sheep and some Hogs off the Island reimbark'd, and on the 17th of *June* returned to *Brewer's-Harbour*. From hence they propos'd to sail to the River *Baldivia*, but the North Wind blowing hard in their teeth, they altered their minds and came before *Carelmappa* again, where landing a Company of Soldiers on the 16th of *July*, they took three *Spanish* Prisoners, who inform'd them, that the Winters on that Coast were usually tempestuous, but that the most stormy Month was past; that there were Gold Mines at *Osrorno*, and more at *Baldivia*, but the Mines were not wrought of late; and that at *Castro* there were none to be seen, the *Indians* not having been compelled to work in the Mines since the general Revolt in 1559.

The  
Condition  
of the  
*Spaniards*  
before the  
*Indians*  
revolted.

They learned also from an old *Spanish* Woman they had taken, that before the said general Revolt, the *Spaniards* lived in great Splendour at *Osrorno*; that the meanest of them had three hundred *Indian* Vassals at least, who were compel'd to pay their respective Lords a certain weekly Tribute in Gold, and were used so cruelly by the *Spaniards*, that the *Chilefians* rose as one Man, drove them from *Osrorno* and other *Spanish* Towns, and they possessed little more in this part of *Chili* than *Carelmappa* and *St. Michael de Calimbuco*. Since which, however, the *Indians* of *Osrorno*, *Baldivia*, *Villarrica*, *Imperial*, *Tucapel*, *Aurauco* and *Puren*, had lived in a pretty good Intelligence with the *Spaniards* till very lately, when the *Indians* took up Arms again, and they were now actually in a State of War with the *Spaniards*; which

was

was confirmed by six *Indian* Caciques, who came on Board the 20th of *July*, and assured the *Dutch* they were extremely rejoic'd that they were come to assist them against their ancient Enemies the *Spaniards*. The *Dutch* answered, they had brought good Store of Arms to exchange with their Countrymen of *Oorno*, *Baldivia*, and other Places, for such Merchandise as *Chili* afforded, that they might be enabled to carry on the War against the *Spaniards*, and were ready to assist them to the utmost of their Power. The *Chilefians* reply'd, they lived very uneasily under the *Spanish* Government of *Carelmappa*, and were contriving how to get to their Friends at *Oorno* and *Baldivia*; but the *Spaniards* had possess'd the Passes, and the Country was so over-flow'd by the Winter Rains, that they found it impracticable to go by Land at present, and therefore desir'd the *Dutch* would carry them to *Valdivia* in their Ships; which the General agreeing to, they returned on Shore to give their Friends an Account of it, and make Preparations for their Voyage.

The next Day more *Chilefians* went on Board, and one of them brought the Head of a *Spaniard* with them, whom he had kill'd, and declar'd they were determin'd to shake off the *Spanish* Yoke. Whereupon the General made a Present to them of some Spears and Swords, as also Muskets, with Powder and Ball: And the *Chilese* sent some black Cattle on Board in return; but on the 7th of *August* the *Dutch* General *Brewer* died, who had projected the Enterprize, and was best acquainted with the State of that Country, and in what manner the *Indians* were to be treated, whose Death was evidently the Reason the *Dutch* had no better

General  
Brewer  
dies.

Chili.

Success in this Expedition. He had set his Heart upon this Undertaking, and had a Prospect of bringing the whole Country of *Chili* under the Dominion of his Masters the *Dutch*; and tho' Captain *Herckerman*, who succeeded him in the Command, might have no less Zeal to serve his Country, yet he certainly miscarried for want of a proper Address. He too soon discover'd to the Natives with what View the *Hollanders* visited their Coast, and created Jealousies in them which he found it impossible afterwards to remove, as will appear hereafter. The late General was so confident of the Success of the Enterprize, that he directed his Countrymen to take his Corpse with them and bury it at *Baldivia*, which he had determin'd to fortify, and appointed the *Chileians* to rendezvous there and meet the Fleet; not doubting of a general Revolt in their Favour. His great Ambition was to have a Tomb erected in that Place, which might perpetuate the Memory of his being the Author of so great a Good to his Country.

But to proceed in the Relation. The *Dutch* having taken four hundred and seventy *Chilese* on Board, who had furnish'd themselves with Corn, Cattle, and other Provisions for the Voyage, set sail for the River *Baldivia* on the 21st of *August*, where they arriv'd the 24th. The River is about a League over at the Mouth, and the *Dutch* having sail'd half a League up it, they observ'd three Channels, of which taking the middlemost they run a-ground, and it was two or three Days before they could get all their Ships a-float again; so that it was the 28th before they arrived at the Town of *Baldivia*, where they only found the Ruins of the ancient Gates, which were very high and strong-

strong-built, but the Place was now over-run with Bushes and Weeds, and more like a Wilderness than a City. Here they found three or four hundred *Chilefians*, Horse and Foot, armed with Spears eighteen Foot long; some of whom came on Board and welcomed them at their Arrival. The *Dutch* General harangu'd them by an Interpreter, and acquainted them, that the *Hollanders* were now in possession of *Brazil* upon the same Continent, not above two Months sail from them, and were in a Condition to supply them from time to time with Arms and Ammunition, and would assist them to drive their Enemies the *Spaniards* out of the Country, desiring they would enter into a League offensive and defensive with them. He also presented them with Letters from the Prince of *Orange* of the like Tenour, which were interpreted to the *Indians*. For we must remember here, that neither the People of the *East* or *West-Indies* have any Notion of a Republican Form of Government; and therefore the *Hollanders*, in all their Negotiations with those distant Nations, pretend to be authoriz'd to treat with them by the Prince of *Orange*, or some single Person whom they insinuate is their Monarch, or Sovereign of their Country.

The Caciques gave the General no other Answer to his Propositions at present, but that they would consult their Brethren of *Osnoro* and *Coneo*, and then return to *Valdivia* again. Whereupon the *Dutch* proceeded to land their Soldiers on the 2d of *September*, and the General took a View of the Ground in order to erect a Fort.

The

Chili.

A Treaty  
between  
the Dutch  
and the  
*Chilefians*.

The same Evening arriv'd above a thousand *Chilefians* from *Oforno* and *Conco* to treat with the *Hollanders*, and the next Day the General, by his Interpreter, made them another Speech, acquainting them, that the chief Motive of their Voyage was to assist the *Chilefians*, the Fame of whose great Actions had reached as far as *Holland*; that the *Dutch* had been at War with these same *Spaniards* for upwards of fourscore Years as well as the *Chilese*, for the Preservation of their Liberties, and had met with the like Success, extending their Conquests as far as *Brazil*: And if the *Chilese* would now enter into a Confederacy with the *Hollanders*, they were ready to supply them with Cannon, Small-Arms, and Ammunition, which they would exchange for the Product of their Country, and the *Chilefians* would be enabled thereby not only to defend themselves, but to expel the *Spaniards* from their Coasts. After which, a Letter was deliver'd to every one of the Caciques, as sent them from the Prince of *Orange*. To which the *Chilefians* answer'd, that they thought themselves extremely fortunate to meet with a Supply of Arms from so distant a Country as *Holland*, at a Time when the War with the *Spaniards* was revived.

The *Dutch* thereupon enquir'd if the *Chilese* could supply their Fleet with Flesh and other Provisions, if they continued on their Coast to protect them against the *Spaniards*? To which they unanimously answer'd, they would not fail to bring them all the Provisions they wanted, for they had Plenty of Corn and Cattle, provided the Fleet did not stir from the Coast: And they readily entered into a parole Alliance offensive and defensive with the *Hollanders* against

against the *Spaniards*, but would not be persuaded to sign written Articles which were offered and interpreted to them, declaring that this was not customary amongst them, Promises were ever look'd upon as sacred and of equal Obligation with written Contracts. But I am apt to think they had an Apprehension that there was some Witchcraft or Charm in Writing, as several other *Americans* had when the *Europeans* came first amongst them; or perhaps they were so politick as not to enter into a written Engagement, lest the Articles might fall into the Hands of the *Spaniards*, and be made a Pretence for oppressing and tyrannizing over such of the *Indians* as lived under their Government, or were made Prisoners by them.

The *Hollanders* then proceeded to build a Fort at *Baldivia* for their Security, which the Natives did not seem to oppose; but when the *Dutch* proposed the trafficking with the *Chilese*, and exchanging Arms for their Gold, the Caciques immediately appeared jealous of their new Allies, and declar'd they had no Gold Mines, nor was there any such thing as Gold in use amongst them. They remember'd, indeed, that heretofore they had been forced to pay heavy Taxes to the *Spaniards* in Gold on Pain of losing their Ears and Noses, as many of them did who could not procure as much as was expected, and this had given them such an Abhorrence of that Metal that they could not bear to hear it nam'd amongst them. They were very far from valuing or coveting it, as they found all Strangers did.

The General finding the Natives were not ignorant of his Views, reply'd, they were not come to exact any thing of them, as the *Spaniards* had done, but were ready to pay them with

The *Dutch* erect a Fort, and discover their Thirst of Gold; which ruins the Enterprize.

Chili. with Arms, or whatever Merchandise they lik'd best, for their Gold. Every one was at liberty to exchange what he pleas'd.

Whereupon the Caciques stared at one another without returning one Word of Answer; and the *Dutch* relate, they did not think fit to urge them any further on that Head, lest they should imagine they intended to serve them as the *Spaniards* had done; tho' they had certain Information there were very rich Mines in that Part of the Country.

The *Dutch* General therefore, sensible he was now to expect but little Assistance from the Natives; and that it would be impossible to maintain his Ground long against the *Spaniards*, and the rest of the *Chilefians* in Alliance with them, dispatch'd Captain *Crispinson* with two of his Ships to *Fernambuco* in *Brazil*, to give their Friends an Account of the State of their Affairs, and to desire a further Re-inforcement, and in the mean time continued to fortify the Post he had taken at *Baldivia*; where he hoped to defend himself till those Supplies arriv'd.

The Account the *Dutch* gave of the State of *Chili* at that time. In the Letter the *Dutch* General sent by Captain *Crispinson* to *Brazil*, he informs that Government, that the *Spaniards* had not more than fifteen hundred Soldiers, either on the Continent or Islands of *Chili*, viz. three hundred in *Valparaiso* and *St. Jago* (This must be a little Port call'd *St. Jago* on the Coast, and not the capital City of *St. Jago*, that lay far within Land near the Foot of the Mountains of the Andes, for that was demolish'd by the Indians, and lay in Ruins at that time, as I apprehend) three hundred in the City of *Conception* (at this time the Capital of the *Spanish* Settlements in *Chili*) one hundred in *Serenä*, or *Coquimbo*, one hundred on the Banks of the River

River *Biobio*, eighty in *Tucapel*, five hundred in the Forts in the Valley of *Arauco*, one hundred and twenty in the Island of *Chiloe*, *Carmelappa* and *Calimbuco*. What the Number of the *Spanish* Inhabitants were he does not say, only that they were more numerous than the Garrison Soldiers : And it is evident that many of the *Chilese* professed the Christian Religion, and were intermarried with the *Spaniards* at this time, and therefore were in a manner one People with them ; and that some Tribes or Clans that were not under the *Spanish* Government were in Alliance with them, tho' most of them were in a State of War with the *Spaniards*.

And in these Circumstances the *Dutch* General informs the Government of *Brazil*, that in case ten Ships and three Yachts, with eight hundred Soldiers, Seamen, Cannon, and Ammunition in proportion, were sent to his Assistance, he did not doubt making himself Master of all the *Spanish* Settlements above-mention'd, and should have no Reason to be afraid of all the naval Force the *Spaniards* had, either in *Peru* or *Chili* : And if he could make himself Master of *Chili* by this Means, it might encourage the Natives of *Peru* to throw off the *Spanish* Yoke, those *Indians* having entertain'd an inconceivable Aversion to the *Spaniards*. He informs his Employers also, that they had received Advice that the Natives of the neighbouring Province of *La Plata* had rose upon the Jesuites (the then Sovereigns, or Usurpers of that Country) and had murdered many of those Fathers ; which was look'd upon as an Indication of a general Revolt against the *Spaniards* : And then repeating his Importunities for a speedy and effectual



*Chili.* effectual Supply, concludes, that it was not improbable, when the War should be once kindled on that Side, it might spread over the whole *Spanish West-Indies*; and the *Hollanders* might supplant them in the *West*, as they had done the *Portuguese* in the *East-Indies* and *Brazil*. Such was the Ambition of this *Dutch* Officer to make his Masters Sovereigns of all *Spanish America*, as they actually were of the most desirable and profitable Countries in the *East*, from whence a little before they expel'd the *English* as well as the *Portuguese*.

This Express had not been dispatch'd a Week, before the *Dutch* General became sensible of his Mistake; and that whatever Misunderstandings there might be between the *Chilefians* and the *Spaniards*, the Natives were now much more afraid of the *Hollanders* than of their ancient Enemies; and would probably join with the *Spaniards* to expell him their Country.

For in the next Conference he had with the Caciques, they gave him to understand that he must expect no Provisions from them; and endeavour'd to terrify the *Dutch*, by reporting that the *Spaniards* were assembling their Forces by Sea and Land to drive them from *Valdivia*. And it is highly probable that the *Dutch* in this Case expected no Assistance from their new Allies, but were rather apprehensive they would betray them to the *Spaniards*; for he soon after demolish'd his new-erected Fort, and having re-imbark'd his People, set sail for *Brazil*, on the 28th of *October*, 1643; and having surrounded Cape Horn, repass'd the Straights of *La Maire* on the 21st of *November*, and on the 28th of *December* arrived at *Fernambuco* in *Brazil*; so that they were but just

The *Dutch*  
abandon  
*Chili*.

two Months in their Voyage from *Baldivia* to the Northern Part of *Brazil*.

Chili.

I shall conclude this Expedition of the *Hollanders* to *Chili* with some Remarks they made on *Brewer's-Haven* and the Port of *Baldivia*, viz. That *Brewer's-Haven*, by some call'd the *English Harbour*, was a very convenient Harbour, there being good Anchorage, and an easy Passage into the open Sea; nor did there want Wood or fresh Water on the Land; and there was Plenty of Fish, both in the Harbour and in the Brooks on Shore: That the Country and the neighbouring Islands abounded in Horses, Sheep, Hogs, Goats, and Poultry: That the Soil was fruitful in Wheat, Peas, Beans, Turnips, Potatoes, Flax, and Fruit; but their Fruits were frequently spoil'd by stormy Weather before they were ripe.

*Brewer's Harbour.*

That the Mouth of the River *Baldivia* formed a spacious Bay, at the Entrance whereof there was a small Island that would have commanded the Passage if it had been fortified: That the Country thereabouts abounded in Horses, Oxen, Sheep, Hogs, Goats, and tame Fowl, producing great Quantities of Peas and Beans, and some Wheat, very good Apples, and other *European* Fruits: That the Weapons of the Natives were chiefly Pikes of fifteen Foot long, and they had some Fire-Arms and Armour they had taken from the *Spaniards*: That they were generally good Horsemen, and manag'd their Launces on Horseback with great Dexterity.

*Baldivia Harbour.*

The next remarkable Voyage to *Chili* was made by Captain (afterwards Sir *John*) *Narborough*, by the Command of King *Charles II.* in the Year 1669, about thirty Years after the said Attempt of the *Hollanders*. It seems to

*Narborough's Voyage to Chili, An. 1669.*

Chili.

have been undertaken upon some Intelligence given to the Court of *England* by an old *Spaniard*, usually call'd *Don Carlos*, who had formerly resided in *South-America*, importing, That his Countrymen had in a manner abandon'd *Chili*, and that it would not be difficult for the *English* to cultivate a good Understanding with the Natives, and establish a very advantageous Traffick there, the principal Returns whereof would be in Gold: And he pointed out *Valdivia*, as the Port where they were most likely to succeed, it not being imagin'd that the *Spaniards* had re-possess'd themselves of that Place, having deserted it for three or fourscore Years: For Captain *Narborough* was expressly commanded not to molest the *Spaniards* in any of their Settlements, or to commit any Acts of Hostility against *Spain*.

Captain *Narborough* having perform'd this Voyage, printed a Narrative of it, of the following Tenour, viz.

That having received a Commission to command the Man of War call'd the *Sweep-stakes*, of 300 Tun and 36 Guns; man'd with fourscore Men, and provided with fourteen Months Provision: And instead of Beer having four half Tuns of Brandy allow'd him, with Guns, Nets, and other Implements for Fishing and Fowling, he began this Voyage from *England* in Company with the *Batchelor-Pink*, of 70 Tun, four Guns, and man'd with nineteen Men and a Boy, on the 26th of *September*, 1669, carrying with him, at his Majesty's Cost, the following Goods to exchange with the Natives, viz. Knives, Scissars, Looking-glasses, Beads, Hatchets, Hoes, Nails, Needles, Pins, Pipes, Bells, Linnen and Woollen Cloths

Sept. 26,  
1669.

Cloths and Stuffs, Tobacco, &c. That taking his Departure from the *Lizard* at Noon the same Day, he made the Island of *Madera* on the 17th of *October*, and on the 23d of the same Month he pass'd the Tropick of Cancer, and then thought it proper to have all his Men let Blood, having observ'd in former Voyages to *St. Helena* and the Coast of *Guinea*, that this tended to the Preservation of his Men from Calentures, and other Distempers in those hot Climates; for he never had one Day's Illness in those or any other hot Voyages, which he imputed to his opening a Vein whenever he approach'd the Equinoctial: And the Writer of these Sheets well remembers, that Captain *Rains*, with whom he sail'd to the *East-Indies*, observ'd the same Rule when he pass'd the Tropick of Cancer, and had scarce a Man sick the whole Voyage, tho' he had a hundred and fifty Men on Board, and pass'd the Equator twice.

But to proceed. Captain *Narborough* re-Made  
lates, that he made the Cape Verde Islands (in <sup>Cape Verde</sup>  
15 Degrees North Latitude) on the 28th of <sup>Islands</sup>  
*October*, where having taken in Water, Cows, <sup>October 28</sup>  
Hogs, and other fresh Provisions, he sail'd on the 8th of *November* to the Southward, having first given Orders to the *Batchelor Pink*, if she was separated from him, to sail to Port *Desire* near Cape *Blanco*, on the Coast of *Patagonia*, in 47 Degrees odd Minutes South Latitude; and that after he had pass'd the Mouth of the River *Plata*, he should keep along the *American* Coast till he made Cape *Blanco* aforesaid, and look for him at Port *Desire*; and if he (Captain *Narborough*) should be there before him, he would leave an Inscription engraven on a Board, and fastened  
to

Chili.

to a Tree or Post, mentioning the time of his Departure, and the Port he intended to make next; and that he would do the like at *St. Julian*, in 49 Degrees odd Minutes South Latitude, and order'd the *Pink* to do the same, and to stay two whole Months for the *Sweep-stakes*, as she would for the *Pink*, if she arrived first at those Ports; and inform'd the *Pink*, that she should touch on the Coasts of *South-America*, beyond the River *Plata*, to endeavour to establish a Commerce with the Natives.

The *Sweep-stakes* and the *Pink* kept Company together till they came into *Soundings*, on the Coast of *Patagonia*, in 45 Degrees South Latitude; but here the *Sweep-stakes* lost sight of the *Pink* in foggy Weather, and on the 21<sup>st</sup> of *February* the Captain made Cape *Blanco*, in 47 Degrees odd Minutes South Latitude, having past Port *Desire* in a Fog. Whereupon he stood to the Northward again, and came to an Anchor at Port *Desire*, where he went on Shore and waited six Weeks for the *Pink*, but heard nothing of her afterwards.

Cape

*Blanco* andPort *Desire*,*Febru.* 21.

Some

Descripti-

on of this

Port of

*Patagonia*.

While the *Sweep-stakes* remain'd in this Port, the Captain made several Journeys into the Country, where he informs us he met with great Store of wild Pease with green Leaves and a blueish Blossom, some sweet Herbs like Tares, with white and yellow Flowers, and another Herb like Sage, which made very good Sallads, and preserved his Men from the Scurvy. On the Rocks they found abundance of Muscles and Limpets, and on a neighbouring Island great Numbers of Seal and Water-Fowl, which were excellent Food, and his Ship's Crew lived on them and the Fish

Fish he caught there a considerable time ; and here he found two tolerable Springs of fresh Water also, with which he replenish'd his Casks. Chili.

That on *Friday*, the 14th of *March*, he went with his Boats and forty Men to an Island near Port *Desire*, where they knock'd down four hundred Seals, and loaded their Boats with them, from whence he gave it the Name of *Seal Island*. He observ'd the full grown Male Seals were of the Size of a large Calf, or young Heifer, having shaggy Necks, Heads and Faces like Lions. The Females also resembled Lionesses before, only their Hair was smooth like Horses ; whereas the Male was smooth only in his Hinder-parts. Both of them were very deformed, the Body growing tapering downwards till it came to a Point, where grew two Fins like Feet, and two Feet more grew out of its Breast, so that they could climb up the highest Rocks and Hills, tho' they delighted chiefly to sleep near the Shore. The Length of this amphibious Animal was from eight to eighteen Feet, and they were generally as big about as a Barrel at the Shoulders. Seal, or Penguin Island.

On *Saturday*, the 5th of *March*, he went eight or ten Miles up into the Country, and met with some Herds of *Guanuco's*, or Camel Sheep which are so common in *Peru*. He also saw several Ostriches, a Fox and a wild Dog, and five or six Hares; of which he killed one with his Greyhound: It resembled an *English* Hare, only was much larger, and had a Stump of an Inch long instead of a Tail ; and he observ'd they lived under Ground like Rabbits. They saw no Wood, unless some Bushes like white Thorn. The Land was a dry gravelly Soil. Other Animals.

*Chili.* gravelly Soil, moderately hilly, and produc'd  
 Grafs in the Valleys, but scarce any thing else,  
 no Fruits of any kind.

*Finds an* He found, in a small Island near *Port De-*  
*Inscription* *fire*, an Inscription upon a Post, signifying  
*left by* that *James la Maire* was at that Port in the  
*La Maire.* Month of *January*, 1616 (being written in  
*Dutch*) and thereupon he call'd it *La Maire's*  
*Island.*

The Captain being about to depart from  
*Port Desire*, formally took possession of that  
 Country for his *British* Majesty, under an  
 Apprehension that it might yield Gold as *Chili*,  
 which lies on the opposite Shore, does; but  
 tho' he order'd his People to search diligently  
 in the Brooks and Gullies for Gold Sand, and  
 dug in several Places, he could discover no-  
 thing that look'd like a Mineral.

*Finds the* On *March* the 26th, 1670, he observ'd an  
*Longitude* Eclipse of the Moon, which shew'd there was  
*by an* four Hours forty Minutes Difference of Time  
*Eclipse.* between the Meridian of *London* and the Me-  
 ridian of *Cape Blanco*, which lies in 47 Degrees  
 20 Minutes South Latitude, on the South-East  
 Coast of *America*. From *Port Desire* he

*Port St.* sail'd to *Port St. Julian*, in 49 Degrees 10  
*Julian.* Minutes South Latitude, where not finding  
*He winters* the *Pink* as he expected, his Men were much  
*here.* discouraged, considering, they could expect  
 no Relief if they should happen to run a-ground  
 on that unknown Coast. But the Hopes he  
 gave them of finding immense Riches in *Chili*,  
 and setting before them the Example of Captain  
*Drake*, who sail'd round the World in one  
 Ship, when Navigation was not brought to  
 so great Perfection, they recover'd their Cou-  
 rage. That on the 21st of *April*, he caught  
 in this Port, with his Sein-Net, in the Space  
 of

of four Hours, five hundred Fishes of the Size and Form of Mulletts, and some of them as big as a Man's Leg, which were a great Relief to his Ship's Company. And now the Winter came on apace; the Snows fell, the Waters froze, and the Wind blew very hard and cold from the South-West; from whence he concluded he should not be able to pass the Streights of *Magellan* at this time of the Year, and therefore determin'd to winter thereabouts, ordering every one of his Men a Quart of Brandy a Week, and for Meat they had salted Seals and Penguins given them, which prov'd very good Food.

Chili.

Going on Shore at Port *St. Julian*, on the 22d of *April*, he found a salt Pond, or Lake, two Miles in Length, crufted over with good white Salt two Inches thick, of which he laid two Tuns in.

A salt Lake.

Having remain'd here till the 6th of *June*, he went on Shore with sixteen Men, and travelled ten Miles into the Country, but could go no further for the Mountains, which were cover'd with Snow. They yet saw no People, but discover'd there had been some in the Snow; and that they had made Fires, and eaten Guanacoes and Ostriches by the Remains they found of their Feast.

That going on Shore again the 22d of *June*, The Na- he sent Mr. *Wood*, his Lieutenant, to the tives of Westward, with three armed Men, who saw *Patagonia*. seven *Indians* on a Hill, and three of them advanc'd towards him, with Bows and Arrows in their Hands, loose Skins about their Shoulders, Furrs on their Heads, and Pieces of Skin wrap'd about their Feet, and all the rest naked, only some Part of their Faces and Bodies were painted with red and white, their natural



Chili. Colour being olive: They were of a middle  
 Stature, not so tall as the Lieutenant, well  
 limb'd, their Hair black (which they did not  
 wear very long) and spoke in the Throat.  
 They came pretty near, but would not suffer  
 themselves to be touch'd. The Lieutenant  
 threw them a Knife and some other Trifles,  
 which they took up; but when he offered them  
 a Bottle of Brandy they would not drink.

Their  
 Stature,  
 &c.

That some others of his Crew saw two more  
 of the Natives behind a Bush, and would have  
 approach'd them, but they run away, leaving  
 a Bundle and two little Dogs coupled together,  
 which were brought to the Captain; and he  
 found in the Bundle several Bags made of Skins,  
 with red and white Earth in them, used in  
 painting their Bodies and Faces. There were  
 also Flint-Stones, Arrow-heads, Bracelets of  
 Shells, braided Thongs, Armadillo-Shells,  
 and some other Trifles; that the Skins were  
 Guanaco's and Seals, and sewed together with  
 a green Gut in a slit Stick, and near the Bun-  
 dle were found two Staves of tough Cane, in  
 short Joints, about four Foot long. The  
 Captain saw afterwards a Place where the Na-  
 tives had made a Fire, and left the Bones of  
 some Guanaco's and Ostriches scatter'd about.  
 He also saw the Skulls of three Men without  
 any Flesh upon them; from whence the Cap-  
 tain conjectures that the Natives were Man-  
 Eaters; and such Evidence as this is frequently  
 produced to prove the *Americans* to be Cani-  
 bals. The Captain was fully convinc'd by  
 ocular Demonstration that the *Patagonians* were  
 not Giants, as the first Adventurers reported;  
 but still he seems to be in doubt whether they  
 were not Canibals, tho' the Evidence of both  
 is the same; and the *Indians* might as well  
 infer

The Proof  
 of their  
 being  
 Canibals.

infer that the *Europeans* were Canibals, because our Surgeons and Apothecaries have frequently Skulls, and sometimes Skeletons in their Houses. But our People, it seems, began to be asham'd of the fabulous Relations of the *American* Giants and Monsters at that Time, tho' they were yet extremely prejudiced in Favour of Canibals; and tho' Captain *Narborough* is admitted to be a Gentleman of good Judgment, yet Allowances must be made for the Age and Country every Person lives in. At some Times, and at some particular Places, Magick, Witchcraft, and Apparitions are in great vogue, and not a Week passes but our Belief is requir'd to some notable Story of this kind, on Pain of being reputed Infidels: While in other Countries, and at other Times, People imagine they may be very good Christians without swallowing every incredible Tale that weak or designing People have the Confidence to affirm the Truth of, especially when they bring no better Proof of what they relate than the Captain produces to maintain that heavy Charge against this Nation of their being Canibals, namely, that three Skulls happen'd to be found in the possession of some of the People of the Country.

But to proceed. The farthest Journey the Captain made into the Country while he lay at Port *St. Julian*, he says, was twenty-five Miles to the North-West, in which he met with Teal and other Fowl, a kind of Herons all over red, great Numbers of Guanaco's and Ostriches, Hares and Partridges bigger than ours, some Snipes and small Birds, Penwrens, Kites, Hawks, Owls, Foxes, Wild-Dogs, Brant, Geese and Armadillo's, but no Snake or venomous Creature, or any wild Beasts, and was of opinion that the Country was very proper

Chili. both for *European* Corn and Cattle, seeming  
 to be a good fruitful Soil.

In the mean time the Captain relates, that  
 twelve of his Men, who did not use much  
 Exercise, fell ill of the Scurvy, and their  
 Legs and Thighs turned perfectly black.  
 Whereupon he thought proper to leave Port  
*St. Julian* and sail to Port *Desire*, where he  
 took great Numbers of Seals and Penguins,  
 which he distributed to the Sick, with such  
 Sallads as this Part of the Country affords, and  
 they all recover'd in a very short time.

Returns to  
 Port *De-  
 sire*.

While the Captain lay on Shore at Port  
*Desire*, he says, the Natives came in the Night-  
 time to the Place where his Men used to fill  
 their fresh Water, and stole from thence an  
 Iron Pot, and three Suits of Cloaths, with some  
 Linnen; and he saw, in an adjacent Valley, a  
 Model they had made of his Ship with Earth  
 and Sticks, which he imagin'd they did in  
 order to preserve the Memory of that floating  
 Castle, having never seen one before, possibly,  
 on that Coast.

Here the Captain takes an Opportunity to  
 inform us, that the Isle of *Penguins*, which  
 lies at the Entrance of Port *Desire*, affords  
 such Numbers of Penguins and Seals, that at  
 the time he was there, as many of them might  
 have been taken as would have filled three  
 hundred Tuns of Cask, when dress'd and  
 salted, and that the Flesh might be kept sweet  
 and good for four Months, if well cur'd.

Penguins  
 describ'd.

The Penguin, he observes, is of the Bigness  
 of a Brant Goose, weighing usually about eight  
 Pound, and lives upon Fish. Instead of Wings  
 it has flat Stumps, like Fins, and its Feathers  
 are a kind of Down of a blackish Colour, only  
 grey on the Head and white on the Neck and  
 Belly,

Belly. The Legs are short, like those of a Goose; and the Bill hooked. They are driven in Flocks to the Boat-side, and knock'd on the Head by the Seamen; so that Shipping can never be in want of fresh Provisions at this Port; and he was of opinion there might be found a sufficient Quantity of Salt also here in the Summer to salt up their Seals and Penguins, but if not, they would never fail of finding Salt at Port *St. Julian*.

Chili.



The Winter being now pass'd, the Captain set sail from Port *Desire* on the 13th of *October* 1670, and on the 19th pass'd by the Cape called *Beachy-Head*, and the Hill of *St. Ives*, in 50 Degrees 10 Minutes South Latitude, where the Land forms a Bay, into which the River of *St. Cruce* discharges itself. And on the 22d of *October* they arriv'd at Cape *Virgin Mary*, at the North Entrance of the Streights of *Magellan*, situated in 52 Degrees 26 Minutes South Latitude, which are in some Parts three or four Leagues, but in others not half a League broad.

Sails from  
Port *Desire*  
*October* 13,  
1670.

*Magel-*  
*lanick*  
Streights.

All about the Entrance of the Streights, till he came to the first narrow Passage, he observ'd there was very good Anchorage and not much Tide; but in the Narrow the Tide run stronger than in the *Hope* at the *Thames* Mouth, the Flood setting into the Streights, and the Ebb out, and kept a constant Course, as on other Coasts, viz. six Hours Flood and — Hours Ebb, and rises and falls near four Fathoms perpendicular.

Tides  
here.

The Captain having pass'd the second Narrow in the Streights went on Shore on the Island *Elizabeth*, and nineteen of the Natives coming down the Hill to him, he exchange'd Knives, Beads, and other Implements with them for their

Chili.

their Bows, Arrows, and Coats, which were made of the Skins of Guanaco's, Seals, and Otters: That they were for laying Hands on every thing they saw in a very brutish Manner, and the more he gave them the more they craved: That several of his Men danced and sported with them, and shewing them some Gold, he intimated by Signs, that if they could bring him any he would purchase it of them; but either they did not understand him, or knew of none: And he no sooner left them and went on Board, but they set fire to the Grass.

Natives  
describ'd  
again.

He relates, that these People are of a middle Stature, well-limb'd, with round Faces, low Foreheads, little Noses, and small black Eyes; their Teeth are smooth, even and white, their Hair flaggy and very black, of an indifferent Length, Men and Women alike, they are all full-breasted, of an olive Colour, and painted all over their Bodies with red Earth and Grease, their Faces daubed in Spots with white Clay, and black Streaks made with Smut, their Arms and Feet the like; their Heads are generally small, their Fingers short, and their Bodies very active; their Cloathing is of the Skins of Seals, Guanaco's, and Otters sewed together; their Garments are in Form of a Carpet five Foot square, which they wrap about them as the *Scotchman* does his Pladding: On their Heads they wear Caps of the Skins of Fowls with the Feathers, and on their Feet Pieces of Skins to keep them from the Ground. They are very hardy, for tho' it was very cold then, they don't wear these Skins when they go about any Business that requires Stirring. They have no Hair on any Part of their Bodies or Faces, nor any thing to cover their Nudities, except that the Women have a Piece of Skin hanging

hanging before them. The Men and Women are clothed alike, only the Women go without Caps, and wear Bracelets of Shells about their Necks, which the Men have not. The Men are something taller than the Women, and fuller faced; the Men have a harsher Voice and rattle in the Throat, the Women somewhat shriller; they often repeat the Word *Ur/ah*, and if they did not like any thing would cry, *Ur, ur*. They feed both upon Fish and Flesh, live under no manner of Government, or worship any thing. At our Landing, they came to us with a great Noise, every one his Bow ready, and two Arrows in his Hand: Their Bows are about an Ell long, and every Arrow eighteen Inches, neatly made of Wood, headed with Flint-Stones curiously wrought, broad Arrow Fashion, and well fastened to the Arrow, the other End being feather'd with two Feathers, and ty'd on with the Gut of some Beast while yet green and moist, the Bow-string is of twisted Guts. They have large mungrel Dogs of several Colours, not unlike *Spanish* Dogs. I saw no other domestick Creatures, nor their Boats, which then lay on the other Side of the Island towards the Main, where they waited for fair Weather to catch Penguins, of which there is a vast Quantity, as also of white-breasted Divers.

He saw on both Sides of the Streights Woods <sup>Trees</sup> which seemed to be regularly planted, and Timber in them two Foot diameter. The Bark of <sup>in the</sup> some of these Trees is as hot as Pepper, and <sup>Streights.</sup> when dry'd had the Smell of fine Spices, and <sup>A spicy</sup> they used it in seasoning their Meat and Soup, <sup>Bark.</sup> to which it gave a fine Flavour, and he believed this Spice to be very wholesome; but he saw no Fruit-Trees on the Shores, or Oak, Ash,

Chili.

Ash, Hazel, or any Trees like ours in *England*, the Woods consisting chiefly of the Pepper-rind Tree abovemention'd, and another like our Beech. The largest Tree he saw in the Streights was about two Foot and a half diameter, and thirty or forty Foot high. The Woods were usually on the Sides of Hills, the Land being very high on both Shores, and the Tops of the Mountains scarce ever free from Snow.

Cape  
*Froward*  
the most  
Southern  
Promon-  
tory.  
Length  
of the  
Streights.

He observes, that Cape *Froward*, the most Southerly Land on the Continent of *South-America* (for Cape *Horn* is upon the Island *Del Fogo*) lies in 53 Degrees 52 Minutes South Latitude, 68 Degrees 40 Minutes West of the *Lizard*: And he computed the whole Length of the *Streights* from Cape *Virgin Mary* to Cape *Disseada* to be an hundred and sixteen Leagues: And on the North-West Part of the *Streights*, in the *South-Sea*, lie four little Islands near Cape *Victory*, which he denominated *The Islands of Direction*, being a Guide to those who enter the *Streights* from the *South-Sea*. From the *Streights* Mouth he sailed North to *The Island of Succour*, in 45 Degrees South Latitude, where he arriv'd the 26th of *November* and took in fresh Water. He saw none of the Natives of this Island, only one of their Huts, which resembled those of the Natives on the Continent of *Patagonia*, and were more like Arbours than Houses, being composed of Boughs of Trees.

Island of  
*Succour*,  
Nov. 20,  
1670.

Narbo-  
rough Isle.

Between the *Isle of Succour* and the Continent, there lies another Island, where the Captain went on Shore, and having taken possession of it for his Majesty, gave it the Name of *Narborough Island*. Here, he says, he found his Men in pretty good Health, and seventy-two in Number; so that he seems to have lost eight

eight in his Passage hither. He sailed from *Narborough Island* to the River of *Baldivia*, where he set on Shore the *Spaniard*, *Don Carlos*, on the South Side of the Harbour, on the 15th Day of *December*. He carried with him a Sword and a Case of Pistols, a Bag with Beads, Knives, Scissars, Looking-Glasses, Combs, Rings, Pipes, Bells, and Tobacco, to make himself acceptable to the Natives; for the Captain does not seem to have been then apprised that the *Spaniards* had re-possess'd themselves of the Town of *Baldivia* and rebuilt it.

*Chili.*  
*Baldivia,*  
*Decem. 15.*  
*Don Carlos*  
set on  
Shore  
here.

*Don Carlos* took the Path by the Sea-side, leading to the Mouth of the Harbour, and after a quarter of a Mile's Walk, turned out of sight behind a Rock. He had directed the Lieutenant who set him on Shore to look out for his Fire in the Night-time, but they never saw or heard of him more.

The next Morning the Captain sent one of his Lieutenants with his Boat to make some Discoveries in the Harbour, and coming near a *Spanish* Fort call'd *St. Jago*, the Garrison waded a white Flag, and invited them a-shore; whereupon the Lieutenant landed in hopes of meeting with *Don Carlos*, whom they had seen going along the Path leading directly to this Fort between the Wood and the Sea-side; for the Fort stands on an Eminence by a Wood on the South Side of the Harbour. The Fort had seven Guns mounted, which were defended by a Breast-work and some slight Pallisadoes.

The Lieutenant was received on Shore by about twenty *Spaniards* and *Indians*, who conducted him to the Governor, whom he found sitting with two other *Spanish* Gentlemen under a great Tree. The Governor welcomed him on Shore with a Silver Bowl of Wine, and

The  
*Spanish*  
Fort of  
*St. Jago,*  
and the  
Garrison.



Chili.

asked which Way they came into these Seas; and the Lieutenant in his Turn enquired whether the *Spaniards* were at War with the *Indians*, to which the Governor answer'd, *Yes*; intimating, that they were Enemies all round the Harbour, and tho' barbarous, were a brave People and good Horsemen: That the *Spaniards* had scarce any Ground belonging to their Fort, nor durst walk out a Musket's Shot from their Pallisadoes without being well arm'd: That the *Indians* had such Plenty of Gold, the Breast-plates of their Armour were of that Metal.

After this Conference, the *Spanish* Governor made the Lieutenant a handsome Entertainment in a Tent; and he observ'd, that not only the Dishes, but all the Kitchen Utensils were of Silver, as were the Hilts of the common Soldiers Swords, and those of their Officers of Gold, and the Plate at the butt End of their Muskets of the same Metal.

The Account the *Spaniards* give of the State of *Chili*.

When the Lieutenant return'd on Board the *Sweep-stakes*, four *Spanish* Gentlemen came with him, who offer'd to conduct the Ship into the Harbour; but the Captain being well acquainted with the Treachery of the *Spaniards* in those Parts, civilly refused the Favour. These *Spanish* Gentlemen related, that there was a great deal of Gold about *Baldivia*, but that the Natives being a brave People, of a *gigantick Stature*, and able to bring ten thousand Horse into the Field, would not let them come at their Gold: That their Arms were long Launces or Pikes, Bows, Arrows and Swords, and they had some Muskets which they had taken from the *Spaniards*: That the *Indians* were very numerous about *Baldivia*, *Osforno*, and at *Castro* in the Island of *Chiloe*, and would barter their Gold with the *Spaniards* tho' they were not at Peace with them. The

The *Spaniards* demanding of the Captain whicher he was bound, he answered for *China*, and only touched at *Baldivia* to refresh his Men and take in Provisions. They reply'd he should have what the Country afforded, and pointed to a Rivulet where he might take in fresh Water, which they said had golden Sands; adding, that the *Spaniards* bought a great deal of Gold of the Natives, which they gathered with Dishes in the Brooks and Gullies between the Hills and Rocks about thirty Leagues from the Sea; and that between the Sea and those Hills was a fine fruitful Country (abounding in Horses, Oxen, Sheep and Goats) which the *Indians* had taken from the *Spaniards*: And that there was more Gold in *Chili* than in any Country yet discover'd in *America*. But the Captain observ'd the *Spaniards* had little Knowledge of the Country to the Southward of *Baldivia*, except of *Oorno*, and the Island of *Castro* over-against it, which was a fine Island fruitful in Wheat; but the *Indians* were so numerous there, that they would not suffer the *Spaniards* to search for Gold if there were any in the Island.

That a Ship loaden with Arms, Ammunition, Wine, Linnen and Woollen Cloth, Tobacco and Sugar, came annually from *Valdivia* and took Gold, Bezoar-Stone, and red Wool of the Guanaco Sheep in Return: That there was a Road from *Baldivia* to the *Spanish* Settlements in the North of *Chili*, but they never used it, unless furnish'd with a very strong Convoy, for fear of the Natives: That the *Spaniards* represented this Country as an earthly Paradise, where People lived in the greatest Delight and Plenty in the World; and indeed the *Spanish* Gentlemen who came

Chili.

on Board him, and those he saw on Shore were corpulent jolly Fellows, and had good rosy Complexions.

Narbo-  
rough  
trafficks  
with the  
Spaniards,

Upon this Intelligence, the Captain sent his Boat and eighteen Men on Shore to view the Harbour and Fortifications, and to endeavour to settle a Commerce with the Natives, being of opinion that this Country was lost for want of a true Knowledge of it. The *Spaniards* bought several things of the Boat's Crew, for which they gave them *Pieces of Eight*, but would not part with their Gold or their Bread. However, they had a considerable Profit by what they sold them, as for a Fowling-piece, worth twenty Shillings in *England*, they had sixteen *Pieces of Eight* (or Crowns) for a Case of Knives, bought for three Shillings, they had five *Pieces of Eight*; for a Pair of Gloves of Ten-pence, a *Piece of Eight*; and the *Spaniards* appear'd very desirous of purchasing Cloaks of Bays, tho' their Under-Garments were very rich, viz. Velvet, Silk and Silver Brocades, and they wore fine Linnen, and good *Flanders* Lace: That four of the *Spaniards* Wives came into the Boat, who were born in *Peru* of *Spanish* Parents; these were dress'd after the *Spanish* Mode, had large Gold Chains about their Necks, and Pendants of Saphire in their Ears: And the Governor presented his Lieutenant with some Ostrich Feathers, a Silver-headed Cane, and some other Trifles; but the Boat's Crew could find no Opportunity of conversing with the Natives by themselves; for tho' some *Indians* made a Fire by a Wood side, and hung out a white Flag, as a Signal they would traffick with them, the *Spaniards* would not permit the *English* to go to them. Whereupon the Boat return'd on Board, and the

But is not  
suffer'd to  
trade with  
the Na-  
tives.

the Governor of *St. Jago* sending Word he had no Orders to permit him to take in Water there, and directing them to go to *St. Peter's* Fort, he sent one of his Lieutenants and three more to the Governor of *St. Peter's* Fort, who receiv'd them with great Civility, but detain'd them Prisoners under Pretence he had receiv'd Orders from *Don Pedro de Montades*, Governor of *Chili*, to keep them Prisoners till the Ship came under the Command of the Fort; which when the Captain understood by the Seamen who return'd with the Boat, he seem'd resolv'd to attack the Fort and rescue his Lieutenant and his three Companions by Force: But whether upon mature Consideration he did not think this practicable, or remember'd Sir *Walter Raleigh's* Fate, who lost his Head for attacking the *Spaniards* in *America* when he had no Commission for it, he altered his Resolution, and left his four Men Prisoners at *Baldivia*, whose Names were *Thomas Armiger*, the Lieutenant, *John Fortescu*, Gentleman, *Hugh Coe*, Trumpeter, and *Thomas Highway*, the Interpreter, who was born of *Moorish* Parents in *Barbary*, but a Christian, and lived formerly with an *English* Merchant at *Cadiz*: Captain *Narborough* observ'd they were all healthful People, well qualify'd to make Observations, and he hoped would give a good Account of the Country; but I am afraid they met with worse Usage from the *Spaniards* than he expected, and whether any of them ever return'd to *England* I cannot learn.

While Captain *Narborough* lay in the River *Baldivia*, some *Indians* under the *Spanish* Government came on Board him, whom he acquainted that he was come to establish a Trade with them, and desir'd they would communicate this

Chili.

His Lieutenant and three more made Prisoners by the Spaniards.

Chili. this to their Friends in the Country. They seem'd glad of it, and were unwilling to return on Shore, declaring that the *Spaniards* were mere Devils, insulting and abusing those they had in their Power without Mercy, and said, that both the *Spaniards* and the *Indians* had abundance of Gold. He gave them some Knives, Looking-glasses, and other Toys, when they went on Shore, and they promised to acquaint the inland Inhabitants with what he said. But, it seems, these People were of a middle Stature, they were not those Giants the *Spaniards* had represented them.

The Sta-  
ture of the  
*Chilefians*.

Remarks on the *Spanish* Accounts of *America* And here we may observe, that the Accounts we have receiv'd of *America* from the *Spaniards* are not agreeable to Truth, but formed upon the Plan of Interest, Bigottry or Vanity. They furnish'd us with such Relations as might deter other *European* Nations from sending Colonies thither; or such as might seem to justify their Usurpations and Cruelty to that People, and reflect Honour on the *Spanish* Nation, or the *Roman* Catholick Superstition, to which they are known to be more bigotted than any Nation in *Europe*; and we poor credulous Protestants, notwithstanding our Abhorrence of Popery, greedily swallowed the most improbable and incredible Tales they were pleas'd to frame.

From these Sources we may derive those shocking Relations which obtained so universally on the first Discovery of *America*, of Giants, Monsters, and Canibals, tho' the *Spaniards* carried the Matter so far, and dress'd up their Stories with so many Contradictions and unnatural Circumstances, as one would have thought should have confuted their own Narratives; and indeed now we come to reflect coolly

coolly and deliberately upon them, and discern with what View they were propagated, they need no other Confutation, where the Prejudices of People are not insuperable, and they have an Opportunity of examining them thro'ly.

The *Spaniards*, we find, inform'd Captain *Narborough*, that tho' there was a great deal of Gold in the Country, yet the Mines were in possession of the Natives, who were a barbarous and gigantick Race, expert in the Exercise of Arms, both *Indian* and *European*, and who could bring ten thousand good Horſe into the Field upon a very ſhort Warning; from whence they would have him conclude, that it was in vain for any *European* Nation to attempt to ſettle Colonies in *Chili*, or expect to come at their Gold. The *Spaniards* themſelves had no more than what was found in Rivulets, or on the Surface of the Earth, which they purchaſed of the Natives; and tho' they had been ſettled there ſo long, they had been driven from the Mines, and could not at preſent penetrate further into the Country than the Pallifadoes of their own Forts.

But Sir *John Narborough* ſaw with his own Eyes that the Natives were not the Giants they were repreſented: That their Stature was rather inferiour to that of the *Engliſh*, and that the *Spaniards* were ſo much Maſters of the Sea-Coaſts thereabouts that the Natives durſt not come thither to traffick with his People: He was ſenſible alſo, how poor a Fortification that of *Baldivia* then was, and that there was not an hundred *Europeans* in Garrifon there. How then was it poſſible to believe that the *Chileſians* were Giants, or expert Soldiers, and could raiſe a Body of ten thouſand Horſe? This was evidently all *Gaſconade*, and only fit

Chili.

to amuse Womerr and Children with. Notwithstanding the *Spaniards* therefore had represented the *Chilefians* as such a powerful and barbarous People, and averſe to the entertaining any Commerce with Foreigners, Sir *John* declares it to be his Opinion, that the moſt advantageous Trade in the World might be eſtabliſh'd in thoſe Parts if *England* had the Freedom of the *Spaniſh* Ports there, or if they had not, that a Trade might be carried on in ſpite of all the *Spaniſh* Forces on that Side by a Squadron of four or five Ships of twenty or thirty Guns each; and he did not queſtion but the Natives of the South Parts of *Chili*, about *Caſtro*, *Oſorno*, and *Baldivia*, would be willing to exchange their Gold for Knives, Sciſſars, Looking-glaſſes, Beads, Combs, Hatchets, and other Merchandize of that kind.

But can any one imagine, that a rascally Garrison of a hundred *Spaniards*, defended only by ſeven Guns and a poor Breſt-work, could have kept the brave *Chileſians* in Awe, and prevented their trafficking with Foreigners on the Coaſt, if, according to the *Spaniſh* Account, the *Chileſe* could have brought ten thouſand Men of a gigantick Stature, completely arm'd and vers'd in the Trade of War into the Field? Would not ſuch a Force have been able to toſs the *Spaniards* and their paltry Fort into the Sea, and made their Way to the Coaſt againſt all the Power of *Spain* in *South-America*?

But to get ſome farther Light into the State of *Chili*, and diſcover whether it be yet practicable, or worth the while to ſettle Colonies and eſtabliſh a Trade with that Coaſt, I ſhall conſider ſome other Voyages that have been made with that View to *Patagonia*, to the Streights of *Magellan*, and round Cape *Horn* and the

Terra

*Terra Magellenica*, to the Coast of *Chili*, and to the Islands near it: Give me Leave only to observe in the first place, that Sir *John Narborough* in his Return took his Departure from *Cape Gallery*, the South Point of the Harbour of *Baldivia*, on *Thursday* the 22d of *December* 1670, sailing to the Southward along the West Coast of *America* till the 6th of *January*, when he made the Islands of *Direction*, at the Western Mouth of the Streights of *Magellan*, which he pass'd, and arriv'd at *Cape Virgin Mary* in the North Sea, on *February* 14, 1670-1; he made *Cape Blanco* on the 23d, and on the 24th anchored in *Port Desire Bay*, in 47 Degrees odd Minutes South Latitude, from whence setting sail on *February* the 26th, he arriv'd at the *Lizard* in the *English Channel* on the 10th of *June*, 1671; so that he was about a Year and three quarters from home upon this Voyage, but not more than half a Year in his Passage from *Valdivia*, in *Chili*, to *England*. So that it appears to be much the same in Extent as an *East-India* Voyage, and possibly may be performed in less Time now they have found the Way round *Terra del Fogo*, and are not hindered by going through the Streights of *Magellan*, which usually took up six Weeks or two Months of the Voyage.

Chili.  
Sir John  
Narbo-  
rough re-  
turns thro'  
the  
Streights.

Before the Passage round *Cape Horn* was discover'd, the *Spaniards* imagining there was no other Way into the *South-Sea* but through the Streights of *Magellan*, built Forts on the narrowest Part of that Streight, and garrison'd them with several hundred Men, in order to exclude all other Nations from the *South-Sea*, and secure the Empire of that Ocean and those rich and extensive Countries bordering upon it to themselves; but Sir *Thomas Cavendish*

Spanish  
Forts on  
the  
Streights  
of *Magel-  
lan*.



Chili.



Passages  
found out  
by *La*  
*Maire* and  
*Brewer*.

The Pas-  
sage round  
*Terra del*  
*Fogo*, and  
the other  
Islands.

passing the Streights of *Magellan* in *January*, 1586, and coming to the first *Spanish* Fort, found no more than twenty-four alive of four hundred that were left there, and these almost starv'd. He arriv'd afterwards at another Fort in the Streight, to which the *Spaniards* had given the Name of Fort *St. Philip*, and found it in Ruins, most of the Garrison whereof perish'd for want of Food; whereupon Sir *Thomas* gave it the Name of Port *Famine*, and proceeding in his Voyage passed happily into the *South-Sea*. Several other Commanders also have passed these Streights successfully, particularly Sir *John Narborough*, already mention'd; but many however have been disappointed, drove back and lost by Tempests; and the Passage was found for the most part so difficult, that it put some enterprising Seamen upon finding a Way round Cape *Horn* further to the Southward, in which both *La Maire* and Admiral *Brewer* succeeded: The first passing through a short and narrow Streight between *Terra del Fogo* and *States-Island* on the East of it, which has since obtain'd the Name of *La Maire's Streight*, and *Brewer* passing through a Streight made by *States-Island*, and another small Island to the Eastward of it, gave that Pass the Name of *Brewer's Streight*; but none of these Streights are used at present; Ships that are bound to the *South-Sea* or Coast of *Chili* now stand away to the South-East till they come into 58 or 60 Degrees, surrounding the *Terra del Fogo*, and all the other Islands in the Neighbourhood of it: Nor do they find any Inconvenience in going thus far South but the meeting with vast pieces of Ice, as our Mariners do in *Greenland*, which are not so numerous however as to interrupt their

their Voyage. Our Countrymen, Captain Cowley, Captain Dampier, Captain Rogers, and Captain Sharp, all passed these Seas round Cape Horn without any ill Accident, and saved a great deal of time by avoiding the Streights of Magellan.

Chili.

And here I shall give some further Description of those three considerable Islands on the Coast of Patagonia and Chili, of which all Seamen, who visit the Pacifick Ocean, take so much Notice, viz. 1. The Island of Terra del Fogo. 2. The Island of Chiloe; and 3. The Island of John Fernando.

The Islands of Patagonia and Chili describ'd.

1. The Island of Terra del Fogo is bounded by the Streights of Magellan on the North, by the Atlantick Ocean on the East, and by the great South-Sea on the South and West, being of a triangular Figure, the Base whereof is the Strait of Magellan, three hundred Miles in Length from East to West, and it is about the same Extent from North to South, viz. from the Streights of Magellan to Cape Horn, the Point or Summit of the Pyramid, which lies in 57 Degrees 30 Minutes South Latitude.

Terra del Fogo. Situation and Extent.

This Island, like the Continent over-against it, is mountainous and woody, the Tops of the Mountains almost always cover'd with Snow; but it has several good Bays and Harbours on the Coast to shelter Shipping from the Storms and Tempests that reign in these Seas, and does not want Rivulets of fresh Water.

Face of the Country.

As to the Natives, Travellers differ very widely in the Description of them in some Particulars, tho' they agree pretty well in others. They all agree that they are a brave and hardy People, but not very numerous: That they paint both their Faces and Bodies,

Natives their Persons and Habits.

Chili.

and have no other Cloaths but a Cloke or Mantle made of raw Hides, or the Skins of Fish and Fowls tack'd together with green Guts, only the Men wear a Cap of Feathers. The Women have nothing on their Heads, but wear a Piece of Penguins Skins before their Nudities. They live in Huts, or in Arbours, made of the Boughs of Trees, and eat Seals, Penguins, Venison, and other Game they take either by Land or Water. Their Arms are Clubs, Bows and Arrows pointed with sharp Flints or Bones. Their Boats are Canoes, or hollow Trees, and they make their Nets of Guts and Sinews, the Fibres of the Bark of Trees, or such other Materials as their Country affords.

But some Travellers, especially the *Dutch*, related, that the Natives were Giants, ten or eleven Foot high at least: That they tore up Trees by the Roots to encounter their Enemies, and threw Stones at them big enough to sink their Boats: And they reported also, that they were Canibals, tho' it is universally acknowledged they lived chiefly on the Flesh of other Animals.

But late Travellers, and even the *Dutch* themselves, since they have discover'd the Way round the Island by Cape *Horn*, acknowledge the People are of a moderate Stature, not exceeding that of the *Europeans*: And as to their being Canibals, no manner of Proof has ever been brought of it from first to last; this Fact is supported solely by the Surmises of our wise Adventurers, and the Credulity of their Readers.

Probably some of the first Discoverers thought it convenient to give out that the Natives were Giants, to excuse their running  
away

away from them; and added, they were Canibals, to render them still more terrible, and to justify their murdering these naked defenceless People with their Artillery and Fire-Arms. Chili.

2. The Island of *Chiloe*, situated on the West Side of a great Bay of the *South-Sea*, near and over-against the Continent of *Chili* (a multitude of lesser Islands (some say forty) lying in the same Bay.) It is a long Island, stretching from North to South, and extending from 41 Degrees 40 Minutes, to 43 Degrees 30 Minutes South Latitude, computed to be about 140 Miles in Length, and twenty in Breadth. Chiloe Island.  
Situation and Extent.

The Face of the Country is various, consisting of Mountains, Valleys, Woods, Champaign, Savannah or Meadow and marshy Grounds, and has in it some fine Springs and Rivulets of fresh Water.

The chief, and for ought I can learn, the only Town in it is that of *Castro*, built by the *Spaniards*, and already describ'd, which is situated in 42 Degrees odd Minutes South Latitude, and 84 Degrees of Western Longitude. The Country, according to *Brewer* and Sir *John Narborough*, abounding in Corn, Cattle and Fruit, both *European* and *Indian*, tho' by *Techo*, and some others, said to be barren, and one of the poorest of all the *Spanish* Settlements; which different Accounts may easily be reconcil'd. I don't find any reason to doubt the Relations given us by the *Dutch* and Sir *John Narborough*, that it appeared a fruitful Country when they were there, for this was before the *Spanish* Plantations were quite ruined. But in the time of *Techo* the Natives seem to have recover'd the Country again, and left the *Spaniards* little more than the Town of *Castro*, which Castro Town.  
A fruitful Country.

Chili. which has been so often burnt and plunder'd that it is now reduced to a miserable Village with a small Fort that defends it: And in these Circumstances no wonder the Lands are uncultivated, and consequently appear unfruitful. This is the Case of many Parts of the World; the Soil seems to alter according to the Genius or Circumstances of the Inhabitants. We are told of these very *Chilefians*, that upon the Continent they sow and plant no more than just furnishes their particular Families with Food, and the *Spaniards* have no Encouragement to improve a Country they are not Masters of, and where they cannot enjoy the Fruit of their Labours in quiet. Besides, the *Chilefians* are not now their Slaves to do their Drudgery, as they did formerly; and we are well acquainted with the Pride and Laziness of the *Spaniards* even in their own Country, where the *French* frequently cultivate their Lands for them; the Owners will not work or improve their Estates, tho' they starve upon them; and this possibly is the Case of their Countrymen in *Chiloe*, now they have no Slaves to work for them and cultivate the Lands in that Island.

Island of  
*John Fernando*.

3. The third and last Island I propos'd to describe on the Coast of *Chili* is that of *Juan*, or *John Fernando*, which obtain'd its Name from the first Discoverer and Planter. This Island is situated in 34 Degrees odd Minutes South Latitude, about 400 Miles West of the Coast of *Chili*, being thirty-eight or forty Miles in Circumference. Hither it was that Governor *Pullen* advis'd the sending of a Squadron of Men of War during the last War with *France* and *Spain* in the Reign of Queen *Anne*, when the Ministry requir'd his Opinion concerning the Feazibleness of preventing the Treasures of

*Peru*

*Peru* and *Chili* from being brought to *Europe* by the *French* and *Spaniards*, and of excluding the *French* from that Traffick, whereby they were enabled to maintain the War so long against the Confederates. It was propos'd also to the Governor's Consideration, whether it was not practicable to fix *British* Colonies in those rich Countries of *Chili* and *Peru*, and thereby come in for a Share in those Treasures. And because it is very possible that this Nation may be in the like Situation again (that is) be at War with *France* and *Spain* again, or at least with the latter, and the same Conduct may hereafter become expedient which was advisable then; and because we no where meet with a juster Account of the State of the *Spanish West-Indies*, and of *Chili* in particular, the Country I am now treating of, than in the Writings of this ingenious Gentleman, I shall take the Liberty to transcribe as much from that Essay of Mr. *Pullen's* on the Subject above-mention'd as I apprehend for my present Purpose.

Chili.

Propos'd  
to be  
planted  
and for-  
tify'd by  
*England*  
by Go-  
vernor  
*Pullen*.

I shall first begin (says Mr. *Pullen*) with what is necessary to be done to ruin their Commerce (that is, of the *French* in the *South-Sea*; for then they were admitted into all the *Spanish* Ports in *America*, supplied their Towns and Colonies with *European* Goods, for which they received Gold and Silver in return, and were entrusted by the *Spaniards* to bring their Plate to *Europe*) a Commerce the most beneficial to them, and consequently most prejudicial to us. To effect which, I propose the sending thither eight fifty and sixty Gun Ships the next Season; for the manning of which Squadron, I propose but half the Complement of Seamen that are allow'd to such Ships by the

Chili.

the Rules of the Navy, and that the rest of the Number should be made up with Soldiers, either Mariners or Detachments out of marching Regiments, as the Government shall judge most expedient, provided they be Men acquainted with Service; and if they have served some Campaigns so much the better, because they will be less subject to Sicknefs, and not so soon discourag'd with Hardships as raw Men; for probably they often may have their Patience exercis'd in so long and remote a Voyage: And the Reason why I propose so few Seamen is, because most of the Soldiers will be made Seamen by the Length of the Voyage, and be much more serviceable both for landing, of which there will be frequent Occasion, as well as for small Shot upon the Decks in an Engagement, at which they are much more expert than our Sailors.

I am concern'd that I am oblig'd here to take Notice of the great Ignorance of our Seamen (generally speaking) in the Use of Small-Arms, which, by a great Blindness, they have too much neglected of late Days, and endeavour to confirm one another in the Contempt of them, by alledging, that in loading the great Guns with Cartridge-shot you perform the same thing better; than which nothing is more false in Fact, and is one of the chief Reasons the *French* are so bold in boarding our seventy and eighty Gun Ships; for they know that our Seamen are so unskillful in the Use of the Musket, that when they are beat from their Artillery, they seldom give them much Trouble afterwards, and what Resistance they have found upon our Men of War's Decks of late time, hath mostly been from our Mariners, who have very justly acquir'd a great  
Reputation,

Reputation, and are certainly a most useful Body of People, and the Motto which I have seen upon some of their Caps (*Sine his Nihil*) is now literally true. I affirm, this is one of the principal Reasons that makes the *French* despise our Seamen, and hath exposed us to such Loss both of Reputation and Shipping as hath not been known but of late Days, and deserves a very serious Consideration, in order to procure a speedy and effectual Remedy. If I should say that the Fire-Arms that are put on Board our Men of War are both too heavy and too short, and the Locks good for nothing, and that the *French* extremely excell us in the Commodiousness of their Fire-Arms in all respects, I should advance nothing but Truth.

The Season of the Year proper to begin their Voyage is from the first to the middle of *September*; but I advise by all means that they should set out by the 15th of *August*, that they may arrive some small time in the *South Seas* before the *French* Trade, that goes the same Year. For by this Means one could hardly fail of destroying all the Ships bound thither that Season, and perhaps meet with some returning home; for they must observe the same time of Year and return by the same Rout out of those Seas that they went into them by.

To make this still plainer, it will not be amiss to set down here the Rout they always use going thither, which is by or round Cape *Horn*, the Southermost Promontory of all *America*; for they never venture through the Streights of *Magellan*, because they find now by Experience, that for one Ship that gets through, three are forced back, and so lose



their Voyage that Year, to the Ruin of their Owners: But having sufficient Sea-room the other Way, they are never expos'd to any such Risque. After they have doubled Cape Horn, they steer directly for the Isle of *Juan Fernando*, to refresh their Men, who by the time they get thither want sufficiently, and likewise to take in fresh Water, for their first Stock can't fail of being near expir'd before they reach this Place. I have taken a great deal of Pains to inform myself of this Matter from several *French* Sailors that have perform'd the Voyage, who all agreed that they never mis'd that Island if they could help it, because their Men are almost all in the Scurvy by that time, and it would infallibly occasion a Mutiny, if the Captain should refuse touching there.

Governor  
*Pullen's*  
Description  
of the  
Island of  
*John*  
*Fernando*.

It seems necessary, having mention'd this Island, that I should give you a Description of it, the rather because of the Advantages I propose from the planting of it. The Isle of *Juan*, or *John Fernando*, lies in the Latitude 34 Degrees 45 Minutes, its Circuit may be about thirty-eight or forty *English* Miles, and its Distance from the Continent of *South-America* four hundred. Its Soil is indifferent upon the Hills, but its Valleys are fine; fruitful and pleasant, interspersed with Savannahs, as they are usually call'd here, that is, natural Meadows which are common in the *West-Indies*, and which I have mention'd elsewhere in the Description of *Buenos Ayres*. These Valleys therefore are doubtless capable of great Improvement, since there need be no Question of their producing every thing which is agreeable to this Climate; and tho', as I have said, the Hills are in their Soil unfruitful, yet I would not be understood by that to exclude Trees,  
of

of which there are many, and some which might be of great Use ; but what principally induc'd me to mention the settling of it was the breeding Cattle and raising Fruits of the Earth, and by Tillage ; by means whereof great Advantage might accrue to the Inhabitants, since the Ships which pass the Streights of *Magellan*, or by *Cape Horn*, constantly touch here, by reason that their Crew having by this time contracted an *Epidemick Scurvy*, the Captain's missing the Island might, as I have said, occasion a Mutiny. I foresee one Objection which would be made to this Proposal, and that is, the Difficulty there would be in maintaining such a Settlement at such a Distance from *Britain* and from any *British* Colonies : But to this I answer, *That never any Island was more capable of being fortified so as to resist any Enemy who could attack it in that Part of the World.* There are in it but two Bays capable of receiving Ships, which are both at the East End, and a small Charge would soon build such Works as would render it impracticable for any to land there against the Will of its Inhabitants. The West End, which is the highest, rockiest, and by far the most barren Part of the Island, hath yet this Advantage, that it is of such natural Strength that a small Body of Men might defend it, even against the greatest Force that could be brought against it.

Seals are found here in the greatest Plenty of any Part of the World, and their Skins are of an extraordinary Value from the Fineness of the Furs: Their Fat makes very good Train Oil, and much better still is made of what is call'd the Sea-Lion, which is a Creature much bigger than the Seal, tho' amphibious like them, yet without a Fur. The Number

Chili.

of these Creatures, which is frequently so great as entirely to cover the Shore, sufficiently demonstrates the Plenty of Fish which must be on its Coasts, those amphibious Animals living on little else ; and indeed there are here as fine, and in as great Quantity, as could be wish'd. To these Advantages may be added the great Abundance of Goats, which have been produc'd by three or four which were left here by its first Discoverer. All which, put together, would render it no disagreeable Place for those who in the Voyage I propose have no other View than settling some-where in the World, to plant themselves here, where they would be sure of finding most of the Necessaries of Life ready to their Hands ; the Grass of the Savannahs in this Island not being like those throughout the rest of *America* long and flaggy, but thick and short, extremely fit for grazing, insomuch that a very competent Judge avers, he has not carry'd his Calculation too high in averring, that these Savannahs are now capable of maintaining a thousand Head of Cattle, besides Goats, who grow fattest on the most barren Part of the Island.

*John Fernando* discover'd this Isle in the Voyage he was making from *Lima* to *Baldivia*, and being exceedingly pleased with its Situation, Soil and Climate, resolv'd to settle it, judging that its Produce might very well support four or five hundred Families. On his Return to *Lima* he endeavour'd to procure a Patent for that Purpose. In his first Instance he was favourably receiv'd, but whether it clash'd in any Degree with the private Interest of the *Spanish* Viceroy, or whether it be a Maxim in the *Spanish* Policy not to settle in any Place in *America* in which are no Mines, I shall  
not

not pretend to determine, but shall only add, that it has continued uninhabited ever since, except now and then some body who has been left when the Ships watered there, and who have found a Way to subsist tolerably till they have been taken in again by some other Ship that came on the same Errand.

But I have dwelt long enough on this Subject of planting it. Let us next observe of what Use in its present State it might be to our Squadron. And in the first place it is evident, that while our Ships remain'd here it would be next to an Impossibility for them to miss those for whom they waited. But besides, we should not lose a Moment's time here by such a View more than is necessary to all Ships that come on the same Design; and we should likewise have an Opportunity of fitting up our small Craft, design'd for landing of Men, in order to the surprizing such Places as it should be resolv'd to attempt. Nor can there be a more proper Conjuncture than while the Fleet lies here, to concert the Scheme of Action while they remain in the *South-Seas*.

The Squadron having done this ought to sail for *Arica*, on the Coast of *Peru*, and by sending a nimble Sailor a-head endeavour to learn, by taking some Prisoners, whether the Plate be yet there which is brought from the Mines of *Potosi* to this Place; for *Arica* is the Barcadeer or Port to *Potosi*, thither the King's Galleons come once a Year to fetch it up in the first place to *Callao*, and from thence, after some Stay, to *Panama*, from whence it is sent over Land to *Porto Bello*, where it is put on Board of the Galleons, which convey it to *Spain*.

Now

Chili.

Now if it should happen that the Plate be there (as 'tis odds but it is) I advise without more ado to land and attack the Place, and 'twill be a Miracle to me if you can fail taking it: For Captain *Sharpe* took this Place with no more than eighty Men, tho' the whole Force the Country could raise was there to defend it. But there was a little paltry Fort at the End of the Town, that while his small Force was attacking it, the People whom he had just before beat out of the Town return'd and charg'd him at his Back: And tho' he beat them out again four or five times, his small Number so diminish'd by these repeated Attacks, that he was forced to make his Retreat, tho' he saw, and was in possession of for some time, more Silver than would have loaded four or five such Ships as his was. You may see an Account of this whole Matter in Mr. *Ringrose's* Journal, who was one of Captain *Sharpe's* Crew at that time, and is printed under the Name of *The History of the Buccaneers*. But if nothing is to be done at this time here, then sail immediately to Cape *Passo*, under the Equinoctial Line, where you can hardly fail of taking every Ship that comes from the Coast of *Peru* to *Panama*; for the whole Trade of the *South-Seas* consists in going and coming from this last Port to *Peru*, as 'tis well known to every one that knows any thing of these Seas.

In this Cruize you will meet with the Provisions that must support you in these Parts; for the City of *Panama* is wholly sustain'd by the Provisions sent from the several Ports of *Peru*, as Wheat, Flower from *Guanchaco*, Wine, Bacon, and Marmalade from *Pisco*, and Chocolate from *Guiaquil*, Sugar and Oil  
from

from *Hillo*. In my Opinion these foregoing Articles may afford a comfortable Subsistence for our People, during their Stay there, and what they need never fear meeting with in sufficient Quantities, if their Commanders understand the proper Methods for intercepting it.

The Provisions the *Spaniards* are forced to send for the Support of this great City was the Reason they could never hinder the *Buccaneers* subsisting in these Seas, which they endeavour'd by all means within their Power : And I am of opinion, that they might probably effect it were it not for the continual Supplies they are oblig'd to send to *Panama*, which can never be dispensed with ; for if they should take such a Resolution, that great City would certainly be famish'd. I have dwelt longer upon this Article than otherwise I design'd, to convince People that a Squadron need neither perish by Hunger, or be driven by it out of these Seas, if they know how to take the proper Means to prevent it. But I shall say more upon this Head when I come to answer the Objections against the Impracticableness of this Voyage, which I propose to do in the Sequel of this Discourse.

After the Squadron hath made what Stay they find convenient in this last Station, they ought to proceed to the Bay of *Panama*, where there are several small Islands that abound with Refreshments and Water, and very good Anchoring, in several Places. Here they will intercept all Ships bound for this Port, and likewise a great Number of small Barks from *Natta*, *La Velia*, and *Puebla Nova*, which are loaden with Fowls, Hogs, Manatee, and Indian Corn for the Use of *Panama*, and you may attack

## The PRESENT STATE

attack *Panama* itself, or the golden Mines of *St. Maria*, or both, according to the Information you receive from the Prisoners you take; and indeed if you staid long here, the City of *Panama* would infallibly be starved.

At this Place, in my Opinion, they should divide the Squadron, after they have perform'd all the Service they can here, and send four Ships to cruize on the Coast of *New-Spain*, in order to take the *Acapulco* Ship; two of these Ships must cruize off the Mouth of *Acapulco* Harbour, or rather to the Northward of it, and the other two must take their Station near Cape *St. Lucar*, in *Callifornia*, which is always the first Land the *Manillia* Ship makes coming home, except she hath Reason to fear an Enemy there, and then she endeavours to make the Land as near the Harbour's Mouth as she can, for which Reason I have placed two Ships in each Station. The time she arrives never exceeds ten Days before or after *Christmas*, which makes it almost impossible to miss of her, if the Disposition I have here laid down be follow'd. They will likewise have a Chance to take the outward-bound *Acapulco* Ship, if they take care not to be discover'd from the Coast, for she never fails to begin her Voyage betwixt the 10th of *December* and the 10th of *February*, and is most prodigious rich in *Pieces of Eight*.

Now to return to the four Ships which we left in the Bay of *Panama*, I think they ought to take this Opportunity to go over to the *Galleppagos* (under the Equator) where they will find both great Store of excellent Refreshments for their sick Men, and Ports where they may carreen and refit their Ships, with all manner of Security; therefore the four Ships  
sent

sent to look out for the *Acapulco* Ship must be appointed to rendezvous here after their Cruize is out. Now I have pointed at all the principal things that can be undertaken at Sea in these Parts, but have omitted a great many Enterprizes that might be formed against the rich Towns upon the Coast of *Peru*, because I would not swell this Discourse to too great a Bulk.

*First*, 'Tis objected, and with a great deal of seeming Reason, that having no Ports there where the Squadron can either revictual or refit upon any Occasion, that therefore they would run the greatest Risque imaginable of starving, or having the Ships in a little time render'd unserviceable.

To which I answer, That if they please to make use of the following Advice they need neither fear the one or the other, *viz.* To send all such Ships as you take in your Cruize between *Peru* and *Panama* (loaden with Provisions) over to the *Galleppagos* with one of your Frigates, with Orders to chuse out the best Harbour, and where there is the greatest Plenty of Refreshments, and there unrig your Prizes you think fit to send, and form a Magazine, which indeed the Place itself invites you to, for you need never fear the *Spaniards* disturbing you, for two Reasons, *first*, Because they have no naval Force, tho' join'd by the *French*, capable to dispute the Sea with you. *Secondly*, Because they know hardly any thing of these Islands but the Name, dreading them extremely, and telling strange romantick Stories of Whirlpools and Currents that have destroy'd several of their Ships that had the Imprudence to come too near them in their Voyages [you may see more of this in Mr. *Ringrose's*



Chili.

Journal] and indeed here is so many of them, that it would not be an easy matter to find that out which we should pitch upon except by Chance. The Ignorance of the *Spaniards* in these Parts is hardly credible.

I say, hither they must send all the Ships they take loaden with Provisions, Timber, or any other Stores that may prove useful to them whilst they stay here; and the very Ships themselves may serve for Hulks to clean by, and such of their Masts and Yards as are large enough be preserved for the Use of our own Ships. The only Reason why the Privateers never did this, in my Opinion, was because no-body had Authority enough to make part of the Men stay here to look after the Stores; for there might indeed happen among that unruly sort of People forty Accidents that might occasion their being left there for ever. But that they made other very good Uses of them is very plain to them that know any thing of Captain *Davis's* Voyage, or Captain *Sharpe's*, or indeed of any of the Rovers that ever enter'd those Seas for thirty Years last past.

And 'tis worth considering, that Captain *Davis* staid in these Seas three Years, and twice took the very Ships equip'd out to fight him, which had the very best Men they were able to pick out of all *Peru*, and after surprising several of their rich Towns, return'd to these very uninhabited Islands, where he fitted and victualled his Ship for his Return home, which he happily perform'd, tho' he used none of the Precautions I have here recommended. Captain *Sharpe* did yet much more in a Ship of less Force, for after having made a good Voyage (as they call it) he sail'd to *Ni-coya*, a small Village that consists all of Carpenters,

penters, and surpris'd it, and made the very *Spanish* Carpenters take down his Ship's Poop, and alter his Main-deck to make her fitter for the Sea: And tho' the *Spaniards* could not but know of it, they durst never give him any Interruption; and when his Work was done to his Mind he very generously rewarded his *Spaniards* and dismiss'd them, and afterwards successfully perform'd his intended Voyage to the *West-Indies*.

Thus I could name several others that have carry'd their Point, in spite of all the Opposition the *Spaniards* could make; and if it be objected, that they were only in small Numbers, therefore could better subsist: I answer, they perfectly mistake the matter; for the Force I propose could upon occasion ravage the best and most plentiful Country in these Parts in the Face of the Sun. But things may easily be kept from coming to these Extremities.

The second Objection is, that the *Spaniards* or *French* could not fail of being inform'd by their good Friends here of the intended Expedition, and so render it useless and unsuccessful. To this I answer, that if it was to be carry'd on in a Method I could propose, they could never know of it, except it was betray'd by them that only have the Power to put it in execution: But suppose it was, I can tell you, they could ward against very few of the intended Blows; for in the first place, they could send no Silver from *Peru* to *Panama*, and so the Galleons would come empty; and pray consider the Consequence of that. In the next place, you must of necessity ruin the *French* Trade during the time you staid there; neither could they prevent with all their Knowledge your taking their Sea-port Towns, or the home-

Chili.

ward bound *Acapulco* Ship. In my Opinion, it could only hinder your taking the Galleons going between *Arica* and *Panama*, or the *Spaniards* bringing their Silver to *Arica* from the Mines; and as to the *French* sending a superior Squadron after us, 'tis not so easily done as supposed, for Reasons too long to insert here, but such as I shall be very ready to produce when desir'd. In my poor Opinion, these foregoing Objections are the only ones of Weight that can be brought against this Proposal.

The  
Governor  
proposes  
settling  
Colonies  
in *Chili*.

I have yet left untouch'd a most noble Design that may be formed upon *Chili*, a Country that the *Spaniards* have but hold on by the Border. King *Charles* the Second seem'd to aim at something of this kind by his sending Sir *John Narborough* thither in the *Sweepstakes* to discover it; but the *Spanish* Don who went with him in the Nature of a Pilot, and without doubt put the King upon the Enterprize, after his being put on Shore in the Man of War's Boat where he desir'd, never appear'd more; upon which, and upon some other Disasters, Sir *John* return'd home. But 'tis certain this is one of the best and richest Countries in *America*, where if we could settle ourselves, we should prodigiously enrich our native Country; and for my part, I don't think it impossible to be done.

In my Opinion, the proper Time to undertake this will be in returning home; for if the Design does not succeed, it will not put you a League out of the Way. But I advise by all means to attack the City of *Coquimbo*, which is situated upon the very Confines of *Chili*, because you will certainly find here several *Chilean* Slaves, who, if manag'd dexterously, will  
prove

prove exceeding serviceable ; and likewise you can't fail of being inform'd of the present Posture of Affairs in that Country, and if it prove impracticable at this time to prosecute the Project any further, the Squadron may take in their Stores of fresh Water and other excellent Provisions for their Voyage home ; for there is not a better Port for that Purpose in all these Seas. Captain *Sharpe* took this Place with ninety Men, and tho' discover'd before he landed met with very little Resistance.

To make what I here advance more intelligible, it will be necessary to give a short Account of the *Spanish* Affairs in *Chili*. This noble Country, which all the *Spanish* Authors that have wrote concerning it compare, both for Temperature of Air and Productions of the Earth, to *France*, was first search'd into by *Pedro Baldivia*, some considerable time after the Conquest of *Peru* ; and the principal City, if not the only one the *Spaniards* have at this time in that Country, is call'd after his Name. He found the Country to abound with the finest Gold in the World, which caused a great many People from *Peru* to join themselves with him. By this Means three considerable Cities were built and fortified in a very small time in that Country, viz. *Baldivia*, *Osono*, and *Castro*.

After the *Spaniards* had settled themselves securely, as they thought, from any Attempts of the *Indians*, according to their usual Custom, they began to treat the Natives of the Country in a most inhuman manner, but they presently found themselves mistaken, and were convinc'd they had to do with a People the bravest and most martial of any in all *America* ; for they gave the *Spaniards* several Battles, and always routed

Chili.

~~~~~ routed them, and at last took their very Cities and utterly expel'd them the Country. In one of the Battles, wherein they not only defeated the *Spaniards*, but likewise took *Baldivia* their General Prisoner, and served him as the *Parthians* did *Crasus*, pouring melted Gold down his Throat, and telling him, At last they had found a Way to satisfy his Avarice.

In this Interim the *Dutch* made a Voyage to the *South-Sea* with four Ships from *Brazil*, which was then almost all in their Possession, and touched at *Baldivia*, which at that time was not re-settled by the *Spaniards*. The Natives flock'd down to them in very great Numbers, perceiving they were not *Spaniards* by their Complexions and Hair, and were overjoy'd when they understood that they were at War with them, and would assist them against their common Enemy upon all Occasions. This good Understanding lasted several Days, with abundance of interchangeable good Offices, till unluckily the *Dutch* began to be very inquisitive after Gold, which as soon as the *Chilefians* perceiv'd, they immediately abandoned the Port, and would never afterwards converse with them, notwithstanding all the Endeavours the *Dutch* could use.

After this imprudent Negotiation, perceiving they could never retrieve the Blunder they had made, they set sail and return'd to *Brazil*, being only four Months and some Days upon the whole Voyage, which is a Remark worth taking notice of. The *Spaniards*, some time after this Voyage was made, re-settled *Baldivia*, not being able to support the Thoughts of losing so rich and pleasant a Country entirely, or perhaps fearing the *Dutch* might find  
Means

Means to seize upon it, being then in open War with them, who besides depriving them of the vast Quantity of Gold they used formerly to draw from this Country, would prove troublesome Neighbours to *Peru*.

These and the like Considerations made the *Spaniards* resolve to re-establish a new Colony at *Baldivia* at all Hazards, and without doubt it was done with great Trouble and Expence; for by all the Relations I ever could procure (and I have been very inquisitive) I can't find the *Spaniards* have any other Settlements in the whole Country. But this I am sure of, that the War continues between the *Spaniards* and the Natives as fierce and bloody as ever. And Mr. *Funnel* says, in the Year 1704 they durst not touch at the Island *La Moucha*, which is on the Coast of *Chili* close to the main Land, because, says he, we should run great danger of being murder'd by the Inhabitants, who are always at War with the *Spaniards*, and think all white Men to be such: But grant they do, there may be found Means out to deceive them; but I think the Voyage I have quoted sufficiently refutes that Opinion.

I shall only mention a Particular or two more of the *Chilefians*, and then come to what I propose concerning them. Amongst the several Nations that inhabit this Province, and are at War with the *Spaniards*, there is one call'd the *Araucans*, who, the *Spaniards* say, are so valiant that they attack them whenever they meet with them, tho' inferior sometimes considerably in Number, and know not, at least have not the Use of Fire-Arms; and notwithstanding these Disadvantages, generally are successful, insomuch that the *Spaniards* stand in great fear of them; and add, that they

Chili.

they are so good at Imitation in what relates to War, that they learn to camp and decamp, and intrench themselves in Places of Advantage to make a handsome Retreat or an Assault, with having but once seen them practis'd; and sometimes make Improvements upon their Teachers to their great Cost, who heartily curse them for their Docility. A famous *Spanish* Poet, during the time he served in the *Chilean* War, composed a Poem much esteemed by those of his Nation, call'd *H. Araucano*.

Now I propose, that the Commander of this Squadron should have Instructions to endeavour by all possible Means to get a Conference with the Natives of this Province, which if he can bring about, the Business will be done to his Hand; for as soon as they perceive he is an Enemy to the *Spaniards*, he will want no Assistance they can give him, if he gives Orders that neither Gold nor Silver be mention'd in any Discourse held with them. After this, he may either attack *Baldivia* in Conjunction with them, or seize on any other Port he finds convenient, where he may repair to in case of Need, either for Victuals, which this Country abounds with, or for other Occasions. But if he takes *Baldivia*, which I recommend if practicable (for I believe it is in a good Posture of Defence, because they have an Enemy at their very Gates, who they stand in great dread of) in such a Case it would be requisite to leave a Garrison, a small one would serve the Turn, whilst the Squadron cruized in those Seas, because the *Spaniards* can't go thither by Land, and durst not peep by Sea during the time it stay'd in those Parts.

But

But when it was thought convenient to return home, it ought to be provided with a very good Garrison, for this Country is well worth the keeping possession of, and would mightily enrich our native Country, and take off a great Quantity of our Woollen Manufacture, because here is a severe Winter of four Months: And I am verily persuaded, if a prudent Man should be left Governor, who cultivated a good Correspondence with the Natives, that the *Spaniards*, tho' assisted by the *French*, would never dare to stir a Foot to retake it; or if they did, would be unsuccessful, they would be so harra's'd and plagu'd by the *Indians*, their implacable Enemies, who, if they had Fire-Arms, would certainly be too hard for them on all Occasions. Indeed 'tis requisite this Acquisition (if made) should be encourag'd from *England* as a thing of the greatest Importance, and a sufficient Number of Men, with all other Necessaries, be sent away by the first Opportunity. For

Besides the Riches of this Country, you would infallibly in time of Peace have a stol'n Trade with *Peru* for all sorts of Woollen Goods, as we formerly had from *Jamaica* with the *Spaniards* inhabiting the Ports of the North Seas; and the *Indians* in a short time would be brought to supply you with Gold when they saw you paid them for it in Goods they wanted and valued, as Cloaths, Arms, and Toys. These *Indians* must always be treated as a free People, and all manner of Satisfaction given them upon all Occasions that's reasonable. I should imagine this following Way to be a good Method to begin a Friendship with them.



## The PRESENT STATE

Upon taking any Towns upon the Coast of *Peru*, to enquire narrowly if there be any *Chilean* Slaves; and if you meet with any such, as you certainly will, to send them aboard, and treat them with all imaginable good Usage, and carry them to their native Country and set them ashore, having first engag'd them to settle a Correspondence betwixt you and their Countrymen, which without doubt they will readily undertake, and be as joyfully accepted of. And these Slaves, speaking the *Spanish* Language, will be of as great Use as Interpreters. I am mightily mistaken if Mr. *Ringrose* does not say, in some Place, the *Spaniards* remov'd their *Chilean* Slaves from the Sea-ports, for fear of their joining with the *Buccaneers* when they made Descents upon the Coast of *Peru* to surprize any Place they had an Intention to plunder. I shall now dismiss this Head, tho' there may be much more said of it; but I think it will not be amiss to take notice that 'tis situated betwixt the 25th and 45th Degrees of South Latitude, and is the first Country that is inhabited by any *Spaniards*, as you come into those Seas round Cape *Horn*.

I have been more concise in the several Points treated on in this short Work than otherwise I should have been, because I intended at the same time that I publish'd these Papers of my own to accompany them into the World with a small Treatise of Captain *Lewis Pain's*, a very understanding honest Gentleman, who was taken by the *Spaniards* in *Europe*, and sent over in 1707 to *America*, where he was kept in Chains several Years, being made use of as an Engineer, by which Means he had Paper, Pen and Ink allow'd him; and in those

those Intervals he had of Leisure compos'd the following short Memoir of the State of the *Spaniards* there. At last he found a Way, by Means of a *Mesteeze* Woman, to escape to *Jamaica*, but dy'd three Weeks after his Arrival. I purchas'd all his Manuscripts for ten *Pistoles*, and amongst them found this, with which I now present my Readers, containing a more exact and intelligible Draught of those truly *Terra Incognita*, the in-land *Spanish* Plantations, than any that (I at least) have any where met with.

The Love of my native Country prevail'd on me to enter on this Work, which I hope will afford at least Hints to some worthy Persons to improve the naval Strength of *Britain*, extend her Commerce, enrich her Inhabitants, employ her Hands, and exalt her Glory: Which are the utmost Wish of the Author of these Pages, and have been equally the End of his Endeavours, as they were the farthest Aim of his Ambition.

*Thus far Governor Pullen. I shall, in the next place, exhibit such Passages out of Captain Pain's Papers, which fell into the Governor's Hands, as may enable us to form a just Idea of the State of the Spanish Colonies in general, and of this Province of Chili in particular, and then proceed to make Remarks on the Governor's Scheme of sending a Squadron of Men of War into the South-Seas in case of a War with Spain, and the endeavouring to settle Colonies upon the Coast of Chili.*

The Empire of the Catholick King in *America* (Captain *Pain* observes) is a sufficient Demonstration that Projects, how surprizing soever in their Extent, are not always Chimera's. *Columbus*, when he first form'd that which

Captain  
*Pain's* Ob-  
servations  
on the  
present  
State of  
*Spanish*  
with  
*America*.



with so much Glory he executed, offer'd it with all its Advantages to his Countrymen the *Genoese*. Those in the Government of the publick Affairs examin'd it, and being satisfy'd with the Reasons, were for encouraging the Proposal; but Signior *Lucio Bernerdi* representing to them the Condition of the State, and that any Conquests attained in this new-discover'd World would be almost impossible to be preserv'd, and would serve but to open the Way to more powerful Princes, it was thereupon reject'd, perhaps not without Cause. Then it was by *Bartholomew Columbo* offer'd to King *Henry* the Seventh of *England*, next to the King of *Portugal*, a great Encourager of Navigation, and lastly, to *Ferdinand* and *Isabella*, or rather to her only, for it seems agreed amongst the *Spanish* Historians, that Queen claim'd a sole and peculiar Right thereto, suffering none other but her own Subjects, the *Castilians*, to pass over thither; which *Ferdinand* at her Decease altered, and left all *Spaniards* as much Freedom in this respect one as another. Several brave Captains and well-appointed Ships of War soon after were transported thither; which quickly subdu'd not only the Islands *Columbus* had discover'd, but also conquer'd a great Part of the Continent, erecting two noble Governments on the Ruins of two vast Empires, *viz. Mexico* and *Peru*. Each of these hath its Viceroy, who has many great Officers under him, with some Places within the Bounds of these two general Divisions, which yet are independent, and subject only to the Council in *Spain*; but the Form, the Maxims, and the End of their Policy, being throughout the vast Extent of their *American* Dominions the same, I shall, for

for the sake of being at once concise and perspicuous, first describe their Method of ruling, and then give a particular Description of the several Provinces which are at present under their Dominion.

The only essential Maxim which runs through the whole political Economy of the *Spaniards*, in respect of their Territories here, is the keeping them in an absolute Dependence upon *Spain*. All things therefore relating to their *American* Empire receive their first Form, and all Disputes, all Projects, and all Designs of extending or improving their Dominions are consider'd in their dernier Resort by the Council for the *Indies* in *Spain*, composed of such who both from Theory and Experience have attained a perfect Knowledge of these Countries. As to *America* itself, it is, as I have said, divided into two large Governments, *Mexico*, called also *New-Spain*, and *Peru*, each of which hath its Viceroy, who is honour'd with a very extensive Commission. He hath for his Assistance a Council, and under him, in the large Provinces of his Government, several subordinate Officers, who wear the Titles of Presidents, Alcalds, &c. appointed at the Will of the Viceroy, who, notwithstanding some outward Forms and Shew of Limitations from his Council, is for all that absolute; making by Presents, Perquisites and Traffick, an immense Wealth by large Sums, out of which he procures himself to be continu'd another five Years (his first and usual Term) in his Government, and sometimes more. The two chief Points which these Viceroys have committed to their Care is, the conserving, and if it be any way practicable, the increasing the King's Revenues in Plate, &c. which yearly

is

Chili.

is carry'd from *Porto Bello* to *Spain*, and the keeping the Natives, *Criollo's*, *Mestizo* and *Indians* in Subjection, which is executed with the utmost Rigour, and is the Source of all the Evils that are felt here: And since the chief Knowledge that can be acquir'd of the true Situation of these Affairs is deriv'd from hence, it seems reasonable I should explain it a little farther.

The natural-born *Spaniards* are solely vested with Command throughout all the *Spanish Indies*; they only enjoy Posts of Honour, Profit and Trust; and this it is which occasions those Draughts which have so drain'd and weaken'd their Dominions in *Europe*; for putting no Confidence even in the very first Generation of their Descendants, and absolutely prohibiting all Strangers from going thither in their Service, a Necessity follows of sending thither continually large Supplies, that they may be still in a Condition to hold the Reins with equal Tightness. This Form of Government creates an irreconcilable Antipathy between the *European Spaniards* and the *Criollo's*, i. e. those born of *Spanish* Parents in the *West-Indies*. These latter see with Indignation themselves equally shut out from all considerable Preferment either in Church or State, the most palpable Partiality shewn in all judicial Decisions between them and *Spaniards*, and in a word, the whole Policy of their Governors bent to distress and to deject 'em. The *Spaniards*, on the other hand, no ways ignorant of their Sentiments, and moreover continually jealous of their Desire to throw off the *Spanish* Yoke, entirely exert their utmost Arts to enfeeble and enslave them: They discourage, as far as they are able, all sorts of Manufactures, of  
which

which being unprovided, they must of course purchase such as are sent from *Spain*; they also endeavour to hinder Plantations (except *Estantians*, or Beef Farms) that they may not have it in their Power to possess rich and improv'd Settlements, the Cause why those noble Countries are so little cultivated, and lastly, they make it their Aim to increase Luxury, Idleness, and Pusillanimity amongst them, that they more easily may be kept in Obedience; whence it apparently follows, *Buccaneers* and such like in small Numbers are able to do the utmost Mischief. And thus throughout all these vast rich and noble Provinces, the Inhabitants seem inspir'd with a Spirit of Dissention, which renders them continually restless and uneasy, making almost useless those Blessings indulgent Providence has confer'd upon them.

As to the Religion of the *Spanish Americans* it is universally Popish; and if there be any Degree in Bigotry amongst them, it is among the Natives, who almost adore the Priests, and are severely fleec'd by them, paying them out of all they have much more than the Tyth. Amongst the Clergy there are great Divisions, occasion'd chiefly by the national Quarrels between the *Criollo's* and the *Spaniards*, which have subsisted long, and seem rather to increase than diminish. The several Orders of Friars, as in *Europe*, are exceedingly jealous of one another, tho' they all find Ways to gain so much upon the Minds of the People, that there is not perhaps in the World finer and more costly Monasteries and religious Houses than are here, the Power, Riches, and Grandeur of the Church rising no where higher.

Chili.

The Inhabitants of these Countries are, 1. Natural-born *Spaniards*. 2. *Criollo's*, of *Spanish* Parents, born in *America*. 3. *Mesteeze*, born of *Indian* and *Spanish* Parents. 4. *Indians*, properly Natives. 5. *Negroes*, brought hither from *Africk*. As for the *Spaniards*, they differ little from those in *Europe*, except that they are more high and lofty than in *Spain*, as they are Lords here, possessing every thing, and living on the Labour of others. The *Criollo's* fall not a bit short of them in Vanity and Haughtiness; but, as I have said, are kept much under, never allow'd any considerable Preferment, and are even worse us'd than the *Indians* themselves; they are ignorant, lazy, and pufillanimous in general, tho' here and there, especially amongst the Church-men, some deserve a better Character. The *Indians* are a simple well-natur'd industrious People, much lessen'd in their Numbers by the excessive Cruelty us'd at first by their Conquerors; they are yet sufficiently press'd by the Yoke of Bondage, but wherever they are allow'd a Relaxation, they build convenient Cities, and so make themselves rich and flourishing. The *Negroes* here as elsewhere are made use of as Slaves.

As to the Commodities of this Country, I shall speak more particularly under the Description I shall give of its several Parts. In respect of its Trade, it is wholly domestick, except what is carry'd on with *Spain* in a yearly Ship from *Acapulco* to the *East-Indies*, and the prohibited Commerce they us'd to carry on with the *English*. The *Spaniards*, who, as I have said, own no other Maxim in their *Indian* Politicks, than to keep the *Americans* in absolute Subjection, are in nothing more careful than what relates to Traffick, having  
taken

taken every Precaution they were able to hinder their Intercourse with other Nations both by heavy Fines and severe Punishments, which sometimes have extended even to Death itself, and by maintaining Vessels of Force in Pay, under the Name of *Guard de Costa's*, in order to cruize about, and make Prize of whatever Ship they find within the Limits of their Seas. They likewise suppress some and carefully discourage all Manufactures from being carried on there, tho' for all that, some very tolerable Cloth is made in *Quitto*; for it is here as in some other polite Countries, a handsome Present to those in the Administration is a certain Method to strike Justice, or at least the Ministers of Justice, both blind and dumb. The Shipping here are neither numerous nor convenient, what there are continually pass to and fro between the two vast Divisions of this Empire; which as they were before the only Parts of the World known to the *Indians*, so they are now the only Places which have any Commerce together under the Government of the *Spaniards*: But as all is of late fallen under the Direction of the *French*, \* it is highly probable they soon may be alter'd.

*Chili* lies next to the Province of *Peru*, and is absolutely the finest Country and richest in all *America*, whether North or South. The Inhabitants are a hardy, valiant, and stubborn People, who having been ill used by the *Spaniards*, drove them out of their Country, killed their Governor, and are their inveterate Enemies to this Day: However, the *Spaniards* have now recover'd *Baldivia* and some other Places on the Sea-coast. *Paraguay*, or rather

Captain  
Pain's  
Remarks  
on *Chili*.

\* This was wrote during the Wars in Queen *Anne's* Reign.



Chili.

*La Plata*, is at the Back of *Chili*, in which the Catholick King hath the valuable Settlement of *Buenos Ayres*, one of the finest in *America*; the true *Paraguay* is entirely subject to and formed by the Jesuites. *Terra Magellanica* is the last *Spanish* Settlement I have to mention, and to say Truth is difficult enough to determine whether it be settled or no; however, they claim it, and as they reckon it Part of their Possession so shall I.

The  
Author's  
Remarks  
on Gover-  
nor *Pul-*  
*len's* Pro-  
ject of  
settling  
Colonies  
in *Chili*.

I come in the last place to give my own Thoughts on Mr. *Pullen's* Project, in case we should ever have another War with *Spain*; and must agree with the Governor that nothing could more sensibly affect the Enemy than the interrupting their Trade with *Peru* and *Chili*, and that a Squadron might be well employ'd in the *South-Sea* for that end; but I should rather chuse the Island of *Chiloe* for a Station for our Ships than that of *John Fernando's*, because the latter lies four hundred Miles from the Coast, and the other in sight of it, within three or four Leagues of the Continent in many Places; besides, the Island of *Chiloe* is ten times larger, already well stock'd with Cattle, has many good Harbours in and near it, and is known to be well watered and fruitful where it is cultivated. And if any thing should be wanting for the Fleet or Land-Forces, Provisions might easily be procur'd from the neighbouring Continent, which is in view of it. Besides, *Chiloe* is known to have Gold Mines in it, which might be wrought by our *Negroe* Slaves; and were we once fix'd here, we should command the whole Coast of *Chili*, if not that of *Peru*. It would not be possible for the *Spaniards*, tho' assisted by the Natives, to expell us from that important Island of *Chiloe*; and

as

as it lies between the Latitudes of 41 and 44 the Climate is not disagreeable to *British* Constitutions in point of Health and Convenience. All manner of *European* Grain and Fruits grow here, our Cattle multiply and improve to a Miracle, and it might be stock'd with them in a few Hours from the adjacent Continent if they were not to be met with there already.

But further. The Town of *Baldivia*, near which are the richest Gold Mines of *America*, lies almost in sight of the Island of *Chiloe*, and would infallibly fall into the Hands of the *English* if they were possess'd of that Island, there being no naval Power in those Seas that could protect that Port against us. And tho' I don't suppose the *Chilese* would willingly suffer us to open those Mines at first, yet were we once establish'd on the Continent, and supported by the Garrisons I propose to leave in *Chiloe*, and a Squadron of Men of War, we might traffick with the Natives, as the *Spaniards* do for the Gold they pick up, and possibly in time, by one Means or other, procure the Mines to be opened and wrought by our own *Negroes*; for the great Objection the Natives have against working them is, lest they should be put to that Drudgery themselves, as they formerly were by the *Spaniards*.

But I must confess there are some very considerable Objections against our attempting to plant Colonies on the Coast of *Peru* or *Chili*. As first, That it is a very long and hazardous Voyage of five or six Months, and if any Misfortune should happen by Tempests, or the Sickness of our Men, it would probably be defeated: That the *Dutch* actually attempted this, and fix'd themselves at *Baldivia*, and yet

Objections to the settling Colonies on the Coast of *Chili* consider'd.

Cuili  


were forced to relinquish it again: Nor have they ever thought fit to attempt it a second time, tho' they have frequently been at War with *Spain*.

It may be objected further, That neither the *French* or *Dutch* would sit still and see the *English* in possession of the Gold and Silver Mines of *America*, but would assist both the *Spaniards* and Natives in expelling us from thence.

As to the first, I do not think the Hazard so great as to deter us from attempting an Enterprize that would enrich the Nation to so great a Degree, and weaken our Enemies (as this Scheme supposes the *Spaniards* to be.) And as to the Miscarriage of the *Dutch* in the like Attempt, it is evident their Squadron and Land-Forces were too weak for such an Enterprize; and their losing their General, who projected it, was another great Disadvantage to them. But their principal Misfortune was his being succeeded by a Person that wanted Address, and gave the Natives such Jealousies of their Design to enslave them, as made them his Enemies. But what discourag'd the *Dutch* most from pursuing this Design, and making another Attempt, was a Suspicion very well founded, that neither the *French* or *English* would sit still and see them in possession of the Treasures of *Peru* and *Chili*.

And this is indeed the grand Objection against our attempting to fix Colonies there, and getting possession of the Gold and Silver Mines of *Peru* and *Chili*. The *French* and *Dutch* would no more permit us to be Masters of them than we should suffer either of those Nations to monopolize that Treasure: We are all agreed that they are much better in the Hands of the indolent

indolent unactive *Spaniard*, who makes but little use of them to the Prejudice of his Neighbours. Nay, most of the Plate he brings from *America* is employ'd in paying for the Merchandize of *Britain*, *France*, *Holland*, *Italy*, &c. which Countries perhaps have this way had as great a Profit, or a greater (at least some of them) than they could expect if they were Masters of the Mines. We should but send the same Goods to the *Spanish West-Indies* directly which we now send by the *Spanish Flota*: And had *Britain* as great a Share in that Traffick now as formerly, she would have no Reason to covet those Treasures; but unhappily for us, ever since the *French* used those Seas, and have had so good an Understanding with *Spain*, they have supplanted us, and we are now in a manner beaten out of that most valuable Branch of our Commerce, where for our Woollen Manufactures, which were dispersed all over *Spain* and *Spanish America*, we received chiefly Bullion in return: This Traffick is now in a manner lost to us, as we too sensibly feel at this Day.

And since we have lost the Affections and Trade of *Spain* in a great measure, and are never likely to recover them again by fair Means, the next best thing we can do is to render ourselves as formidable to the *Spaniards* as possible. It is certainly our Wisdom at this Day, if they persist to quarrel with us and insult our Merchants, to possess ourselves of some Port Towns, either on the Islands or Continent of *America*, that they may fear us, and be compel'd to admit us into a good Share of that Trade again, on Pain of seeing their own Commerce with *Mexico* and *Peru* interrupted and ruined; which I am apt to think  
might

Chili. might be more effectually done by planting Colonies and erecting Forts on the *Isthmus of Darien* than by any Settlements on the Coasts of the *South-Sea*; for the first would give us the Command both of the *North* and the *South-Seas*, and make us Masters of the Trade and Navigation both of *Mexico* and *Peru*. Not a *Spanish* Ship could stir either way if we had once fix'd ourselves on the *Isthmus of Darien*. We might then prescribe to the *Spaniards* what Goods they should take of us, and upon what Terms we pleased, which would be more to our Purpose than possessing the Mines of *Spanish America*, if that was feasible; for by this Means all our Handicrafts and Mechanicks would have full Employment, our Woollen Manufactures would be disposed of to the best Advantage, and the Commerce of our Neighbours with the *Spanish West-Indies* lessen'd in Proportion to the Increase of ours.

The Advantage of erecting Forts on the *Isthmus of Darien*.

Another Reason for planting Colonies on the *Isthmus of Darien* rather than on the Coasts of the *South-Sea* is, that the Voyage to *Darien* is but short, not above six Weeks or two Months, whereas that into the *South-Sea* is a Voyage of five or six Months, and in case of a Misfortune we have no friendly Port to sustain or refresh our People.

We have also the Island of *Jamaica* a little Distance from *Darien*, from whence our Garrisons might be supply'd with Arms, Ammunition and Provisions from time to time, and even with Men inur'd to the same Climate, and consequently not so subject to the Diseases of hot Countries as our Northern People are. Tho' it appears, that there are some Situations even upon the *Isthmus of Darien* that are agreeable to *Europeans*. The *Scots* actually found such

such a one when they erected their Fort of *New-Edinburgh*, which was naturally so strong that with a very small Force they could have maintain'd it against all the Power of *Spain*, if we had not inhumanly and impolitically deny'd them Provisions at *Jamaica* and other *English* Settlements.

I know every one will be apt to object the Misfortunes of Admiral *Hosier* and his Squadron to this Scheme. But that was a very different Case. They were oblig'd to lie before *Porto Bello*, the most unhealthful Place in *Spanish America*, for an unreasonable time, without going on Shore, or receiving any Refreshments from thence. The *Scots* fared much better, who pitch'd upon a Place, for aught appears, as healthful as any in *England*, and why we should not plant the same, or find out another as good, in case of a Rupture, I can't see. Nay, why we should not immediately endeavour it, since great Part of this Country is not under the Dominion of the *Spaniards*, I can see no manner of Reason. It would make them cautious how they disturb'd our Trade by their *Guard de Costa's*, and readier to make us Satisfaction for their repeated Depredations.





THE  
PRESENT STATE  
OF  
*LA PLATA*,  
OR  
*P A R A G U A*.

---

CHAP. I.

*Of the Name, Situation, and Extent of  
La Plata, and of the Face of the Coun-  
try.*

La Plata.

*Plata*, the  
Name.



THE Province of *La Plata*  
(sometimes call'd *Paragua*) re-  
ceiv'd its Name from the River  
*Plata*, which rising near the  
City of that Name in *Peru*,  
runs to the South-East through  
this Country.

Its Situati-  
on and  
Extent.

It is bounded by the Country of *Amazons*  
on the North, by *Brazil* on the East, by  
*Patagonia*

*Patagonia* on the South, and by *Peru* and *Chili* on the West, lying between the 12th and 37th Degrees of South Latitude, and between the 50th and 75th Degrees of Western Longitude, being about 550 in Length, from North to South, and near as many Leagues broad in the middle of it ; but towards the North, where it is bounded by *Brazil* on the East, and by *Peru* on the West, it is not 200 Leagues broad.

That Part of this Country which lies West of the great River *Paragua* consists of large Plains extending two or three hundred Leagues in Length, without any Trees, at least any thing that looks like Timber, and scarce a Hill or a Stone to be seen in them ; but in the Country to the Eastward of that River which borders on *Brazil*, there is a Variety of Hills and Valleys, Woods and Champaign.







## C H A P. II.

Of the Seas, Lakes, Springs, Rivers,  
and Seasons of La Plata.

La Plata.  
Seas.



HIS is for the most part an in-land Country, and only borders upon the *Atlantick Ocean* on the South Side of the Mouth of the River *La Plata*, near which the City of *Buenos Ayres* is situated.

Lakes.

Lakes they have in great Abundance, and some of them very large, particularly that of *Xarayes*, which our Geographers place in 15 Degrees South Latitude, and out of which the great River *Paragua* is said to rise.

There is another call'd the Lake of *Venoras*, in 31 Degrees South Latitude, about eighty Miles West of the River *Paragua*; and a third call'd *Caracaroës*, in 30 Degrees, 20 Leagues East of the River *Paragua*, which is an hundred Miles in Length and upwards; but there are not many Springs in the flat Country.

Rivers.

The Sources of their Rivers are some of them in the Mountains of *Andes*: those that rise there run to the South-East, and fall into the great River *Paragua*: Others rise in the Hills which separate this Province from *Brazil*, and running South-West, fall into the same River *Paragua*, which rises, as has been said, out of the Lake *Xarayes*, in 15 Degrees, and running almost directly South, unites its Waters with the *Uràgua*, in 34 Degrees; after which

*Paragua*  
River.

which it is call'd the River of *Plata* till it reaches the *Atlantick Ocean*. La Plata.

2. As to that which is properly call'd the River of *Plata*, it rises, as has been observ'd, near the Town of *La Plata* in *Peru*, and running to the South-East, falls into the River *Paragua*, in 28 Degrees South Latitude, after which it loses the Name of *Plata*, and the united Stream is call'd *The Paragua* till it meets with the River *Uragua*, and then it resumes the Name of *Plata* again till it discharges itself into the Ocean. Plata River.

This River is said to have obtain'd its Name of *Plata* upon a double Account, 1. Because it rises near the Town of *La Plata*; and, 2. Because the Plate is sometimes brought down this Stream from *Peru* to *Buenos Ayres*.

3. The third considerable River is that of *Uragua*, which rising in the Mountains that divide *Brazil* from this Province, runs almost due South till it unites its Waters with the *Paragua*, in 34 Degrees South Latitude, and is almost as large as that River, being navigable for Ships several hundred Miles. Uragua River.

4. Out of the same Mountains to the Northward rises the River *Parana*, another very large Stream, which running almost parallel to the former, falls into the *Paragua* in 28 Degrees South Latitude. Parana River.

5. The fifth River I shall mention is the *Salado* River *Salado*, so named from the Saltiness of its Waters. This River rises in the *Andes*, and running to the South-East falls into the *Paragua* in 33 Degrees South Latitude.

6. The River *Tercero*, which rises in the Mountains of *Andes*, and running almost due East, falls into the *Paragua* in 34 Degrees, not far from the Town of *Spirito Santo*. Tercero River.

La Plata.



There are a multitude of other Rivers both on the East and West of this Province which fall into the great River *Paragua*, and so fertilize the Plains that they abound in good Meadow and Pasture Grounds, which feed innumerable Herds of *European* Cattle, viz. Horses, Cows, Sheep and Goats, which, from a few of each Species that were carry'd thither by the *Spaniards* two hundred Years ago, are multiply'd to Admiration.

Seasons.

Periodical  
Storms  
and Floods

As to the Seasons, the North Part of this Country, which lies within the Tropick of Capricorn, has in *November* and *December* annually, when the Sun is vertical, very heavy Rains, Storms and Tempests, as other Countries which lie in the same Latitude within the Southern Tropick have: And at this time all the flat Country is over-flow'd, their Cisterns and Reservoirs of Water are replenish'd, which serve them the rest of the Year till the Rains return: Their Lands are moisten'd and made capable of Tillage, and whenever these Rains fail it occasions a Famine amongst them: The Beginning of the rainy Season is the time of sowing and planting, and the fair Season, which follows upon the Retreat of the Sun to the Northward, is their Harvest.

But directly contrary, in that Part of the Country which lies South of the Tropick of Capricorn, it is their Summer (their fair Season, when the Sun is nearest them, viz.) in *November*, *December*, and *January*: And those Rivers which rise within the Tropicks, particularly *La Plata*, *Paragua*, and *Parana*, after the Rains are fallen within the Tropicks, swell and overflow their Banks as they pass through the South Part of this Country, rendering it as fruitful as the *Nile* does *Egypt*; and indeed

indeed this is the Case in almost every Part <sup>La Plata.</sup> of the World where their Rivers rise within the Tropicks ; the periodical Rains swell them, and occasion them to over-flow their Banks, so that the flat Country near their Mouths appears like a Sea, and as the Water goes off the Husbandman begins to sow and plant his Lands, which are render'd exceeding fruitful by the Inundation ; whereas without this it would be impossible for him to raise a Crop in many Places. Their Plains are so exceeding hot and dry, and there falls so little Rain in the Countries which lie just without the Tropicks, as this and *Egypt* does, that they would produce scarce any thing if they wanted these annual Floods : And I am apt to think it is when these are at the height, that the Mouth of the River of *Plata* appears to be two or three hundred Miles broad ; for the same thing happens annually near the Mouth of the River *Niger* in *Africa*, near the Mouth of the *Ganges* in the *East-Indies*, and at the Mouth of every River almost that has its Source within the Tropicks, where the Rain falls in vast Quantities whenever the Sun is vertical.





## C H A P. III.

*Of the Provinces, chief Towns, and Buildings of La Plata.*

La Plata.

Provinces.



*A Plata* may be thrown into two grand Divisions almost equal in Extent, viz. 1. The Provinces on the East Side of the River *Paragua*; and 2. Those that lie West of the said River.

The Provinces on the East Side of the *Paragua* are those of, 1. *Paragua Proper*. 2. *Guayra*. 3. *Parana*. 4. *Uragua*. Those on the West Side of the *Paragua* are, 5. *Tucuman*; and 6. *La Plata Proper*.

*Paragua*  
Province.

1. *Paragua Proper* is bounded by the Country of the *Amazons* on the North, by *Brazil* on the East, by *Guayra* on the South, and by the River *Paragua*, which separates it from *Tucuman* and *Peru*, on the West; at least these are the Boundaries assign'd by Geographers. But it must be acknowledg'd that *Paragua Proper* is a perfect *Terra Incognita*. I meet with no Author or Traveller that pretends to give any Description of it, or to know the Extent of it: And our Map-makers are so ingenious as not to incur their Maps with the Name of one Town in all the Country.

*Guayra*  
Province  
and Town.

2. *Guayra* is bounded by *Paragua Proper* on the North, by *Brazil* on the East, by *Parana* on the South, and by the River *Paragua* on the West. The chief Towns whereof are,

1<sup>st</sup>, *Guayra*,

## of L A P L A T A.

175

1<sup>st</sup>, *Guayra*, situate on the River *Parana*, <sup>La Plata</sup> in 24 Degrees South Latitude.

2<sup>dly</sup>, *St. Xavier*, situate on the Confines of *St. Xavier* *Brazil*, about an hundred Leagues to the Town. Eastward of *Guayra*.

3<sup>dly</sup>, *Conception*, situate on a River about an hundred Leagues South-West of *St. Xavier*. <sup>Conception</sup> Town.

3. The Province of *Parana* is bounded by that *Parana* of *Guayra* on the North, by *Brazil* on the Province. East, by the Province of *Uragua* on the South, and by *La Plata Proper* on the West. The chief Towns whereof are,

1<sup>st</sup>, *Acarai*, situated in 26 Degrees South *Acarai* Latitude, at the Mouth of a small River which Town. falls into the *Parana*.

2<sup>dly</sup>, *Ignatio*, situated on the South Side of *Ignatio* the River *Parana*, in 30 Degrees 30 Minutes <sup>Ignatio</sup> Town. South Latitude.

3<sup>dly</sup>, *Itapoa*, situated to the Northward. of *Itapoa* the River *Parana*, in 27 Degrees South Town. Latitude.

4. The Province of *Uragua*, bounded by *Uragua* the Province of *Guayra* on the North, by Province. *Brazil* on the East, by the River *Plata* and *Paragua* on the South and West. The chief Towns whereof are,

1<sup>st</sup>, *Purification*, situate on the River *Ura-* <sup>Purificati-</sup> *gua*, in 29 Degrees South Latitude. on Town.

2<sup>dly</sup>, *La Capia*, or *Tapia*, situate on the East <sup>Tapia</sup> Side of the River *Paragua*, in 32 Degrees odd Town. Minutes South Latitude.

5. The Province of *Tucuman* (in which I <sup>Tucuman</sup> include that of *Charco*) bounded by *Peru* on Province. the North, by the River *Paragua* and *La Plata Proper* on the East, by *La Plata Proper* on the South, and by *Chili* on the West. The chief Towns whereof are,

1<sup>st</sup>, *St.*

La Plata.

St. Jago  
Town.

1<sup>st</sup>, *St. Jago de Ibero*, situate almost in the middle of the Province in 29 Degrees South Latitude, being a Bishop's See and University, the Capital of *Tucuman*, and lies in the midway between the Mines of *Potosi* and *Buenos Ayres*, being about 250 Leagues from each. The Plate is brought from *Potosi* hither on the Backs of Mules, the Country of the *Charcas*, which lies to the Northward of this Province, being very mountainous ; but from *St. Jago* to *Buenos Ayres* the Plate is carry'd in Waggon's over one continued Plain, in which there are neither Woods or Hills to be seen.

Cordua.

2<sup>dly</sup>, *Cordua*, or *Corduba*, is situated about an hundred Leagues South of *St. Jago*, on the Road to *Buenos Ayres*. It is a Bishop's See, and University, and has several fine Convents in it, but the Jesuites infinitely excells all the rest. As the Inhabitants trade chiefly to *Peru* and *Chili*, and take Gold and Silver in Return for their Merchandize, they are vastly rich, and the Clergy still richer than the Laity : Their Churches and Monasteries are magnificently built and adorned.

Salta.

3<sup>dly</sup>, *Salta* is situated on the Road from *St. Jago* to *Potosi*, almost in the midway.

La Plata  
Proper.

6. The Province of *La Plata Proper* is bounded by the River *Plata* towards the North, by the River *Paragua* and the *Atlantick Ocean* on the East, by *Patagonia* on the South, and by *Chili* and *Tucuman* on the West. The chief Towns whereof are,

Buenos  
Ayres.

1<sup>st</sup>, *Buenos Ayres*, said to be so named from its healthful Situation. It stands on the South Side of the River *La Plata*, 50 Leagues from the Mouth of it, in 36 Degrees South Latitude, and in 60 Degrees of Western Longitude, the  
River

River *La Plata* being seven Leagues broad at this Town, and navigable for Ships twenty Miles higher, but there they meet with a *Cateract* that spoils the Navigation. *Buenos Ayres* is a Bishop's See; there are in it five Churches besides the Cathedral, and several Convents, and it is defended by a Castle regularly fortify'd with upwards of forty Guns mounted on the Walls. It is a very great Mart, for hither all *European* Merchandize is brought, and sent from hence to *Peru* and *Chili*; and hither great Numbers of *Negroes* also are brought and sold to *Peru* and *Chili*, which Traffick the *English* have the Advantage of at present by virtue of the *Assiento Contract*, and Lands are assign'd them to keep their *Negroes* upon till they meet with a Sale. From *Buenos Ayres* are exported to *Europe* Part of the Gold and Silver of *Peru*, with vast Quantities of Hides and Tallow, and such other Merchandize as this Part of *America* affords.

2dly, *Santa Fe*, or *St. Faith*, a well-built Town, situate in 32 Degrees odd Minutes South Latitude, at the Conflux of the Rivers *Salado* and *Paragua*, being almost furrounded with their Waters, and lies between two and three hundred Miles North-West from *Buenos Ayres* on the Road to *Peru*.

3dly, *Assumption*, situate in 25 Degrees odd Minutes, at the Conflux of the Rivers *La Plata* and *Paragua*, between four or five hundred Miles North of *Santa Fe*. It is said to be a well-built populous Town, and the See of a Bishop Suffragan to the Archbishop of *La Plata* in *Peru*. As to the Natives, before the *Spaniards* came amongst them, they lived in Tents or slight Hutts, wandering from Place to Place like the wild *Arabs*. But this is to  
Vol. XXX. Z be



*La Plata.* be understood of those that inhabited the Plains on the West Side of the great River *Uragua*. Those that dwelt on the East Side of the River lived in Woods or Caves; but neither the one or the other had any thing like a Town amongst them till the *Spaniards* taught, or rather compel'd them to alter their Way of Life.

The Jesuites, who are now in a manner Sovereigns of that Part of the Country which lies between *Brazil* on the East, and the great River *Paragua* on the West, boast of their having reduced these savage Nations to Civility, and made Christians of them purely by their Preaching. Certain it is, they govern them absolutely both in Spirituals and Temporals. There is no Place in the World where the People express a more profound Submission to their Superiors. Among other things the Jesuites relate, that they have prevail'd on them to abandon their brutish and vagrant way of Life, and dwell in Towns and Cantons, as the Missionaries call them, the Situation whereof is always chosen and assign'd them by these Fathers. And as the flat Country near the Rivers is annually over-flow'd (as has been related already) and yet in the dry Season it is absolutely necessary to have their Habitation near some Water, as well on account of their Plantations and Husbandry, there being the greatest Increase where the Inundation has been, as also for the Conveniency of Water Carriage, and an easy Communication with the several Cantons: For these and many other Reasons, the Fathers pitch upon some fair Eminence on the Side of a Lake or River where they have Plenty of Wood, and here they lay out a Town after the *Spanish* Model, that is, they first form a Square, on the Side of which usually

The *Indi-*  
an Towns.

usually stands a handsome Church, their Schools, the Father's House, who presides in the Canton, and the Halls and Offices of their Courts of Justice, and from the Square run broad handsome Streets of a great Length, having other Streets crossing them where the Canton is large. La Plata.

Father *Sepp* informs us, that they have twenty-six of these Cantons on the Banks of the Rivers *Uragua* and *Parana*, each of them containing eight hundred or a thousand Houses, and seven or eight thousand Souls, under the Government of two Missionaries. The Church of each Canton is usually built of Brick or Stone, and has a lofty Steeple, containing four or five Bells. It is as richly furnish'd and adorn'd with Plate, Vestments, and Utensils as the *Spanish* Churches in *Europe*: And besides the High-altar, they have frequently several Side-altars and Chappels. They have also Organs, Trumpets, Hautboys, Violins, and other instrumental Musick, and some exceeding good Voices; so that few Cathedrals are better accommodated than the Churches of these Cantons. Buildings.

The Father further relates, that the Station allotted him was the Canton of *Japegu*, the first of the twenty-six converted Cantons, situated on an Eminence near the River *Uragua*, in 29 Degrees South Latitude, in a Place formed for Pleasure and Delight; for to the Eastward of it runs that noble River, the Banks whereof are planted with large Timber Trees for several hundred Leagues, and there are some Islands in it lying in view of the Canton, which he describes as a perfect Paradise. On this River and the Islands in it, says the Father, I frequently take the Air,

La Plata. attended by my Disciples and a numerous Band of Musick. On the South-West and North the Canton is surrounded with the most fruitful Pastures in the World, of a vast Extent, and stock'd with incredible Numbers of *European* Cattle; Venison also is in great Plenty, such as Deer, wild Goats, and *Indian* Sheep; and they do not want Partridges, Pidgeons, and other Fowls wild and tame. They have also Shoals of excellent Fish in their Rivers.

But notwithstanding the pleasant and advantageous Situation of these *Indian* Towns thus laid out by the Jesuites, the Buildings were generally mean at first. A Brick and Tiled House was very rare. The Materials were usually Thatch and Clay, and one Room serv'd the whole Family: Here they lay promiscuously, some on the Skins of Beasts on the Floor, and others in Hammocks of Net-work; their Kitchen Utensils being only some few Pots, Pans, and Calabashes, with Wooden Spits, and Gridirons, on which they dry'd rather than broil'd their Meat.

But the Father tells us they begin to improve both in their Buildings and Furniture since the Jesuites have taught them to make Tiles, and instructed them in other mechanick Arts. He had in his Canton particularly six long Streets, the Houses whereof were cover'd with Tiles.



# CHAP. IV.

*Of the Persons and Habits of the Inhabitants of La Plata ; their Genius and Temper, Food, Exercises, and Diversions ; and of their Mechanick Arts.*



IN this Country, as in every La Plata. other Part of *South-America* almost, the first Discoverers were pleas'd to affirm the Natives were Giants and Canibals, tho' we meet with neither of them here at this Day. Father *Sepp* is perfectly silent in the Article of Canibals ; tho' he lived long amongst them, and mentions the rest of the Food they eat : And as to their Persons <sup>Persons.</sup> he relates, that they are so far from being of a gigantick Stature, that they are not so tall as the *Europeans*. However, he describes them to be big boned, strong, well-set Men, and their Legs usually pretty thick : That their Faces are Flat, and rather round than oval, and their Complexion olive : That they have black Hair as strong as Horse-hair, which they wear very long before they are converted, <sup>Habits.</sup> but then the Fathers oblige them to cut it shorter : That those who have not yet conformed to the *Spanish* Customs, wear only the Skin of some Beast about the middle of their Bodies ; and the better Sort have another Skin which serves for a Cloak or Mantle ; the ordinary Women have their

*La Plata.* their Arms, Shoulders and Breasts bare, and no Covering on their Heads but their Hair, which they wear of an immoderate Length, Their Ornaments are glittering Fish Bones, which they wear in their Ears and about their Necks and Arms in Chains, and their Chiefs have a kind of tripple Crowns upon their Heads, Boys and Girls go perfectly naked.

*Genius and Temper.* They seem to be a brave People, having defeated several considerable Bodies of *Spaniards* when they first invaded their Country.

It was a great many Years before the *Spaniards* could fix themselves even in the Plains: But in the Woods and Mountains, to the Eastward of the River *Uragua*, the Natives defended themselves so well that they were never subdued, till the Jesuites found Means in the last Century to insinuate themselves into their good Opinion, and in a manner wheedled them into a Submission without making use of Force.

*Food.* The same Father *Sepp* informs us, that their principal Food is *Turky* or *Indian* Corn, which they beat to Flower in a Mortar and boil with Flesh, or make Cakes of it on the Hearth: That they eat all manner of Fish, Flesh, and Fowl, and are the greatest Gluttons in the World: That they are extreme lazy and indolent, and dull at Invention, but will imitate almost any thing you give them a Pattern of: That several of them are lately become such excellent Mechanicks that they make Organs and other musical Instruments as good as those that are brought from *Europe*; others are Watch-makers, Painters and Musicians, in all which Arts they have been instructed by the Jesuite Missionaries, who are taught the mechanick as well as liberal Arts before they are sent abroad, that they may have an Opportunity of rendering

*Excellent Mechanicks.*

rendering themselves useful and agreeable to La Plata. every Class of Men, and without which they could never have propagated their Superstition with that Success in every Kingdom almost upon the Face of the Earth. But this they have done no where with such Success as here where the Country is their Property, and may justly be stil'd *The Jesuites earthly Paradise*.

The Exercises and Diversions of these People are at present either rural Sports, such as Hunting, Fishing and Fowling, or Dancing and Feasting, as in other Countries: But their principal Diversion, or rather Business, before the *Spaniards* brought them to remain in fix'd Habitations, was to rove about the Country from Place to Place, and view new Scenes every Day they lived.





## C H A P. V.

*Of their Husbandry, Plants, Animals,  
and Minerals.*

La Plata.

Husbandry.

Corn.



THEY have a wooden Plow which does not enter the Ground above three Inches deep, and yet they have usually a very plentiful Crop however of *Turky* or *Indian* Corn. The Missionary of every Canton has commonly forty or fifty Acres sown with *European* Wheat, and frequently gives his *Indian* Disciples enough to sow their Grounds and make Provision for their Families ; but instead of putting it to that Use, they usually devour it as soon as they have it. The Father adds, It may truly be said of these *Indians*, that they follow our SAVIOUR's Rule, *Not to be concerned for the next Day* ; for if I happen to allot a Cow to a Family enough to serve them three or four Days (says he) they will often eat her in one and come the next Morning for more ; so that we are forc'd to give to the Father, Mother, Son, and Daughter, and to the young Children to each his Piece of Flesh of five, six, seven, nay eight Pound, and that twice a Day ; for if they had it at once they would eat it all at Noon, and want more by Night ; for they are so voracious that the Mother will snatch the Meat from her Child, and eat all that comes in sight of them : For which Reason each Missionary has a great Barn, into which he

he forces them to lay up a certain Proportion of Corn, which he gives them back at Seed-time: Notwithstanding which they sometimes deceive the Missionary, or rather themselves. It is to be observ'd, that their Seed-time is in *June* or *July*, when the Missionary allots each *Indian* two or three Oxen to plow withal. One of these *Indians*, after a quarter of an Hour's Plowing, began to grow weary of the Sport, and finding himself and his Wife very hungry, they agreed to kill one of the Oxen, which they did accordingly, and having quarter'd the Ox (as they usually do) they put the Flesh on a wooden Spit, and (for want of other Fuel) made a good Fire with the Plow, throwing into it some of the Suet to increase the Flame: And thus they roasted and eat it. The Missionary perceiving the Smoak in the Field, began shrewdly to suspect the Truth, and making the best of his way to the Field, he soon saw by the Bones that he had not been mistaken in his Guess. He fell to chiding the *Indian*, who gave no other Answer, but that he being both tir'd and hungry he had made bold with the Ox, begging the good Father to give him another, which he was oblig'd to do, unless he would see him and his Family want Bread all the Year after. Such things often happen to the Missionaries, these *Indians* being naturally so lazy, that often (unless compel'd thereunto by Blows) they will not carry-in their *Turkey* Wheat when it is ripe.


You wonder, perhaps, which way they can be compel'd by Blows: This is done in the same Manner as we do our Children, only that instead of Birch they make use of a Scourge: This is perform'd by some *Indian* or other, who gives the Delinquent twenty-four or more



La Plata. Strokes, according to the Missionary's Order: This Correction they take very patiently, without any cursing or swearing, nay, without making the least Noise; and if they happen to make any Exclamations, it is by the Name of *Jesu Maria*. The Correction being over, they kiss the Missionary's Hand, and return him Thanks into the Bargain, their Love and Respect being such towards their Missionaries, that they take every thing without the least Regret at their hands; which being imprinted in them from their tender Age, they can never shake off afterwards.

Fruits. As to their Fruits and Kitchen Gardens, Father *Sepp* gives us the best Account of them I meet with, in the Description of his own Gardens in the Canton of *Japega*. Next to my Apartment, says that Father, I have a Garden divided into several Partitions, one whereof is my Flower-Garden, another my Physick-Garden (for they know not what a Physician or Apothecary means) another my Kitchen-Garden, besides an Orchard and Vineyard. In the Kitchen-Garden grow all the Year round divers sorts of Sallad, Herbs, Endive curl'd and not curl'd, Cichory-Roots, Parsnips, Turnips, Spinage, Radishes, Cabbages, Carrots, Beet-Roots, Parsly, Aniseed, Fennel-feed, Coriander-feed, Melons, Cucumbers, and divers sorts of *Indian* Roots. In my Physick-Garden I have Mint, Rue, Rosemary, Pimpernel, sweet Marjoram, &c. My Flower-Garden produces white Lillies, *Indian* Lillies, yellow and blue Violets, Poppies, and many sorts of *Indian* Flowers.

In my Orchard I have Apple and Pear Trees and Hazel-nut Trees; but these two last will bear no Fruit here, tho' they grow very lofty;  
Peaches,

Peaches, Pomegranates, sweet and fower <sup>La Plata.</sup>  
Lemons, sweet and fower Citrons, Vaninceys,   
and divers other *Indian* Fruits.

My Vineyard has so many Vines, that sometimes it may produce five hundred large Casks of Wine in one Year, but this Year I have scarce had Grapes enough for my Table; the Reason is the vast Number of Pismires, Wasps, wild Pidgeons, and other Birds, which have devoured all, tho' I have constantly kept eight *Indian* Boys on purpose to cleanse them of the Pismires: Add to this the North Wind, which has blown continually all this Year. A slender Recompence for the Pains I have taken in pruning, shaving, and attending the Vines; but Patience.

However, these frequent Miscarriages of the Vines make Wine here a dear Commodity, a Cask being sold sometimes for twenty or thirty Crowns, a great Price for such an unwholsome Wine as this, which is not to be preserv'd without a great deal of Lime, without which it would turn to Vinegar in a little time. This makes us use the Wine very sparingly, and sometimes we have scarce any in fix Months, it being so scarce that we shall not have enough for the Communion Table.

He relates also, that in the Plains on the West Side of the River *Uragua*, and particularly between the City of *Buenos Ayres* and *St. Jago*, there is not a Tree to be seen fit for Timber or Fuel of the natural Growth of the Country; but that the *Spaniards* have of late Years planted such Abundance of Peaches, Almonds and Figs, that there are now vast Woods of them, which serve for Fuel at *Buenos Ayres* and other *Spanish* Towns: On the contrary, that the Country to the Eastward of the <sup>No Wood in the hilly Country.</sup>

*La Plata.* River *Paragua*, has large Woods and Forests well replenish'd with Timber, extending several hundred Leagues on both Sides the River *Uragua*, and that they have the finest Pastures and Meadows in the World, both in the East and Western Parts of *La Plata*; however, there is no mowing of Grass, or making of Hay here, because their Cattle feed all the Year up to the Knees in Grass.

They have also whole Fields of Cotton, but no Hemp or Flax growing in the Country, which makes Linnen excessive dear.

Beasts.

They had no great Stock of Cattle before the *Spaniards* imported *European* Animals; the principal were their *Indian* Sheep, Goats, Swine, and Deer, already describ'd, with a sort of Hares, Armadillo's, and other *American* Animals, already describ'd in treating of *Mexico* and *Peru*; but the *European* Cattle are so vastly increased of late Years in *La Plata*, that there is scarce a Canton which has less than three or four thousand Horses and Mules, with black Cattle in Proportion, and thirty or forty thousand *European* Sheep in some of them: They abound also in Hogs, Goats, and Poultry, and have Plenty of Fish in their Rivers.

The same Father assures us, that they see sometimes fourteen or fifteen thousand Oxen feeding together that have no particular Owner, but any one sends, and takes what he pleases: And that the *Jesuites* at *Buenos Ayres* sold at one time, to the Shipping that came thither, twenty thousand tall Oxen for twelve thousand Crowns, which were valued only for their Hides, their Carcases being devour'd by wild Dogs or Birds of Prey.

In another Place the Father relates, that his Canton sent out a Party of *Indians* two Days Journey

Journey into the Country, who within two Months brought in fifty thousand Cows, which were to serve for Provisions for the Canton the following Year ; for they eat Cows Flesh altogether, and kill the Bulls only for their Skins, there being no Oxen properly so call'd in that Country. He adds, that the three Ships he went over with carry'd back to *Spain* thirty thousand Bulls Hides, without any Cows Skins amongst them : And these they had for little or nothing ; tho' every Skin would make six Crowns in *Spain*, so prodigiously are *European* Cattle multiply'd in *La Plata* : And 'tis observ'd, that one Sheep is more valued there than three Horses, on account of their Wool ; for a good Horse may be purchas'd for a Knife of the Value of Six-pence, and a Bridle is of more Value than three Horses, and a Horse-shoe is worth six Horses ; but they seldom shoe their Horses here on account of the Scarcity of Iron, nor do they much need it, the Turf or Surface of the Ground being very soft, and few Stones in the Country.

As to Minerals, it is certain there are few or none in the Plains or flat Country, and tho' 'tis reported the Jesuites have discover'd some Gold Mines in the Mountains that divide *La Plata* from *Brazil*, those Fathers do not acknowledge there are any. Minerals.



## C H A P. VI.

*Contains an Abstract of the History of La Plata, and treats of the Religion of its ancient and modern Inhabitants, and of their Marriages.*

La Plata.

History.



THE Natives of *La Plata* were divided into a multitude of Tribes commanded by their respective Chiefs, they knew nothing of the general History or State of their Country when the *Spaniards* arriv'd: And what they receiv'd by Tradition relating to their particular Clans could be very little relied on as they were not acquainted with Letters, and had no way of recording the Actions of their Ancestors. All that we know of their History is, that those on the West Side of the River *Paragua* lived a wandering Life like the *Arabs*, and those on the East Side of that River in Caves: That the *Spaniards* and *Portuguese* made several Attempts in vain to subdue the Inhabitants of the Plains from *Brazil* and the Mouth of the River *La Plata*, in which they met with very great Opposition and Losses till the *Spanish* Governors of *Peru* and *Chili* attack'd them from the West, and then they made a complete Conquest of that Country.

The first Adventurer that penetrated into this Country was *Alexius Garcia*, a *Portuguese*,  
who

who was sent upon that Enterprize by the Governor of *Brazil*, in the Year 1524. He march'd quite cross *La Plata*, as far as the Borders of *Peru*, where having amass'd a vast Quantity of Plate, he was cut off in his Return with most part of his Men; and *George Sedenbo*, with sixty *Portuguese*, having been sent out to support him before the Death of *Garcia* was known, was also cut in pieces by the *Indians* with all his Party.

In the Year 1526, *Sebastian Cabot* being employ'd to make a further Discovery of *South-America* by the Emperor *Charles V.* enter'd the Mouth of the River *La Plata* (first discover'd by *John Diaz de Solis*, in the Year 1515) and sailing up that River as far as the Place where *Garcia* was kill'd, there met with the Plate he had got on the Confines of *Peru*, which he purchas'd of the Natives, who did not know the Value of it, for a Trifle, and imagining it to be the Product of that Country, concluded he had made a very important Discovery. Whereupon he erected a Fort on the North Side of the River, near the Place where the Town of *Assumption* now stands; he also detach'd *Alvaro Ramon* with one of his Ships to sail up the River *Uragua*, and get further Intelligence of the Mines he supposed were to be found near the Banks of it; but *Ramon* having proceeded three Days in that Voyage, his Ship run a-ground, and he and all his People were cut off by the Natives. After which Accident, *Cabot* remov'd from that Shore, and built another Fort on the South Side of the River of *Plata*, where the Town of *Spirito Sancto* now stands, and leaving a Garrison of one hundred and twenty Men in it, he return'd to *Spain* for a Re-inforcement of Troops

La Plata. Troops to prosecute his Discoveries: But the Natives surpris'd the Fort soon after he was gone, and put the Garrison to the Sword:

However, *Cabot* representing to the Court of *Spain* that *Plata* was one of the richest Countries in the World, and bringing so much Plate and Treasure along with him as sufficiently confirm'd his Report in the Opinion of the *Spaniards*, several of the best Families of that Kingdom made Interest to be sent on an Expedition thither. Whereupon a Body of two and twenty hundred Landmen, besides Mariners, were embark'd for the River of *Plata*, among whom, it is said, there were thirty Heirs of noble Families, the whole being commanded by *Don Peter de Mendoza*, the Emperor's Sewer, who arriving at the Mouth of the River *La Plata*, founded the Town of *Buenos Ayres*, in the Year 1535, but not without great Opposition from the Natives, for they attack'd a Body of three hundred *Spaniards*, commanded by *James Mendoza*, the Governor's Brother, and kill'd him with two hundred and fifty of his Men upon the spot; and Provisions growing very scarce at the same time, the Governor thought fit to return to *Spain*, leaving *Oyola* his Deputy Governor behind him with Part of the Troops. But *Oyola* thought fit to abandon *Buenos Ayres*, and built the Fort of *Assumption*, on the North Side of the River *Plata*, whither he remov'd with his half-starv'd Garrison. The Governor *Alvaro Nunez Cabeza de Vaca* afterwards made further Discoveries, planting Colonies as far as the North of *Tucuman*, and he and his Successor rebuilt *Buenos Ayres* and some other Towns near the Mouth of the River *La Plata*: And in 1553, *Francis de Aquire* being detach'd from *Chili* with two hundred

hundred Men by *Valdivia*, built the City of *La Plata*. *St. Jago*, the Metropolis of *La Plata*; and two Years afterwards *John Gomez Zarita* was sent from *Chili* to *La Plata* with another Body of Troops, who built the Town of *Cordua*, and made an entire Conquest of all the Country as far as the River *Paragua*; but the Provinces to the Eastward of that River were never conquer'd by Force, but reduc'd, as has been said, by the Address of the Jesuites under the Dominion of the Crown of *Spain*; and that Court, in return for this Service, confer'd the Property of that Country on those Fathers. If it be demanded how the Jesuites were able to effect this, I have already intimated, that they are instructed in every Art and Science when they are sent upon these Missions. They don't only understand Physick and the Mathematicks, but almost every mechanick Art, by which Means they become exceeding useful where they reside. Their administering Physick *gratis* infinitely obliges the People, and by their Skill in Mathematicks they surprize the ignorant Natives, who are ready to adore them as Gods, and readily resign their Understandings and Consciences to their Direction. But what prevail'd still more on these People to submit to the Jesuites was, the Protection they gave them against the *Spanish* Officers and Soldiers, and preventing their imposing on them those rigorous Services they did on other *Indians* under their Government. They even furnish'd the Natives with Arms and Ammunition, and instructed them in the Art of War, whereby they were enabled to repel the Attacks both of the *Spaniards* from the West, and of the *Portuguese* from *Brazil* on the East, who harass'd their Country for several Years till they

Qualifications of the Jesuite Missionaries.



La Plata.

~~~~~

Religion  
of the  
Natives,  
according  
to *Techo*.

found they had so formidable an Enemy to deal with that they lost more than they got by their Incurfions into *La Plata*; and the Jesuites and their Subjects who inhabit one of the finest Countries in the World between the River *Paragua* and *Brazil*, have of late Years enjoy'd an uninterrupted Peace in the greatest Affluence and Plenty imaginable.

As to the Religion of the Natives of *La Plata*, if we are to credit *Techo* the Jesuite, he relates, that they worshipp'd the Sun, Moon, and Stars, and Thunder and Lightning, as the *Peruvians* did, and had Temples dedicated to the Sun; which is not at all improbable, since this Country is contiguous to *Peru*, and Part of it was under the Dominion of their *Inca's*; and in some Parts of the Country, the Jesuites relate, they worship'd Trees, Stones, Rivers, Animals, and almost every thing animate and inanimate; which likewise may be true, because other Nations in *South-America* have done the like. But as to the great Serpent the Fathers tell us of, that was as big about as an Ox, and one of the Objects of their Adoration, we may without Offence suspend our Belief of such Relations till we find it prov'd that there ever were any such Monsters on the Face of the Earth.

But whatever the ancient Religion of *La Plata* was, the People are now in general as good Catholicks as the Jesuites can make them, and the most obedient Vassals of that Order.

Marriages  
according  
to Father  
*Sepp*.

As to the Marriages of these *Indians*, anciently they allow'd both of Poligamy and Concubinage, and the greatest Objection they have to Christianity the Fathers inform us is, their confining them to one Woman. At present the Jesuites have the entire Direction of this Matter: And Father *Sepp* tells us, when

a Virgin is fourteen and a Lad sixteen, they do not suffer them to remain longer unmarried for fear of worse Consequences, having found by Experience, that when the Maidens and young Men continue in a single State for any considerable time, they have found Means to pair themselves. The Objection which in other Places is made against such young Marriages takes no place here, where there is no Dispute about Dowry or Settlements, or which way they will maintain themselves; all this they leave to God Almighty and our Care (says this Father) never applying themselves to any Trade or Profession unless we oblige them to it, and upon the Marriage it is the Missionary that provides the Hutt, it is he that provides the Wedding-Cloaths, viz. five Yards of coarse Woollen Stuff for each; a Bed they never want, Bull-Hides being cheap enough; and the Wedding Dinner is made with a fat Cow, which is likewise presented by the Missionary.

Their Marriage Agreement consists only in two Articles, viz. The Woman promises to fetch what Water the Husband wants from the River, in lieu of which he engages to furnish the Kitchen with Fuel. We allow them no Musick nor Dancing at their Weddings, but so soon as they are marry'd and have heard Mass, the Bridegroom goes his way and the Bride her's: And if the Missionary has presented them with a fat Cow, a little Salt, and a few Loaves, they invite their Parents to Dinner, and so make the best Cheer they can. There is one thing peculiar in their Marriages, viz. that here the Man does not woo the Woman, but on the contrary the Woman the Man: In this Case the Maid comes to the Missionary

La Plata.

and says, *Pay, i. e.* Father (for so they call us) I have an Inclination to marry such or such a one, if you will be pleased to give your Consent. Whereupon the Missionary sending for the Person, says, My Son (for so we call them) such or such a one is desirous to be marry'd to you, are you contented she should? unto which if he replies *Yes* (as they seldom do otherwise) then the Match is made, and wants nothing but the Priest's Blessing.



THE



THE  
PRESENT STATE  
OF THE  
*A M A Z O N S.*



THE Country of the *Amazons* Amazons. obtain'd its Name from a sup-  
pos'd Nation of Female War- Name  
riours that were said to inhabit of the  
the Banks of one of the greatest Country.  
Rivers in the World, which  
runs through this Country from West to East.  
There is not a Circumstance, related by the  
Ancients of the *Asiatick Amazons* which has  
not been applied to these by the Moderns, tho'  
all the Ground there was for these Fictions  
seems to have been, that there were seen some  
Women mingled with the Men that came to  
gaze on the *Spaniards* when they first invaded  
their Country.

And here it is not easy to avoid reflecting  
how exactly the first *Spanish* Adventurers  
copied

Amazons. copied after the romantick Writers among the Ancients.

The  
Situation  
and Ex-  
tent.

In one Part of *America* they furnish us with Giants, in another with Monsters, in a third with Canibals, and here with a Race of *Amazons*. They seem to have been a little dull of Invention, that they struck out no new Whimsies or Monsters in Nature, but barely transcrib'd or imitated the fabulous Relations they met with in the ancient Poets and other Writers, who intended no more perhaps than beautiful Allegories, or to display their Talents at Invention, never dreaming that After-ages would look upon such Flights of Fancy as historical Facts. But to proceed in the describing the Situation of this Country, which has obtain'd the Name of the *Amazons*. It is bounded by the Equator, which separates it from *Terra-Firma* on the North, by *Brazil* and the *Atlantick Ocean* on the East, by *Brazil* and *La Plata* towards the South, and by *Peru* on the South-West, lying between the Equator and the 15th. Degree of South Latitude, and between 50 and 75 Degrees of Western Longitude.

As we have no other Accounts of this Country than what we have receiv'd from those who have been sent by the *Spaniards* and *Portuguese* to make Discoveries either up or down the River *Amazon*, I shall give an Abstract of the several Adventures of this kind, and then collect from them the State of the Country.

The  
River  
*Amazon*  
discover'd  
by *Gonzalo*  
*Pizarro*.

*Gonzalo Pizarro*, Brother to the Marquis (Conqueror of *Peru*) was the first that accidentally discover'd this mighty River, in the Year 1540, when he was Governor of *Quitto*, the most Northern Province of *Peru*. Some *Indians* had assur'd him, that to the Eastward of *Quitto*,

*Quitto*, on the other Side the Mountains of *Andes*, were Countries that abounded not only in Cinamon but in Gold, more than any Countries the *Spaniards* had hitherto discover'd, tho' they were exceeding difficult of Access on account of the Rocks and Precipices they must first pass, and the Woods and Morasses on the other side of them, and the little Provisions they must expect to meet with in a desert and uninhabited Country; and what would render their March extremely troublesome were the heavy Rains that fall under and near the Equator for the greatest part of the Year. But nothing could deter *Pizarro* from an Expedition wherein he expected to meet with Mountains of Gold in a literal Sense. He made extraordinary Preparations therefore for this difficult and hazardous Undertaking, assembled three hundred and forty veteran *Spaniards*, of whom one hundred and fifty were Horse, and took with him four thousand able-bodied *Indians*, some of them Soldiers, but most of them employ'd in carrying his Ammunition, Provisions and Baggage, and driving some thousands of *Indian* Sheep and Hogs before them, which he propos'd to kill by the way. And thus provided, he set out from the City of *Quitto* at *Christmas*, in the Year 1539.

An Account of which Expedition we find thus related by *De la Vega*, in his *Royal Commentaries of Peru*. The General (says the royal Historian) having continued his March some few Days, there happen'd so terrible an Earthquake that many Houses in the Villages where they then were fell to the Ground; the Earth opened in many Places, and so terrible were the Lightnings and Thunder, and so very quick,

Amazons.

The Difficulties of the first Discoverers.

Amazons. quick, almost without Intermiſſion, and ſo fierce were the Rains, which pour'd down like Buckets of Water, that the *Spaniards* much admir'd at the Nature of that Climate, ſo different from any thing they had ever ſeen in the Northern Parts of *Peru*.

After this Storm was over, which continued forty or fifty Days, they prepar'd to paſs the *Andes*, or ſnowy Mountains, for which tho' they had made good Proviſion, yet the Climate was ſo extremely cold by the great Quantities of Snow which fell, that many *Indians* who went thin in their Cloathing periſh'd. The *Spaniards*, that they might make haſte out of the Snow and Cold, left their Cattle and Proviſions behind them, expecting to find ſufficient Supplies of all things at the next Place where the *Indians* inhabited. But the matter ſucceeded otherwiſe; for having paſs'd the Mountains, they enter'd into a Country ſo barren that it was void of all Inhabitants, wherefore doubling their Journeys to get out of it, they came at length to a Province and People call'd *Cumaco*, ſituated at the Foot of a Vulcano, where they found Plenty of Proviſions; but the Country was ſo wet, that for the Space of two Months they remain'd there it never ceas'd one Day from raining.

In this Province, call'd *Cumaco*, or *Canela*, which is ſituate under the Equinoctial, or very near it, grow the Cinamon Trees, as they call them, which they went in ſearch of as well as Gold. Theſe Trees are lofty, bearing a Leaf as big as the Laurel, with a ſmall ſort of Fruit which grows in Cluſters like the Acorn: Some grow wild in the Mountains, and produce Fruit, but not ſo good as that which is gather'd from the Trees which the *Indians* plant

plant and cultivate in their own Grounds. Am. Z. 115.

The *Spaniards* found that in *Cumaco* and the adjacent Countries the *Indians* went naked, without any Cloaths, only the Women, for Modesty sake, wore a little Flap before them: The Climate is so excessively hot that they need no Cloaths (says *De la Vega*) and is so subject to Rains, that they would become rotten in a short time if they had them.

*Gonzalo Pizarro* leaving the greatest Part of his People in *Cumaco*, took with him a small Party of such as he esteem'd most active, to search for some Pass leading out of the Country; for as yet the Way for an hundred Leagues together had been nothing but Mountains, Desarts and Woods, which they were forced to lay open by the Hatchet and Strength of their Arms; and sometimes the *Indians*, who were their Guides, deceiv'd them, carrying them out of the Way by Mountains and Desarts and difficult Passages (where they sustain'd Hunger and Cold, without any other Sustenance than Herbs and Roots, and wild Fruit) and conducting them through By-ways, to avoid the Country of their Friends and Confederates.

With such Labours and Sufferings as these, which may rather be fancy'd than describ'd, they came at length to a Province called *Cuca*, which was more populous than any they had formerly pass'd. Here Provisions were plentiful, and the Cacique, or King of the Country, came in a peaceable manner to welcome them, and brought them Provisions.

In these Parts they remain'd two Months, in expectation of the Coming of those *Spaniards* whom they had left in *Cumaco*, and had directed to follow them by such Traces and Marks as they should find of the Way they



Amazons. had taken before them. Their Companions being come up and refresh'd after their Journey, they march'd by the Banks of a great River for the Space of fifty Leagues, in all which Way they neither found Bridge nor Ford.

At length they came to a Place where the whole River falls from the Top of a Rock above two hundred Fathom high, which Cataract, or Falling of the Waters, makes a Noise that is heard above six Leagues from the Place, at which, tho' the *Spaniards* were amazed, yet it was much more wonderful to see, above forty or fifty Leagues lower, that immense Quantity of Water contracted and straitened within a Channell made by one great Rock. This Channel is so narrow, that from one Side to the other it is not above twenty Foot wide; but so high, that from the Top, where the *Spaniards* made their Bridge, was two hundred Fathom from the Water. *Gonzalo Pizarro* and his Captains considering there was no other Passage to be found over the River, and that it was necessary to pass to the other Side, because the Country was barren on that Side where they then were, agreed to make a Bridge over the Top of the Rock.

The *Indians* on the opposite Side, tho' few in Number, stoutly defended the Pass, but were driven from it by the Fire of the Muskets; and the Pass being now clear, the *Spaniards* fell to work on the Bridge of Timber, which cost much Labour before the first Beam could be pass'd over to the opposite Rock, by the Help of which a second was more easily laid, and then other Pieces of Timber, so that by degrees they formed a Bridge, over which both Men and Horse securely pass'd: After which they march'd by the Side of the River  
over

over Mountains so thick with Wood, that they were forced to open their Way again with the Hatchet. Through these Difficulties they came at length to a Country call'd *Guema*, where the *Spaniards* and their *Indian* Servants were forced again to sustain themselves with Herbs and Roots, and with the tender Sprouts of Trees. Thus with Famine and the perpetual Rains many of the *Spaniards* fell sick and dy'd. They arriv'd afterwards at a Country where the Natives were more civiliz'd than the former; for they eat Maiz or *Indian* Corn, and clothed themselves with Garments of Cotton; but still the Climate was subject to violent Rains.

Amazons.

Whilst they stay'd in this Place they sent Parties out every Way to see if they could discover a better Country; but they all return'd with the same News, that they met with nothing but wild Mountains full of Bogs, Lakes and moorish Grounds, over which was no Passage. Hereupon they resolv'd to build a Brigantine or Vessel to ferry over from one Side of the River to the other, which now was become two Leagues broad. In order where- unto, the first thing to be done was to set up a Smith's Forge for Nails and Iron-work, which they made of the Horses Shoes they had kill'd for Food, and some Iron Bars they had carry'd with them; but Iron was now become more scarce than Gold.

They build a Brigantine

*Gonzalo Pizarro*, tho' chief Commander, was the first that laid his Hand on the Ax to hew down the Timber, and to make the Charcoal which was requisite to forge the Iron, and was always the most forward in every Office, tho' never so mean, that so giving a good Example, none might excuse him-

Anazons.

self. The Rosin which issued from certain Trees served them instead of Pitch, and their old Shirts and Rags were made use of instead of Ockam to caulk the Seams of their Vessel, which being in this manner finish'd, they launched into the Water with great Joy and Triumph, imagining that herewith they should quickly escape out of all their Dangers and Difficulties. But it proved otherwise; for a few Days shewed the contrary, and gave them Cause to repent that they had ever made it.

They em-  
baric their  
Gold and  
Baggage.

All the Gold they had gather'd, which amounted to above the Value of one hundred thousand *Pieces of Eight*, with abundance of Emeralds, some of which were of great Value, as also their Iron and Iron-work, and whatsoever was of any Esteem, they laded on their Vessel; and such as were weak and sick and not able to travel were also put on Board. And now after a Journey almost of two hundred Leagues they departed from this Place, taking their Course down the Stream, some by Water and others by Land, keeping such a convenient Distance each from the other, that at Night they always join'd and lodg'd together; which Journey was perform'd with great Difficulty, for those on the Land were forced to open a great Part of their Way with Hatchet and Bill, and those on the Water were put to hard Labour to keep the Vessel from being forcibly carry'd down by the Current from the Company on Shore, when at any time their Passage was interrupted by some Mountain; so that they could not keep near the River: They then ferried to the other Side by Help of their Vessel and four Canoes they had made; but this was a great Hindrance to them, and very grievous to Men starving and perishing with Hunger.

Having

Having in this manner travelled for the Space <sup>Amazons.</sup> of two Months, they at length met with certain *Indians*, who by Signs, and by some Words which were understood by their *Indian* Servants, gave them Intelligence that about ten Days Journey from thence they would find a Country well peopled, plentiful of Provisions, and abounding with Gold and other Riches of which they were in pursuit; and farther signified to them, that this Country was situated on the Banks of another great River which join'd and fell into that wherein they now were. The *Spaniards* being encourag'd with this News, *Gonzalo Pizarro* made *Francisco de Orellana* Captain of his Brigantine or Vessel, and thereon put fifty Soldiers a-board, giving them Orders to pass down the Stream to that Place where the two Rivers met, and that there leaving the Goods he had then on Board, he should lade his Vessel with Provisions, and return towards them with all the Speed imaginable to relieve them in that great Distress, many of the *Spaniards* being already dead, and more *Indians*, who from four thousand were now reduc'd to half the Number.

According to these Orders, *Francisco de Orellana* *Orellana* enter'd on the Voyage, and in the Space of three Days, without Oars or Sail, <sup>with fifty Soldiers</sup> only by Force of the Current, was carry'd to <sup>embarks on Board</sup> the Confluence of the two Rivers mention'd by <sup>the Bri-</sup> the *Indians*, but found no Provisions there; <sup>gantine.</sup> whereupon *Orellana* pretending it was impossible to return to *Pizarro* against the Stream, resolved to set up for himself, and accordingly <sup>He runs</sup> casting off all Care and Regard for *Pizarro* <sup>away with the Vessel.</sup> and his Companions then in Distress, he resolved to continue his Voyage to the Mouth of the River, and then go over into *Spain* and obtain

Amazons.

obtain the Government of those Countries for himself : But this cruel Resolution was opposed by many of those who were then with him, who told him plainly, that he was not to exceed the Orders of his Captain-General, and that it was inhuman to forsake his Companions in their great Distress, knowing how useful and necessary that Brigantine was to them. In this Point none were more zealous than Friar *Gaspar Carvajal*, and a young Gentleman Native of *Badajoz*, named *Hernando Sanchez de Vargas*, whom those of the contrary Opinion made their Chief, and were so warm in their Debates on this Subject, that the Quarrel had come to Blows had not *Orellana* with fair Words appeased the Tumult: However, he manag'd so artfully afterwards with those who had oppos'd his Intention, that he entic'd them all over to his Party, and then rudely treated the poor Friar whom he had expos'd to the same Famine and Misery (had it not been for Respect to his Habit and Profession) as he did *Sanchez de Vargas*, whom he left in that Desert encompassed with high Mountains on the one Side and a great River on the other to perish by Famine.

*Francisco de Orellana* afterwards found some Provisions amongst the Nations on the River below ; but because the Women came out at first with their Husbands to oppose his Landing, he gave it the Name of the River of *Amazons*.

Proceeding yet farther down this River, they found these *Indians* more civil than the other, who receiv'd them amicably, admiring the Brigantine and Men so strangely habited. These treated the *Spaniards* hospitably, and furnish'd them with as much Provision as they had

had occasion for. *Orellana* remain'd here therefore several Weeks, and built another Brigantine, for they were very much straitned for Room in the first, and having fitted it up as well as they were able, they adventur'd out to Sea, sailing along the Coast of *Caribiana*, about two hundred Leagues to the Northward, till they arriv'd at the Island of the *Holy Trinity*, having escap'd such Dangers that they often gave themselves over for lost. At this Island *Orellana* bought a Ship, with which he sail'd into *Spain*, where he requested his Majesty's Commission for the Conquest and Government of the Country of the *Amazons*, as he was pleas'd to stile it. To make this Enterprize appear the more desirable, he alledg'd that it was a Country abounding with Gold, Silver, and precious Stones, and in Testimony thereof produc'd the Riches which he had brought with him ; whereupon his Majesty granted the Request he made for the Government of what he should conquer there, and *Orellana* was join'd by five hundred Volunteers, the greatest Part of them brisk young Gentlemen, and Persons of Honour, with whom he embark'd at *St. Lucar* for the River *Amazon*, in the Year 1554, but he lost one of his Ships in his Voyage thither, and met with so many Difficulties and Misfortunes before he had sail'd an hundred Leagues up the River, that he abandon'd the Enterprize, and dy'd in his Return home.

Amazons.

*Orellana* comes into the Atlantic Ocean.

Sails to Spain and obtains the Government of the Amazon Country.

Dies in an Attempt to subdue it.

And now let us return to *Gonzalo Pizarro*, whom we left in such Distress after *Francisco de Orellana* was run away with the Brigantine: And first he built ten or twelve Canoes and other Floats to pass from one Side the River to the other, as often as his March was interrupted

Amazons.

rupted by impassable Mountains or Morasses, and proceeded in that manner down the River in hopes to meet the Brigantine they had dispatch'd for Provisions. At the End of two Months they arriv'd at the Point where the two Rivers met ; but instead of their Brigantine and the Provisions they expected to meet with, they found only the honest *Hernan de Vargas*, who with Constancy of Mind, like a Man of Honour, had endur'd with great Resolution Famine and all the Miseries to which he was expos'd in that Solitude ; and from him they receiv'd a particular Account of the Villany of the perfidious *Orellana*, which *Pizarro* could scarce credit, having hitherto entertain'd an entire Confidence in the Man.

*Pizarro's*  
Discourse.

The General, however, putting a good Face upon the Matter, cheer'd up his Men, and encourag'd them with Hopes of better Fortune, telling them, that they ought, like *Spaniards*, to bear with Equality of Mind these Labours and Disappointments, and yet greater if any such could be: That the more Danger the more Honour, and the greater would their Renown be in History, which would transmit the Fame of their Adventures down to future Ages. The Soldiers observing the Chearfulness of their General, who had most Cause to resent *Orellana's* Usage of him, took heart, and continued their March by the Banks of the River, sometimes on one Side and sometimes on the other.

But the Difficulty of carrying the Horses over upon Floats (for there still remain'd about fifty of their Number) cannot be express'd, any more than the Famine they were expos'd to: However, the *Indians* who remain'd alive served their Masters with great Faithfulness  
and

and Affection in these Extremities, bringing <sup>Amazons.</sup> them Herbs, Roots, wild Fruit, Snakes, and other Vermin they found in those Mountains, all which went down with the *Spaniards*; nor could they have subsisted without such kind of Food.

And now *Gonzalo Pizarro* being resolved to <sup>Pizarro</sup> return to *Peru*, left the River and took his Way <sup>returns to</sup> more to the Northward, which proved shorter <sup>Quitto.</sup> by an hundred Leagues than the Way they came, but no less difficult, being forced to cut their Way frequently through the Woods, and for Want of other Provisions they now eat up all their remaining Horses and Dogs; for the four thousand *Indians*, who used to purvey for them, all dy'd in this Expedition; and there were but fourscore *Spaniards* who return'd to *Quitto* alive, and these almost without Cloaths, and so sun-burnt and emaciated with the Fatigue and Want of Food, that their nearest Friends scarce knew them.

With such insupportable Hardships and Hazards did the first *Spanish* Adventurers struggle in search of Gold, even when they had before acquir'd enough one would have thought to have satisfy'd the most boundless Avarice. I question whether *Gonzalo Pizarro*, who was one of the Proprietors of the Mines of *Potosi*, had not amass'd more than a Million of Crowns before he enter'd upon this Expedition.

*Peter de Orsua*, who afterwards obtain'd a *Peter de* Commission from the Governor of *Peru*, in *Orsua* attempts to the Year 1550, to subdue the Provinces border- discover ing on the River *Amazon*, embark'd on the this Coun- River *Xauxa* in *Peru* with seven hundred try. armed *Spaniards* and two thousand *Indians*, and sail'd down the Stream two or three hundred Leagues till he came to the Confluence of the



Amazons. two Rivers *Amazon* and *Xauxa*, and continuing his Voyage afterwards two hundred Leagues further, was kill'd in a Mutiny of his Men, which put a Period to that Enterprize.

Several other Adventurers made the like Attempts afterwards, but most of them prov'd unfortunate, till two Monks and some Soldiers, who set out with *John de Palacios* from *Quitto* in *Peru*, in the Year 1635, and embarking on the River *Amazon*, where it first becomes navigable, sail'd the whole Length of it till they arriv'd at *Paria* in *Brazil*, which lies on the South Side of the Mouth of this great River: But their Captain, *John Palacios*, was kill'd in a Skirmish with the Natives in their Passage.

Two Priars successful in discovering it.

The Friars having given an Account of their Voyage to the Governor of *Brazil*, he order'd Sloops and Boats to be provided, on which he embark'd seventy *Portuguese* and two thousand *Indians*, and in *October*, 1637, order'd them to sail up the River, under the Command of *Texeira*, a Mariner of great Skill and Experience, who by the Help of the Easterly Wind, which generally blows here, sail'd up against the Current till he arriv'd at *Les Reyes*, a Town of *Quitto* in *Peru*; and the River not being navigable higher for his Vessels, he left them there and went by Land to the City of *Quitto*, where he was kindly receiv'd by the *Spanish* Governor, and furnish'd with whatever he wanted to facilitate his Return to *Brazil*: And the Governor sent Father *De Acuna* and another *Spanish* Jesuite down the River with him, ordering them to embark for *Spain* when they arriv'd at *Brazil*, and communicate the Observations they should make in this Voyage to his Catholick Majesty; and

*Texeira* fails up the River to *Peru*.

and *Texeira* embarking again at *Les Reyes*, on the River *Amazon*, with the two Jesuites, in the Month of *February*, 1638-9, arriv'd at *Paria* in *Brazil* the *December* following; from whence *De Acuna* and his Companion went over to *Spain*, and publish'd a Relation of their Voyage in 1640, which is the best Account of this River and the Countries bordering upon it that is extant.

Amazonis.

From these several Relations we learn that the Head of the River *Amazon* rises in *Quitto*, almost under the Equator, in 76 Degrees of Western Longitude, and running South-East till it unites its Waters with the River *Xauxa*, continues its Course almost due East in the Latitude of 4 Degrees for 26 Degrees of Longitude, and then returning to the North, by many Mouths discharges itself into the *Atlantick Ocean*, almost under the Equator. They compute, that with all its Turnings and Windings it does not run less than 1800 Leagues; and observe that it is ordinarily 2 or 3 Leagues broad; but in the rainy Season over-flows the flat Country on the right and left, and at the Mouth of it is fifty or sixty Leagues broad; that from the River *Negro*, which falls into it about five hundred Leagues from the Mouth, it is generally thirty or forty Fathom deep, and up higher from eight Fathom to twenty; that there is one Streight where it is not above a quarter of a Mile over, and that there are near two hundred Rivers which fall into it from the North to South.


The Sources of the River Amazon.

Its Course and magnitude.

The Adventurers in general agree that the Air is cooler than could be expected so near the Equator, which proceeds from the heavy Rains that occasion the numerous Rivers to over-flow their Banks one half of the Year;

The Air. Weather.

- Amazons. from the cloudy Weather, from the Shortness  
 of the Days, which are never more than twelve  
 Hours long, and from a brisk Easterly Wind  
 that blows frequently from the *Atlantick Ocean*  
 quite through the Country so strong that Vessels  
 are enabled thereby to sail against the  
 Stream, and perform the Voyage almost as  
 soon up the River *Amazon* as down it, which  
 I perceive is a Voyage of eight or ten Months,  
 where no ill Accident interrupts the Passage.  
 Travellers also observe, that they have most  
 terrible Thunder and Lightning great Part of  
 the Year; but this is no more than what is  
 usual in other Countries that lie under the E-  
 quinoctial: And it may properly be said they  
 have two Summers and two Winters every  
 Year; that is, fair Weather when the Sun is at  
 the greatest Distance from them in either Tropick;  
 and foul when it is vertical, as it is at  
 the vernal and autumnal Equinox.
- Winds.
- Thunder.
- Seasons.
- Trees and Fruits. The Trees here are Ever-greens, and they  
 have Fruits, Flowers and Herbage all the  
 Year round. Their Fruits are Cocoa-nuts,  
 Anana's, or Pine-apples, Guava's, Bananas,  
 and such other Fruits as are usually found be-  
 tween the Tropicks. Their Forest and Timber  
 Trees are Cedar, *Brazil* Wood, Oak, Ebony,  
 Log-wood, Iron-wood, so call'd from its  
 Weight and Hardness, the Canela, or Cina-  
 mon, as it is call'd from its spicy Bark, and  
 several sorts of dying Wood.
- Corn, Roots, and Plants. They have also *Indian* Corn and the *Cassavi*  
 Root, of which they make Flower and Bread,  
 Tobacco, Cotton, Sugar, Yams, Potatoes,  
 Sarsaparilla, and other Roots. They have also  
 Animals. Plenty of Venison, Fish and Fowl, among which  
 they mention Deer, *Indian* Sheep, and Goats,  
 Guano's, Manatee, Armadillo's, Tortoise,  
 and

and vast Flocks of Parrots of all Colours, <sup>Amazons.</sup> which serve them for Food, and their Feathers  for Ornament.

The Natives are of the ordinary Stature of <sup>Persons of</sup> Men: They have good Features, long black <sup>the Na-</sup> Hair, and black Eyes, and their Complexion <sup>tives,</sup> is a Copper Colour, whereas the Natives of *Africa* in the same Latitude, on the opposite Side of the *Atlantick Ocean*, are all *Negroes*.

As to the Nation of *Amazons*, which were <sup>The Sto-</sup> said to give Name to this River and Country, <sup>ries of</sup> they are now no where to be found, any more <sup>Amazons,</sup> than the Giants and Canibals the first Adventurers mention'd. The People are generally <sup>&c. ficti-</sup> acknowledg'd now to have as much Humanity or more than the *Europeans* who invaded them, and to have a Genius for Painting and some <sup>Genius.</sup> mechanick Arts, particularly they make good Joyners Work, tho' they have no other Tools than such as are edg'd with sharp Stones. They also spin and weave themselves Cotton <sup>Habits,</sup> Garments, and are pretty decently cloath'd: Their Earthen-Ware also is much admir'd; but I don't perceive they have learn'd to make Bricks, or build with Stone, the Materials of their Houses being of Wood, Thatch and Clay, but one Floor, and built usually on some Eminence near the River Side to avoid the Inundation.

The Banks of every River, as they relate, <sup>Govern-</sup> are inhabited by a distinct People, commanded <sup>ment.</sup> by their respective Caciques or Sovereigns, who are distinguish'd from their Subjects by Coronets of beautiful Feathers: Their Arms are Bows, Arrows, and Spears, and they make War on each other by Water as well as <sup>Wars.</sup> Land, but have no other Boats than Canoes, which are great Trees made hollow: Whatever their

*Amazons.* their Pretensions are for War their principal End in it is to make Slaves; however, 'tis said they use their Slaves with great Humanity, and never sell them to Foreigners.

*Religion.* They worship Images, and carry them with them in their Expeditions; but I don't find they have Temples dedicated to any God, or any Order of Priests. They countenance both Polygamy and Concubinage. As to the Gold and Silver Mines the *Spaniards* went in search of when they first discover'd the River of

*No Gold in this Country.* *Amazon*, I can't learn they have yet met with any here, tho' they find some Gold in the Rivulets that fall into the River *Amazon* near its Sources in *Peru*. After the River is swoln to any Magnitude there is no more Gold to be found; and this I don't doubt is the Reason that neither the *Spaniards* or *Portuguese* have planted any Colonies in the lower Part of it. The *Spaniards* made great Efforts from *Peru* to subdue this Country while they had a Notion it abounded in Gold, but seem to have neglected the Discovery ever since they were deceiv'd in this Particular; and indeed they have a larger Dominion already in *America* than they can defend, which is a sufficient Reason for their slighting such Countries as do not produce Gold or Silver.



THE  
PRESENT STATE  
OF THE  
*Spanish Islands.*

---

C H A P. I.  
*Of the Island of Cuba.*



THE three principal *Spanish* Islands that remain to be describ'd are those of *Cuba*, *Hispaniola*, and *Porto Rico*.

*Spanish  
Islands.*

The Island of *Cuba* is situated between the 20th Degree of Northern Latitude and the Tropick of Cancer, and between the 74th and 87th Degrees of Western Longitude, 30 Leagues North of *Jamaica*, and about as many South of Cape *Florida*, being 300 Leagues in Length, and generally between 20 and 30 Leagues broad.

*Situation  
and Ex-  
tent.*

The Natives had given it the Name of *Cuba* before *Columbus* arriv'd there, who at first call'd it *Juanna*, 'tis said, and afterwards *Ferdinandino*, from King *Ferdinand*, who was King of *Spain* when

*Name.*

Spanish  
Islands.

when this Island was discover'd; but it soon recover'd its *American* Name of *Cuba*, which it retains to this Day.

Face of  
the Coun-  
try.

A Ridge of Mountains run almost through the Island from East to West, well replenish'd with Timber and other Trees, but the Land near the Shore is generally a plain champaign Country.

Rivers.

There are abundance of Rivulets which run from the Mountains North and South, but none of them large, falling into the Sea after a very short Course, and no Place in the World has better Harbours, the chief of which are

Harbours.

*St. Jago*, at the Bottom of a large Bay at the East End of the Island, and that of the *Havana*, on the North-West, which is one of the strongest and most commodious Havens in *America*.

Seasons.

They have no Winters here, but great Rains and Tempests usually when the Sun is vertical in *July* and *August*, which cools the Air however, and renders the Climate tolerable. The fairest Season is when the Sun is at the greatest Distance from them, and then the Morning is much the hottest Part of the Day; for towards Noon the Sea Breeze begins to blow pretty briskly, and continues to do so till the Evening. From *October* to *April* they have brisk North or North-West Winds in these Seas at the Full and Change of the Moon, and in *December* and *January* they frequently increase into Storms, tho' this be their fair Season: And *Dampier* observes of the *Ile of Pines*, situated near the South-West Coast of *Cuba*, that it rains there when it is fair every where else; and if we may credit our Mariners, they scarce ever have a fair Day on the *Ile of Pines*. The Trade-Wind in these Seas blows from the North-East.

I don't

of the SPANISH ISLANDS. 217

I don't find the Island of *Cuba* divided into Provinces, tho' some relate that the East Part of it is subject to the Governor of *St. Jago*, and the West to the Governor of the *Havana*. Spanish Islands. Provinces.

The chief Towns in the Island are, 1. *St. Jago*. 2. The *Havana*. 3. *Baracoa*. 4. *Porto del Principe*. 5. *Santa Cruz*. 6. *Trinidad*; and 7. *Spirito Sancto*. Chief Towns.

1. *St. Jago* is situated (as has been already observ'd) at the Bottom of a fine Bay in the South-East Part of the Island, which, with some small Islands in the Bay, form a very commodious Harbour: It was built by General *James Velasquez*, who reduc'd this Island under the Dominion of the *Spaniards* about the Year 1514: And it may still be stil'd the Capital of *Cuba*, being the only Bishop's See in it, but is very much upon the decline at present, both the Bishop and civil Governor residing at the *Havana*, for the most part. St. Jago.

2. The *Havana*, situate at the North-West Part of the Island, about five hundred Miles to the Westward of *St. Jago*, of which that celebrated Traveller *Gemelli Carreri*, who was at the *Havana* in the Year 1698, gives us the following Description, together with some other Particulars relating to the Country, and the Voyage of the Galleons from thence to *Spain*, which I am confident will be acceptable to my Readers. The Havana.

The *Havana* (says *Gemelli*) is a little City half a League in Compass, seated in a Plain, and in the Latitude of 23 Degrees 20 Minutes. It is almost round; inclos'd with poor low Walls on the Land Side, and defended on the other Part by Water. The Inhabitants are about four thousand Souls, *Spaniards*, *Mulatto's*, and *Blacks*, who live most of them



Spanish  
Islands.

Some De-  
scription  
of the  
People.

in low Houses. The Women are beautiful, and the Men ingenious. The Governor hath the Title of Captain-General of the Island, and administers Justice with the Assistance of an Assessor, call'd a Lieutenant, who is appointed by the Council of the *Indies*.

It is very dear living there; for three Ounces of Bread cost fifteen Grains of *Naples* Money, that is, about Three-pence *English*, and half a Pound of Meat the same Price. A Hen is worth a Noble, and Fruit and other Things proportionably; so that a Man can scarcely live under two *Pieces of Eight* a Day, especially when the Galleons are there: Tho' the Climate is temperate, Wheat has not thrived there for some Years, and the Reason is not known; so that what comes from abroad to the Bakers is dearly paid for: But this Want is in some measure supply'd by a Root call'd Yuca, (the Cassavi Root) whereof they make Bread, boiling and then pressing it to get out a venomous Juice there is in it. They bake it upon little Earthen Stoves, and this Bread serves not only the Poor but the better Sort who have large Families. This Root produces neither Leaves nor Seed, but they set Bits of it in the Ground to grow again.

The Island is three hundred Leagues in Length from East to West, and about thirty in Breadth. The Inhabitants are poor, having no Trade but Tobacco and Sugar; and all the Labour falls upon the *Blacks*, of whom their Masters exact four *Royals* (two Shillings) a Day, and six when the Fleet is there, and at least three of the Women: Now what can a miserable Black do who has two Masters, as it often happens? In *Peru* the Masters Avarice is greater; for they send the black Women to be

be got with Child, like Cows, and if they prove barren they sell them. Spanish Islands.

The City *Havana* is encompass'd on two Sides by its safe Harbour, which is so deep that the Ships anchor within a few Steps of the Shore. It is defended by three Castles, the chief of them call'd *Del Morro*, on the Left-hand of the Mouth of it; the second *De la Punta*, or *Of the Point*, on the Right; and the third call'd only *The Fort*, on the Right of the last: We shall speak of them at large hereafter. Fortifications of the Havana.

*Friday* the 3d I saw the little but neat Church call'd *Santo Christo del Buen Viage*, serv'd by secular Priests. Next Day that of the *Recolets*, seated on the best Ground in the City, and in it twelve beautiful Chappels, and in the Monastery Cells for fifty Fathers. Churches.

The Weather, which had continu'd serene and warm as Summer, on *Thursday* the 9th, chang'd so cold with Rain, that I believe the like has scarce ever been felt in a Place lying in 23 Degrees and 20 Minutes of Latitude. Weather.

*Wednesday* the 15th I heard Mass in the Church of *St. Clare*, which has seven Altars well adorn'd. The Monastery will contain an hundred religious Women and Servants, who are there cloath'd in blue.

*Thursday* the 16th the Chests of *Pieces of Eight* (Crowns) began to be put on Board the Galleons, the King's held three thousand each, and the rest two thousand, in all amounting to thirty Millions, as well belonging to the King as Merchants, for Goods sold at the Fair of *Porto Bello*, carry'd on between the Traders of *Seville* and those of *Lima*. The great Faith these Traders repose in. one another is very remarkable; for when once agreed about the Price, they interchangeably deliver one another Treasure of the Galleons.

Spanish  
Islands.



the Bales of Goods and Chests of *Pieces of Eight* without seeing any thing of the Contents, but giving entire Credit to the written Particulars they deliver to one another; for afterwards the Bales and Chests are opened in the Presence of publick Notaries, and if they find any thing amiss, the Companies of *Seville* and *Lima* are to make all good. This Year the Company of *Lima Traders* paid five thousand *Pieces of Eight* for Goods found over and above in the Bales at the foregoing Fair. The same is practised at *Acapulco* when the Galleon comes from *Manila*.

A rich  
Pearl.

There was also deliver'd to the Master of Plate (which is an Officer on Board the Galleons, who had Charge of all the Plate and Jewels) a-board the Admiral, a Pearl weighing sixty Grains, shaped like a Pear, by *F. Francis de la Fuente* a Jesuite, to be deliver'd to the King. This Pearl was taken at *Panama*, in the *King's Island*, by a Black belonging to a Priest, who being rich would not sell it to the President of *Panama* for fifty thousand *Pieces of Eight*, nor to the Viceroy of *Peru* for seventy thousand, both of them being to send it to the King, but said, *He would carry it to his Majesty himself*. Being come to *Porto Bello* with the Pearl, which he call'd *La Perseguida*, or the persecuted, he there dy'd before he went a-board, and therefore committed it to the Care of the afore-said *F. Fuente*, who told me that it was larger than that call'd *La Peregrina*, but somewhat duller. The Black had his Liberty for his Reward.

There went on Board the Galleons twenty Doctors of *Peru*, being the Sons of *Spaniards* and *Indian* Women going to Court for Preferment, and the least that every one of them carry'd

Peruvians  
rich.

of the SPANISH ISLANDS. 221

carry'd was thirty thousand *Pieces of Eight*. Spanish  
Islands.

*Monday* the 20th, going abroad a shooting, I kill'd a great many of those Birds they call *Cotorrera's*; some of them have black and green Feathers, and others blue, others black and green Wings, their Breasts red, and half the Head white. They are not amiss to eat. Returning home I kill'd two *Guacamaija's*, which tho' they do not talk, are so finely colour'd that the best Pencil can scarce equal them. The Country is very delightful, being full of little Houses with Gardens and Farms where there is no want of *Indian* Fruit. I found a sort of Snails, very large like the Sea Snails. Birds.

*Friday* the 24th, I saw the Church and Churches. Monastery of the *Augustinians*, the first has thirteen little Altars, the latter very poor Dormitories.

*Sunday* the 26th, I was at the Mother Church of the City, where the Bishop officiates with the Clergy belonging to it, his Residence being at *Havana*, tho' the Cathedral is at *St. Jago* where the Canons reside.

*Tuesday* the 28th, I heard Mass in the Church of *St. John de Dios*, which is small and has nine Altars. The Monastery is also small, and the Hospital is for Soldiers; its Revenue is twelve thousand *Pieces of Eight per Annum*.

On *Saturday*, the 1st of *February*, arriv'd the long-wish'd-for Vessel with Provisions for the Fleet, being seventeen hundred Quintals, or a hundred Weight of Biscuit, six hundred Load of Meal, Fish and other Necessaries for the Galleons.

*Tuesday* the 4th I went to the Hermitage of *St. James*, a Church built by the Bishop within

Spanish  
Islands.

within the Walls of the City for his own particular Devotion, well adorned, and with an Apartment for him to retire to sometimes.

*Wednesday* the 5th I saw the Castle of the *Point*, which is very small, and has four Bastions.

Forts.

*Monday* the 10th, going to visit the Castellan *D. Antony de Roxas*, I had the Opportunity of seeing the Castle they call *The Fort*: Its Compass is small, but it has four good Bastions, and a Platform towards the Mouth of the Port, well furnish'd with Brass Cannon.

Fruits.

There are two particular sorts of Fruit at *Havana*, which do not grow elsewhere. One is like a Heart, call'd *Guavavana*, green without, and has some thorny Prickles within, made up of white Morfels of an unpleasant Taste, between sweet and sour, with some Stones. The Tree is as big as that which bears the Anana's, or Pine-apple; the other is exactly like an Orange on the Out-side, and within has a white and red Pulp of a sweet Taste. The Tree is as tall as a Pear-tree; the Leaf on the one Side is green, and on the other of a Cinnamon Colour. Of *European* Fruit there grow Quinces, Oranges, Lemons, Pomgranates, and other Sorts.

Cattle.

The Mountains are full of wild Hogs, Cows, Horses and Mules. Of Birds there

Birds.

are abundance, especially Parrots and Partridges, with blue Heads, and as for those that are fit for the Cage, there is great Plenty of those they call Chambergos.

Forts.

*Monday* the 3d of *March* I saw the Castle *Del Morro*, built upon a Rock on the left of the Mouth of the Harbour, which it defends with a Platform of twelve Pieces of Cannon, call'd *the Apostles*, which lie level with the Water.

Water. There are in all about fifty-five Guns in the Castle. The Ditch about it is cut out of the Rock and filled by the Sea. Abundance of the Birds call'd Cardinals are brought over from *Florida*; I saw the People belonging to the Galleons give ten *Pieces of Eight* a piece for some of them, and six for the worst. Upon Computation, they said, there had been eighteen thousand *Pieces of Eight* laid out upon those foolish Birds, notwithstanding the deplorable Loss of *Cartagena*, and the expensive Delay of keeping the Fleet three Years in *America*.

Spanish  
Islands.

*Saturday* the 8th Proclamation was made forbidding any that belong'd to the Fleet to stay in *Havana* upon Pain of Death, and in the Evening a Cannon was fir'd to warn all abroad.

To return to the Description of the Towns;

3. *Baracoa* is situated at the North-East Part of the Island, upon a good Harbour for small Vessels, but is not capable of receiving large Ships.

*Baracoa.*

4. *Porto del Principe*, situated on the North Side of the Island, about three hundred Miles to the Eastward of the *Havana*.

*Porto del  
Principe.*

5. *Santa Cruz*, situated also on the North Side of the Island, thirty Miles East of the *Havana*, upon a very good Harbour.

*Santa  
Cruz.*

6. *Trinidad*, situate at the Bottom of a Bay on the South Side of the Island; and

*Trinidad.*

7. *Spirito Santo*, situate also on the South Side of the Island, about thirty Miles South-East of *Trinidad*.

*Spirito  
Santo.*

This Island produces the same Animals as the neighbouring Continent; but there is no Place where the Seas and Rivers abound more with Crocodiles, from whence several small

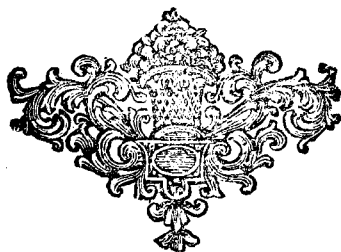
Animals.

Crocodiles  
Islands

- Spanish Islands. Islands upon this Coast have obtain'd the Name of *Caymans*, or *The Crocodile Islands*. Tortoises and Manatee are also exceeding plentiful here, and the *European Cattle* the *Spaniards* brought hither are so vastly increas'd that they run wild, and are kill'd chiefly for their Hides and Tallow, and their Horses are said to be the best bred in *America*. Their Timber Trees are Cedar, Cotton, Oaks, Pines, Palms, Cocoa-nut Trees, and such others as are usually found between the Tropicks. Their Fruits Plantains, Bananas, Ananas, Guavas, Oranges, Lemons, Grapes, and other Fruits introduc'd by the *Spaniards*; but their Wine turns fower and will not keep, as is the Case in other Countries situate in hot Climates. They have also Ginger, Cassia, Fistula, Aloes, and long Pepper; but as to Cinamon, which our Voyage Writers talk of, and other fine Spices, they are only to be found in the *East-Indies*.
- Bitumen. There are a kind of bituminous Fountains in the Island, which produce a Substance that serves instead of Pitch: And there is a Stone
- Stones. Quarry we are told where vast Quantities of Flints are found of the Shape and Size of Cannon Balls.
- Mines. Travellers mention also Gold Mines in this Island; but if there were any they are exhausted, tho' there are some of Copper not far from *St. Jago*.
- History. *Columbus* first discover'd this Island in the Year 1492, as related in the Introduction; but in all the Voyages he made to *America*, he never found that it was an Island, and the *Spaniards* fixing first at *Hispaniola* on account of the Gold Mines there, this Island of *Cuba* was not entirely conquer'd till the Year 1512 or 1514, *Don James Velasquez* having the Honour

Honour of reducing it. The *Spaniards* have frequently been disturb'd in the Possession of it by their Enemies and the Buccaneers, particularly Captain *Cliff* took the capital City of *St. Jago* in the Year 1601, and Captain *Morgan* the Town of *Porto del Principe*, in the Year 1669; for the rest I must refer to the Introduction.

Spanish  
Islands.







## C H A P. II.

*Of the Island of Hispaniola.*Spanish  
Islands.

Situation.



THE Island of *Hispaniola* is situated between 18 and 20 Degrees of North Latitude, and between 66 and 75 Degrees of Western Longitude, being about eighty Leagues in Length, and generally about forty Leagues broad, and lies fifteen Leagues to the Eastward of *Cuba*, twenty Leagues East of *Jamaica*, and upwards of an hundred Leagues North of *Terra-Firma*.

Name.

The Name the *Indians* gave it anciently was *Bobio*, but *Columbus* call'd it *Hispaniola*, or *Little Spain*, probably in Honour to the Crown of *Spain*, which employ'd him in this Discovery; and it was frequently call'd *Dominica*, or *Domingo*, from its Capital.

Face of  
the Coun-  
try.

As to the Face of the Country, there are Mountains in the middle of it well planted with Forest Trees, and other Mountains more barren, in which formerly were Gold Mines, that seem to be entirely exhausted at this Day. On the North and South are fine fruitful Plains, watered with abundance of pleasant Rivers which fall from the Mountains, of which those on the South Side of the Island are the largest. There are also several Woods and Groves of Timber and Fruit Trees: And no Island hath more secure and commodious Ports. The  
Air

of the SPANISH ISLANDS. 272

Air and Seasons are much the same here as in the Island of *Cuba*. The Island may be thrown into two grand Divisions, viz. The South-East Part, which is subject to the *Spaniards*, and the North-West now subject to the *French*.

Spanish Islands.

Division.

The chief Towns under the Dominion of the *Spaniards* are, 1. *St. Domingo*, or *Dominica*. 2. *Higuey*. 3. *Zibo*. 4. *Cotuy*. 5. *Spaniards*, *Afo*, or *Azua*; and 6. *Conception*.

Chief Towns of the

1. The City of *St. Domingo*, situated on a commodious Harbour on the South Side of the Island, near the Mouth of the River *Hayna*, in 18 Degrees 20 Minutes South Latitude and in 70 Degrees of Western Longitude. This Town is built after the *Spanish* Model, having a large Square in the middle of it, about which are the Cathedral and other public Buildings; and from this Square run the principal Streets in a direct Line, being cross'd by others at right Angles; so that the Form of the Town is almost square. It is most delightfully situated, having a fine fruitful Country on the North and East, a large navigable River on the West, and the Ocean on the South, and is the See of an Archbishop, to whom the Bishop of *St. Jago* in *Cuba* and several others on the Continent of *Honduras* and *Terra-Firma* are Suffragans. It is also a royal Audience, the most ancient in *America*, and the Seat of the Governor of the Island. There are in it several fine Churches and Monasteries, and it is so well fortify'd that it defended itself in the Year 1654 against one of the most formidable Fleets and Armies that ever was sent to *America* by the *English*. The Inhabitants are *Spaniards*, *Mestices*, *Mulatto's*, and *Albetraces*, a sixth Part of which may be *Spaniards*: And in its flourishing State, when

*Domingo*.

Spanish  
Islands.

its Audience receiv'd Appeals from every Province of *Spanish America*, it might contain about two thousand Houles; but is very much declin'd of late Years. It was founded by *Bartholomew Columbus*, Brother to the Admiral, in the Year 1594, who gave it the Name of *Domingo*, or *Dominick*, in Honour of their Father who was of that Name.

Higuey.

2. The Town of *Higuey*, situated 30 Leagues to the Eastward of *Domingo*, most considerable for its Sugar-works.

Zibo.

3. *Zibo*, 20 Leagues East of *Domingo*.

Cotuy.

4. *Cotuy*, situated near the East End of the Island, formerly a rich Town when there were Gold Mines in its Neighbourhood, but now an inconsiderable Place.

Afo.

5. *Azua*, or *Afo*, a good Port Town at the Bottom of a Bay on the South Side of the Island, eight Leagues West of *Domingo*.

Conception.

6. The City of *Conception de la Vega*, situate 25 Leagues North of *St. Domingo*, in which is a Cathedral and several parochial Churches, and others belonging to Convents, being heretofore a Bishops See, founded by *Columbus*, who from this Town had the Title of Duke *De la Vega* confer'd on him by his Catholick Majesty.

Towns  
subject to  
the French.

Petit  
Guaves.

Logane.

Port  
Lewis.

The Towns subject to the French are, 1. *Petit Guaves*. 2. *Logane*. 3. *Port Lewis*; and 4. *Cape St. Francis*.

1. *Petit Guaves* is a Port Town situated in a great Bay at the West End of the Island, the principal Settlement the French have upon it.

2. *Logane*, another Port belonging to the French in the same Bay.

3. *Port Lewis*, a good Harbour on the South-West Part of the Island.

4. *Cape*

4. *Cape St. Francis*, the most Easterly Settlement the *French* have on the North Side of the Island, near which they have the Fort *De Paix*. Besides these there are at this Day a great many more thriving *French* Colonies on the North and West Part of the Island.

Spanish  
Islands.

Cape St.  
Francis.

Port Paix.

As to the Inhabitants, it has been already hinted that the South-East Part is under the Dominion of the *Spaniards*, and the North-West subject to the *French*, and consequently the *Spaniards* and *French* are Lords of their respective Districts; but these are not a fifth Part of the People upon the Island; the *Crioli*, *Mestices*, *Negroes* and *Albatraces* are much more numerous than their *European* Lords, tho' their Slavery and Dependence are as intolerable here as upon the Continent; but there is this Difference between the *French* and the *Spanish* Settlements, that the *French* work and apply themselves to Business sometimes themselves, whereas the *Spaniards* live a lazy indolent Life, depending on their Vassals and Slaves entirely for their Subsistence.

Inhabi-  
tants.

The Stature and Complexion of the Natives are the same as in the like Climates on the Continent. There may be observ'd a great Variety of Features and Complexions here, and in all *European* Colonies in *America*; some of the native *Spaniards* and *French* are fair, and others tawny: The Descendants of these are a Degree browner, and the next Generation still of a darker Colour: Whereas on the other hand the imported *Negroes* and their Issue are as black as possible, and their Features like those of other *African* Blacks; but mixing with *Europeans* or *Indians*, their Children are tawny, and in some Generations these tawny Creatures cohabiting with other *Europeans*,

Spanish  
Islands.

*Europeans*, their Children and Grandchildren are scarce to be distinguish'd from native *Spaniards* or *French* by their Features or Complexions, and when their Original is forgot have the same Privileges as those descended from *French* or *Spanish* Ancestors on both Sides, provided they have acquir'd Fortunes or Estates to support their Pretensions.

Quadru-  
pedes.

It is very remarkable that when the *Spaniards* first discover'd *Hispaniola* and the neighbouring Islands, there was not one four-footed Animal upon them, unless some little cur Dogs that could not bark: But the *Spaniards* afterwards importing Horses, Oxen, Asses, Mules, Sheep, Hogs, Dogs, and Cats, they multiply'd prodigiously, and the *Spaniards* afterwards deserting this Island in a manner, having first destroy'd the Natives, the black Cattle run wild in the Mountains and Forests, and for many Years were kill'd by the Hunters and Buccaneers chiefly for their Hides and Tallow, of which incredible Quantities were exported to *Europe*: And here the Buccaneers used to victual their Ships with Beef and Pork and sell the same kind of Provisions to the Shipping that touch'd there; but since the *French* became Masters of the North-West Part of the Island, and the Number of Cattle is decreased by the continual Slaughter that was made of them, they have apply'd themselves to the planting Sugar, Tobacco, &c.

Fowls.

As to the feather'd Kind, there is a sort of Fowls in their Woods equal to our Poultry, which the *Spaniards* call Pintado's, and great Numbers of Parrots of various Colours. Here is also the Carpenter-Bird, so call'd from his pecking Holes in Trees, with the Cabrero, a sort of Cormorants, Men of War Birds, Ravens,

of the SPANISH ISLANDS. 231

Ravens, Crows, Swallows, Ducks, Teal, <sup>Spanish Islands.</sup> and many more such as are found in the same Latitude on the Continent.

As to Reptiles and Insects, there are Serpents of various kinds, but none of them venomous; Chego's, Musketo's, Fire-Flies, Crickets, and Millipedes. <sup>Reptiles and Insects.</sup>

The Caymans, or Crocodiles, and Tortoises also are as numerous here and in the small Islands on the Coast as in any Place of the World, and they have Plenty of Fish in their Seas and Rivers. <sup>Crocodiles Tortoises.</sup>

The principal Forest Trees on *Hispaniola* are the Cedar, the Oak, the Pine, the Mahoe Tree, the Acoma Tree, Brasil, and other dying Woods, and the Manchiril, the Fruit of which last is poisonous, and the very Sawdust of this Wood has been fatal to the Workman. They have also several sorts of Palms, as the Latimer-Palm, the Prickle-Palm, the Wine-Palm, and the Rosary-Palm, with several kinds of Fruit-Trees, such as Banana's, Plantains, Guava's, Anana's, Oranges, Lemons, Citrons, Limes, Grapes, Apricots, Caramite-Trees, whose Fruit resembles Damascene Plumbs, the Genipa-Tree, not unlike our Cherry-Trees, but the Fruit bigger than a Tennis-Ball, and the Abelcose, which yields a Fruit as big as a Melon. <sup>Forest Trees. Fruits.</sup>

But the principal Produce of the Island at this Day is Sugar, of which the *French* as well as the *Spaniards* have very large Plantations: And the great Plenty of Provisions, or rather the Frugality and Parsimony of the *French*, enables them to sell this kind of Merchandize cheaper than the *British* Colonies can do, and consequently must diminish our Trade in that Particular; for which I know no Remedy but

Spanish  
Islands.

but to advise our Planters to live as frugally as the *French*, and then possibly they may recover the Trade they have lost.

Tobacco.  
Drugs.

They plant Tobacco also in *Hispaniola*, and have several Gums and Drugs that are used in Medicine, such as Gum-Elema, Guaiacum, Aloes, Cassia, and China-Root.

The History.

The first Discovery of this Island, in the Year 1492, and Part of its History have been already treated of in the Introduction to the first Volume of *America*. I shall take Leave to add in this Place, that the *Spaniards*, after they had made an entire Conquest of it, lived in great Splendour here for many Years, till they had exhausted the Gold Mines and worn out the Natives in the working of them, and in other rigorous Services, insomuch that of three Millions of *Indians* that were found here there was not one *Indian* left upon it. After which the *Spaniards* (who at one time, 'tis said, amounted to fourteen thousand Families) deserted the Island themselves, and went over to the Continent, most of them to *Peru* and *Chili*, where they understood there was the greatest Plenty of Gold and Silver. Whereupon this Island became the Habitation of wild Beasts till a People no less savage than these brute Creatures, consisting of Out-laws, Buccaneers, and Pirates of all Nations began to make Settlements here, and maintain themselves by hunting the wild Cattle on Shore, and the Prizes they made at Sea; or by plundering the maritime Towns in those Seas. The *Spaniards* finding their Commerce very much interrupted by these Free-booters, and apprehensive that other *European* Nations might at length take possession of *Hispaniola*, and dispute their Dominion in that Part of the World, thought

thought fit to send Colonies thither, and repossess themselves of the South-East Part of the Island again, but could not entirely drive the Buccaneers from the North-West Coast and the little Island of *Tortuga* over-against it, where they had fortify'd themselves; and these being most of them *French*, his most Christian Majesty at length sent a Governor thither, and oblig'd these disorderly People to build Towns, cultivate the Lands, and live in Subjection to the Laws of *France*, since which time they have made prodigious Improvements, inso-much that *Hispaniola* may now be look'd upon as one of the most valuable Acquisitions the *French* have in *America*, particularly with regard to their Sugar Plantations (as has been intimated already) and the noble Harbours and Forts they are now in possession of on that Coast, which gives them an Opportunity of disturbing and ruining the Commerce of other Nations they happen to be at War with, as the *Spaniards* experienc'd in King *William's* War, and the *English* in that of Queen *Anne*.

One Reason of the *Spaniards* deserting this fruitful Island of *Hispaniola*, tis said, was their being perpetually harraisd and plunder'd by the *English* and *Dutch* in the Reign of Queen *Elizabeth*; and why neither of those Nations possess'd themselves of this important Island when they had driven the *Spaniards* from thence is not easy to be conceiv'd; for were either of the maritime Powers possess'd of it, there are so many fine Harbours for the Security of their Ships, and such Plenty of Provisions, that here they might ride Masters of the *American* Seas, and give Laws to all other Powers.

Sir *Francis Drake*, in the Year 1586, took the capital City of *St. Domingo* by Storm with



Spanish  
Islands.



twelve hundred Men, and then quitted it again, as he had done several other *Spanish* Ports in *America*. It seems to have been a Maxim then in the Court of *England*, to humble the Pride of the *Spaniards*, but not absolutely to drive them from their Settlements in the *West-Indies*.

*Cromwell*  
attempts  
the Con-  
quest of  
*Hispaniola*.

But *Cromwell* and his Ministry were of a different Mind. There is no one Enterprize that cunning Usurper seem'd to have set his heart upon more than the possessing himself of this important Island, which he evidently saw must give him the Command of those Seas, if it did not let him into a Share of the Treasures of *Mexico* and *Peru*. He sent Admiral *Penn* and *Venables* thither therefore, in the Year 1654, with a fine Fleet and ten thousand Land-men on Board, who had infallibly made themselves Masters of the Island, if some that envied *Cromwell* that glorious Conquest had not defeated the Design by unnecessary Delays in executing his Orders, and sending such Provisions, Arms, and Ammunition on Board the Fleet, that when they came to use them were found to be good for nothing. However, tho' these Forces were not so fortunate as to subdue the Island of *Hispaniola*, they did the Nation the next best Service they could possibly have perform'd in making a Conquest of *Jamaica*, which the *English* have kept Possession of to this Day.

His Forces  
reduce  
*Jamaica*.

Islands of  
*Savona*.  
*St. Catalina*.  
*Navaza*.  
*Guanabo*.  
*Tortuga*.

There are several small Islands near the Coast of *Hispaniola*, of which the chief are *Savona* and *St. Catalina*, at the South-East Part of the Island; *Navaza*, at the West End of *Hispaniola*; *Guanabo*, in the Bay of *Leogane*; and lastly, *Tortuga*, on the North-West Coast, an Island of between twenty and thirty Leagues in

in Circumference, in which there is an excellent Harbour of difficult Access.

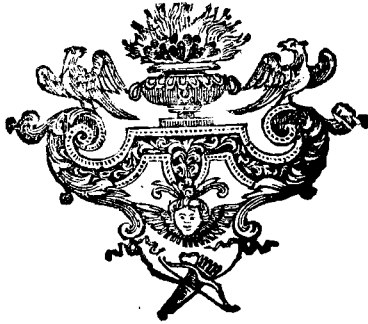
Spanish  
Island.

Here the Buccaneers and Free-booters of all Nations had their first Rendezvous, and fortifying the Island, bid Defiance to all Mankind for some Years. They consisted chiefly of the French Hunters of *Hispaniola*, who possess'd Part of that Island on the *Spaniards* deserting it, and spent their Time in hunting, and taking the black Cattle that run wild there. These were joined by great Numbers of *English* and *Dutch* and other Seamen, who having been barbarously treated by the *Spaniards*, form'd considerable Fleets, and made all *Spanish* Ships Prize that came in their Way; and sometimes, 'tis said, they made no Scruple of seizing the Ships of other Nations, or at least plundering them of their Ammunition and Provisions when they wanted themselves; but since the French King has oblig'd those People to submit to a regular Form of Government, and establish'd his Dominion in the North-West Part of the Island of *Hispaniola*, the Buccaneers have disus'd their Depredations at Sea as well as their Hunting by Land, and apply'd themselves to cultivate the Soil, and particularly to improve the Sugar Plantations there, in which they have been very successful. This Colony, as has been intimated already, does not only prejudice the *British* Sugar Plantations extremely, but will ever remain a Thorn in our Sides in time of War; for from hence they will be in a Condition to disturb the Trade of our *American* Colonies, unless we can find Means to remove them: And one Reason why the *Spaniards* have of late Years favour'd the French more than the *English* may be, that they dread the Power of the French more than the *English*,

Bucca-  
neers, their  
Original.

Spanish  
Islands.

since they have possess'd themselves of the North-West Part of *Hispaniola*, where they have a Variety of commodious Harbours for the greatest Fleets, with which they can at any time cut off the Trade between *Spain* and *America*.





### CHAP. III.

#### *Of the Island of Porto Rico.*



THE Island of *Porto Rico* is situated in 18 Degrees of Northern Latitude, and between 64 and 66 Degrees of Western Longitude, being of an oblong Form, about forty Leagues in Length from East to West, and twenty in Breadth from North to South, and lies about twenty Leagues East of *Hispaniola*.

Spanish Islands.

*Porto Rico.*  
Situation and Extent.

The *Indian* Name was *Boriquen*, and *Co-Name*. *Iumbus* when he discover'd it call'd it *St. John*, but the chief Town being afterwards built upon a commodious Harbour call'd *Porto Rico*, or *The Rich Harbour*, the Island lost both its former Names, and goes by the Name of *Porto Rico* to this Day.

The whole Island is pleasantly diversified with Woods, Hills, and Valleys, but has few large Plains, and is well watered with Springs and Rivers; only on the little Island, on which the City of *Porto Rico* stands, they have neither Spring or Brook, but fetch their fresh Water from the main Island, or preserve it in the time of the Rains in Cisterns and Reservoirs: However, as two of the most considerable Rivers discharge themselves into the same Bay, they easily import fresh Water from thence in Boats.

Face of the Country.

The

Spanish  
Islands.

*Porto Rico*  
City.

The chief Towns are, 1. *Porto Rico*, and

2. *St. Germain's*.

1. The Town of *Porto Rico*, or *St. John's*, is situated on a small Island in the Harbour from whence it takes its Name, the Island being about two Miles in Length, and join'd to the main Island by a narrow Causey. The Town stands upon an Eminence, and is about half a League in Circumference, built after the *Spanish* Model; and being a Bishop's See, has a handsome Cathedral and six or seven parochial and conventual Churches. The Entrance of the Harbour is very narrow, and defended by strong Forts and Batteries, which render the Town inaccessible by Sea.

Nor is the Place less pleasant than it is strong, for its elevated Situation gives it the Command of the Sea on the one Side, and of the main Island on the other, and the small Island in which it stands is planted with Fruit Trees which are green all the Year long.

*St. Ger-*  
*main's*.

2. The Town of *St. Germain's* is situated at the West End of the Island of *Porto Rico*, about four Miles from the Sea; but of this I do not meet with any particular Description.

Seasons.

Winds.

Their rainy and tempestuous Season is in the Months of *June*, *July* and *August*, when the Sun is near them, and then the Winds in these Seas are at South-East, tho' they are North-East at other times; but the Hurricanes (which they are subject to as well as the *Caribbee* Islands in their Neighbourhood) blow from every Point of the Compass; and it is about Midsummer, or something later, that they expect these Storms, tho' they do not happen every Year.

It is very fortunate that it rains here in those Months, which would otherwise be the hottest:

And

of the SPANISH ISLANDS. 239

And the Sea Breezes are another great Relief; for about eight in the Morning there rises a fresh Gale of Wind and blows till four in the Afternoon: From six in the Morning till the Sea Breeze rises is very hot, but five in the Afternoon is the hottest time of the Day: From three in the Morning till six it is coolest, then a Man may bear the Bed-cloaths upon him very well.

Spanish  
Islands.

The Time of the Rains is usually unhealthful; Foreigners especially find it so, as the Earl of *Cumberland* experienc'd, who, after he had taken the Town of *Porto Rico* with its Castles, was forc'd to abandon them again, having lost the greatest Part of his Men by the Flux, which leads me to give a short Abstract of the History of this Island.

*St. John de Porto Rico* was discover'd by *Columbus* in his second Voyage, in the Year 1493, who informs us that he met with some elegant Buildings and Gardens in this Island; but being employ'd in Discoveries on the Continent afterwards, it was not reduc'd under the Obedience of the *Spaniards*, or planted by them till the Year 1510, when *John Pounce de Leon*, Deputy-Governor of *Hispaniola*, being inform'd there were Gold Mines in *Boroquen*, obtain'd Leave of *Nicholas Obando* the Governor to plant a Colony there, and embarking with some few *Spaniards*, arriv'd at *Boroquen*; where pretending he only came to establish a friendly Commerce with the Natives, the chief Cacique, or Lord of the Island, made an Alliance with the *Spaniards*, and treated them very hospitably, shewing them two Rivers wherein were some Gold Sands. Whereupon *Pounce de Leon* introducing a good Number of *Spaniards*, and building several Forts in the Island,

History  
of this  
Island.

Spanish  
Islands.



The  
Spaniards  
Cruelty  
to the  
Natives.

Island, usurp'd the Dominion of it: And not content with taking the Country from the inoffensive Natives, he obtain'd a Commission from the Court of *Spain* to be Governor of the Island, under Colour whereof he made all the People Slaves, dividing them among his Captains and Followers, who employ'd those poor People in digging for Gold (of which it seems there was little to be found) and in all manner of Drudgery, such as Building, Planting, carrying Burthens, &c. using them as unmercifully as the *Spaniards* had done the Natives of *Hispaniola*. Whereupon some of the *Indians* run away to the Woods and Mountains, and others stood upon their Defence; but not being in a Condition to resist the Fire-Arms, Horses and Dogs of the *Spaniards*, they were at length most of them compell'd to submit to that cruel Bondage, and those that would not were tortur'd or torn in pieces with Dogs. The *Spanish* Writers relate abundance of incredible Stories of the Sagacity of their Dogs in distinguishing between those who submitted to this Slavery and those that refused to obey them: However, all agree that their Country-men hunted those naked People with Dogs in the Woods and Mountains as they would wild Beasts or other Game, and frequently *tore in pieces Men, Women, and Children in mere Sport*, turning them loose before their Dogs, as they would a Hare or a Fox: And when repeated Orders came from *Spain* to use the People better, and to prohibit the making the *Indians* Slaves, those Adventurers represented to his Catholick Majesty that they were Canibals, and procur'd Leave to make Slaves of all they were pleas'd to denominate such. And this is one Reason so many of the *American* Nations have been represented

represented as Canibals in *Europe* ; nothing short of such Prejudices could have induc'd any Christian Prince to have suffer'd his Subjects to be treated so barbarously as the *Indians* were by the *Spaniards* ; for tho' they claim'd their Country by virtue of the Pope's Grant, no Prince would ever have authoris'd them to worry and tear in pieces whole Nations after they had submitted to the *Spanish* Yoke, if these savage Adventurers had not first dress'd them up in horrid Colours, and falsely accus'd those inoffensive People of the most barbarous and unnatural Customs : And strange it is (as has been observ'd on other Occasions) that if almost all the *American* Nations were Canibals, as the *Spanish* Writers affirm'd, that there should not be one of those Nations left at this Day in the inland Countries that were never under the Dominion of any *European* Power, and consequently have not been brought off these Customs by any such Catholick Reformations. But to return to the History.

The City of *St. John de Porto Rico* was *Porto Rico* founded in the Year 1514, and continued in a flourishing Condition for many Years. Sir *Francis Drake* having a good Fleet under his Command with Land-Forces on Board gave several Assaults to the Town in the Year 1595, but was beaten from it. The Earl of *Cumberland* had better Success ; for with a much less Force he made himself Master of the Place the next Year with a Fleet set out at his own Expence, assisted by two Regiments of the Queen's, for it was Queen *Elizabeth's* good Husbandry to encourage private Men to be at the Expence of such Expeditions to the *West-Indies*, only lending them her Ships and Men. It was not often she put the Publick

*Spanish Islands.*

*Porto Rico* founded.

*Drake* re-  
puls'd  
there.



Spanish  
Islands.  
The Earl  
of Cum-  
berland  
takes the  
Town.

Loses his  
Men by  
Sickness,  
and forced  
to quit it.

to the whole Expence of them. But it was with great Hazard and Difficulty the Earl carry'd the Town of *Porto Rico*, tho' thus assisted; for in an Assault he made upon the Place, he fell from a Rock into the Sea in his Armour, and remain'd so long under Water before his People could get him out, that he was almost dead; and Sir *John Barkly* continued the Attack till the Earl recover'd; soon after which the Enemy abandon'd the Town and retir'd into their Forts, and these also surrender'd two or three Days afterwards. The Earl had determin'd to keep possession of *Porto Rico*, and from thence to have attack'd the *Spanish* Settlements on the Continent and Islands after he should have been re-inforc'd from *England*; but losing more than half his Men by the Bloody-flux in a very short time, he was compell'd to set sail for *England* on the 14th of *August*, with much less Treasure than he expected to have met with here; for the *Spaniards* having notice of his Coming, had carried off or conceal'd all that was valuable. The best Prize he made was eighty Pieces of Brass Canon he found in the Town and Forts. He demanded a great Sum of the *Spaniards* to ransom the Town from being burnt, which they promised to pay him; but finding his Men rot so fast they neglected to pay the Money, and tho' the Earl was press'd to set the City on fire on their disappointing him, he left the Town standing, and only demolish'd their Forts.

There is no doubt but *Porto Rico* would have been of vast Advantage to the *English* if they could have kept it; and had they come before it in the dry Season, possibly that Mortality among the Soldiers had not happen'd; which

which the Earl ascrib'd partly to the great Labour his Men sustan'd in this Service, but more to the heavy Rains that fell at that Season, and observes when there was no Rain the Dews that fell in the Evening were no less fatal to his Men, who chose to lie in the open Air in that hot Country in fair Weather: The Fruits of the Country also might contribute to this Distemper, which brings me to treat of the Produce of the Island of *Porto Rico*.

Spanish  
Islands.

The Soil is rich, producing long coarse Grass, which they feed their Cattle with, but never make into Hay. They have good Timber fit for the building of Ships, and Variety of Fruit-Trees, such as Cocoa's, Pine-apples, Mameys, Guava's, Banana's, Plantains, Palms, Oranges, Limes, Citrons, *Jamaica*-Pepper, and the bastard Cinamon. The Country also produces Rice and *Indian* Corn, but they make more Bread of the Cassavi-Root than of Corn, being too lazy to cultivate the Soil. The principal Produce of the Island for Exportation is Ginger, Sugar, and Hides, for they have vast Numbers of black Cattle here as well as in the neighbouring Island of *Hispaniola*; but they have more Goats and Hogs than they have of *European* Sheep, and the Mutton they have is poor dry Food: Their Pork is excellent, and their Kids are pretty good Meat: They have also all manner of *European* Poultry, and Plenty of Fish. Parrots are as common as Crows in *England*, and they are well stock'd with Wood-Pidgeons as well as Guanoes, a kind of great Lizard, which they esteem good Food in the *West-Indies*. They have also Land-Crabs, not unlike the Sea-Crab, which burrow in the Ground like Rabbits; but these are the Food of Dogs

Produce of  
*Porto Rico*.

Their  
Dogs feed  
on Land-  
Crabs.

Spanish  
Islands.

more than of Men. Those who were in the Expedition against *Porto Rico* with the Earl of *Cumberland* relate, that the Earl proposing to make this an *English* Colony, transported the *Spanish* Inhabitants to other Places; whereupon the Dogs set up a dismal Howl, which they continued all Night after their *Spanish* Masters were gone, and run away to the Woods next Day, which the *English* apprehended was in search of their Masters. However, the Dogs return'd to the Town again in the Evening; and after they were acquainted with the *English* left off their Howling in the Night-time, but still went every Day to the Woods by the Sea-side, where the *English* at length observed that they devour'd the Land-Crabs, these being their principal Food.

Gold,  
none here.

As to the Gold Mines that Travellers relate there are in this Island, there are none wrought at this Day; nor was there ever any that were very considerable, but possibly there might be some little Gold found in their Rivulets formerly, which invited the *Spaniards* to take possession of the Island; tho' I believe their chief Reason for keeping *Porto Rico* at present is, that it may not fall into the Hands of some other *European* Power that might disturb their Commerce with their *American* Dominions, and perhaps endanger the Loss of their more valuable Settlements on the Continent.

The  
Virgins  
Islands.

The *Virgins Islands* are the last *Spanish* Islands I shall mention. These are a Cluster of barren Rocks, a little to the Eastward of the Island of *Porto Rico*, through which the Passage is something difficult. They are scarce worth claiming by the *Spaniards*, or any other Nation; tho' they are generally said to belong to *Spain*.

T H E



T H E  
C O N C L U S I O N  
O F  
*Spanish America.*



N this Survey of the *Spanish* Conclu-  
Territories in *America*, it ap- sion.  
pears that they are the richest  
(if Gold and Silver are to be  
accounted Riches) and the  
most extensive that ever any  
Monarch possess'd since the

Flood. What are the Conquests and Acquisitions of *Alexander* or *Cæsar* if compar'd with these? especially at a Time when *Charles V.* was upon the Throne, who was Emperor of *Germany*, Sovereign of *Spain*, *Italy*, and the *Low-Countries*, and had Part of *Asia* and *Africa* under his Dominion?

This Prince was actually engag'd in War with the *Turk*, the *French*, the *Flemmings*, the *Africans*, and *Indians* of *North* and *South-America* almost at the same Instant: And in every

Conclu-  
sion.

The vast  
Extent of  
the *Spanish*  
Territo-  
ries in  
*America*.  
*Charles V.*  
the grand  
Knight-  
Errant.

every Part of the World was generally success-  
ful: But the Empire of *Mexico* and *Peru*, a  
Dominion of seven thousand Miles Extent al-  
most, was entirely subdu'd by the *Spaniards*  
during his Reign; so numerous were the En-  
terprizes his Forces were engag'd in, that he  
might well be deem'd the grand Knight-Errant  
of his Times; and *Cervantes* is suppos'd by  
some to have had an Eye to *Charles V.* in his  
*Don Quixot*, especially where he brings in the  
Hero charging a Flock of Sheep, to which  
the naked *Indians* might properly be resembled  
when they were attack'd by Men armed  
*Cap-a-pee* on Horseback, with the Advantages  
of Artillery and Fire-Arms. In this and in  
Shipping, it must be acknowledg'd that *Charles*  
*V.* had the better of *Alexander* and *Cesar*,  
and other Knight-Errants of Antiquity; for  
tho' the *Greeks* and *Romans* excell'd in mili-  
tary Discipline, which enabled them to subdue  
the Nations about them, their Conquests pro-  
bably would have been swifter and more ex-  
tensive if they had known the Use of Fire-  
Arms, and been better skill'd in Navigation.  
These render'd the *Spaniards* so much supe-  
riour to the *Indians*, that they might well be  
look'd upon as Sheep, if compar'd with their  
Conquerors, as they were call'd, tho' with as  
little Propriety as a Troop of Horse may be  
said to conquer a Flock of Sheep or Hares they  
trample under their Feet without Resistance.  
They might have stiled their Expeditions to  
*America* Executions, or barbarous Massacres;  
but the Name of Conquest (which carries in  
the Notion of it Hazard and Difficulty, and  
presumes the Enterprize to be just and honour-  
able) ought never to be profan'd and apply'd  
to Butchers and Hangmen, to Robbers, Pirates,  
and

## SPANISH AMERICA.

247

and Usurpers, who make no Scruple of torturing and murdering the inoffensive or industrious Part of their own Species to possess themselves of their Country and Treasures.

Conclu-  
sion.

But how barbarously or unjustly soever the *Spaniards* acquir'd the Dominion of *America*, they remain'd in the uninterrupted possession of it (except *Brazil*) for an hundred Years, and were possess'd of that too for threescore Years and upwards, namely, while *Portugal* was in possession of the *Spaniards*.

*America*  
possess'd  
by the  
*Spaniards*  
alone for  
100 Years.

The *English* and other *European* Nations seem'd to have resign'd the Dominion of that new World to the *Spaniards*, scarce endeavouring to make a Settlement, or send a Colony thither for three or fourscore Years after it was discover'd. *Sebastian Cabot* was employ'd indeed by *Henry VII.* of *England* to find out a Passage to the *East-Indies* by the North-West, in the Year 1496, and in that Attempt discover'd the North-East Coast of *America*; but no Endeavours were made to improve that Discovery till the Year 1560, when the *English* and some other *European* Nations began to promote a Fishery on the Banks of *Newfoundland*.

The first  
Attempt  
of the  
*English*,  
&c. on  
*Newfound-land*, 1560

*Monfieur Chatillon* carry'd a Colony of the *French* to *Florida*, in the Year 1562, and called that Part of the Country *Carolina*, in Honour of *Charles IX.* of *France*, which Name it retains to this Day; but the *French* were driven from it soon after by the *Spaniards*, which they revenged and then abandon'd this Country again. In the Year 1567, *Drake* sailed with Captain *Hawkins*, who had five Ships under his Command, to *Guinea*, and from thence to *Vera Cruz* in *Mexico*, with *Negro* Slaves, where the *Spaniards* agreed to traffick with them,

The  
*French* at-  
tempt to  
settle Co-  
lonies in  
*Florida*,  
1562.

Conclu-  
sion.

them, but surpris'd *Hawkins* and three of his Ships in the Harbour; and *Drake* return'd to *England*, having lost all he had in the World, which he reveng'd on the *Spaniards* two or three Years after by plundering *Nombre de Dios*, and seizing abundance of Treasure that was coming from *Panama*: And on his Return to *England* made Preparations for that memorable Voyage round the World, which he enter'd upon in the Year 1577, and being come into the *South-Sea*, took and plunder'd several *Spanish* Towns and made Prize of their Ships; after which he came home by the *East-Indies* and the *Cape of Good Hope*, in the Year 1580. The same bold Seaman took and plunder'd several *Spanish* Settlements in the *North-Sea* afterwards, but planted no Colonies in *America*. Sir *Walter Raleigh* procur'd the first Patent to govern such Countries as he should discover in *America*, in the Year 1584, and sent a Colony to *Virginia*, which was driven from thence by Famine again. The *English* miscarried a second and a third time in their Endeavours to settle a Colony at *Virginia* in the Years 1586 and 1587 (but here it is necessary to observe, that Sir *Walter Raleigh* gave the Name of *Virginia* to all the North-East Coast of *America*, now in possession of the *English*, in Honour of Queen *Elizabeth* his Sovereign.) The first Settlement the *English* actually made and establish'd in *America* was that at *James-Town* in *Virginia*, in the Reign of King *James I.* 1606: And eight or ten Years afterwards Colonies were sent to *New-England*: And about the same time the *French* made some Acquisitions in *Canada*. From whence it appears that the *Spaniards* had the sole Dominion of *America* for

*James-Town* in *Virginia*, the first Colony of the *English* in *America*, settled in 1606.

for upwards of an hundred Years (except that the *Portuguese* were Masters of *Brazil* part of the time.) And the *Spaniards* look'd upon themselves to be so much the Proprietors of those Countries that they sunk the Ships of every Nation they met with in those Seas, and hang'd up the Men; which put both the *English* and *Dutch* on making Reprisals, and questioning by what Title the *Spaniards* claim'd the sole Right to that Part of the World; and these Disputes continue in some measure to this Day, the *Spaniards* seldom failing to make Prize of such Ships as they find in the Gulph of *Mexico*, or on the Coast of *Terra-Firma*, when they find themselves strong enough; and we are become so very tame as to put up these Insults for the most part, while the *French* have in a manner bullied the haughty *Spaniards* into a Submission since their fixing themselves on the North-West of *Hispaniola*, and may now be looked upon as the most formidable Power in those Seas; and indeed that Nation seems to assume the Privilege at present of giving Laws to the *English* as well as the *Spaniards* both on the Continent and Islands. But to return to *Spanish America*.

Notwithstanding the vast Addition of Dominion and Treasure to the *Spanish* Crown, which their Princes enjoy'd almost without a Rival for the Space of an hundred Years, that Kingdom has been upon the decline ever since they were possess'd of them.

One Reason whereof may be that the Countries subject to them were too numerous and extensive for any Prince that had not the Capacity of an Angel to govern them. Even *Charles V.* who had so vast a Genius, and who actually attempted and made some Progress

Conclu-  
sion.

The *Spaniards* in *America* in a perpetual State of War with other Nations.

But humbled by the *French*, who are now very formidable in those Seas.

The *Spaniards* weaken'd by their Conquests.



Conclu-  
sion.

in the Conquest of three Parts of the World, and was not without Hopes of reigning sole Monarch of it, this great Prince sunk at last under the Weight of that unweildy Empire. Some Repulses he met with abroad, and the stubborn Opposition of his Subjects at home so ruffled his Soul, that he abandon'd the World and retir'd in Discontent to a Cloyster; and, fully convinc'd that he had grasped too much for any mortal Man to govern, divided his Dominions between his Brother and his Son.

Another Reason given for the Decline of the *Spanish* Monarchy on the Conquest of the new World is, their sending over annually such Numbers of their best Men thither for, the securing this foreign Prize, and neglecting their Affairs in *Europe*. And there is still a third Cause more fatal than both the former, namely, that the prodigious Treasures which at first flow'd in upon them render'd their People proud, lazy, and inactive, insomuch that most of their Manufactures were neglected, and at length the greatest Part of that Treasure they receiv'd from *America* came to be distributed among their more industrious Neighbours for the Merchandize they receiv'd from them, and the *Spaniards* were little more than Factors for the rest of *Europe*: The Gold and Silver of *America* indeed passes through their Hands, but very little of it remains long in their Country; from all which Considerations it is pretty evident that the *Spaniards* are rather Losers than Gainers by that envied Conquest.

The  
*Americans*  
the worse  
for the  
*Spaniards*.

The next Inquiry which it is natural to make is whether the *Americans* have been any great Gainers by their Intercourse with the *Spaniards*. It is true that they first instructed them in the Christian Religion, introduc'd Learning, with  
the

the Liberal and Mechanick Arts; and that the *Spaniards* first imported *European* Cattle, Corn, and Fruits, by which no doubt *America* is or might have been abundantly improved, and a more elegant Way of Living introduc'd than the *Indians* were before acquainted with.

But how dear did the first Generation of *Indians* pay for this! and in what a miserable Servitude do their Posterity still remain! The *Spaniards* indeed had Religion and Reformation in their Mouths, but practis'd the greatest Cruelty, Injustice and Oppression: And Religion was only made a Pretence for their Barbarity. They represented the Natives as Sodomites, Canibals, and Monsters, and then used them as such. Instead of reforming they actually extirpated the greatest Part of the Natives, and the rest were reduced to a State of Slavery: And as to the Christian Religion, it was so disguised by superstitious Rites, and its Doctrines so perverted, that instead of improving their Morals, the Natives who live under the *Spanish* Government are become the most vicious Mortals upon Earth: And all the present Inhabitants, whether descended from *European*, *Indian*, or *African* Ancestors, are oppress'd to a very great Degree. Necessitous and rapacious Governors are sent over from time to time, who make Merchandize of all Places of Trust and Profit to their inferior Officers; and these again fleece the miserable Inhabitants in their respective Governments till they have repaid themselves what has been extorted from them by their Superiors, to whom it is in vain to complain or petition for Justice, while a continued Series of Bribery runs through the whole Administration.

Conclu-  
sion.

The communicating the Christian Religion, Arts and Sciences, and the importing so many valuable Species of Animals, Corn and Plants, might have been esteem'd a very great Happiness to the *Americans*, if they had not been compell'd to resign their Country and Liberties in Exchange for them. But what Pleasure can Slaves take in the midst of the greatest Affluence? They see indeed all that is desireable in Life with their Eyes, but as they can call nothing of all this their own, it does but add to their Misery when they find they have no Share in these Blessings, or none at least but what they are liable to be deprived of every Moment by their imperious Masters. As it seems evident therefore that the *Americans* are not much the better for their Commerce with *Europe*, so some make it a Question whether the Inhabitants of this Continent have gain'd any great Advantage by their Intercourse with the new World.

We have certainly receiv'd great Quantities of Gold and Silver from thence, but the Multiplication and Increase of these Metals does not seem to have added much to our Happiness. In Proportion to the Importation the Value of them has decreased, and since Estates have been converted into Money, which may be hoarded up or lodg'd in Banks, Hospitality has visibly declin'd. The money'd Man is generally the most useles Member in a Common-wealth, where he does not apply it to Traffick. An ordinary Farmer employs more People, and does more good in his Neighbourhood than a Man that is possess'd of ten thousand Pounds and lives on the Interest of it.

But

But if we are not much better for the Gold and Silver of *America*, it must be acknowledged, however, that *Europe* reaps great Advantages from the rest of the Produce of that new World, which furnishes us with abundance of valuable Drugs and Merchandize we wanted. Our Colonies also take off vast Quantities of our Manufactures, and consequently employ great Numbers of People on this Side. Navigation and the Knowledge of Nature also has been extremely improv'd since our Discovery of these Countries; and in time, when we come to know one another better, and come to treat each other with more Humanity, there is no doubt but that they and we shall receive great Advantages by a mutual Intercourse, and the Communication of the Produce of the respective Continents.

The last Observation I shall make is, that the best *Spanish* Historians cannot be relied on: They have evidently made such Representations of the Country and the Natives as their Interest, their Vanity or Superstition prompted them to make, and have had very little Regard to the Truth of Things; and how false soever their Relations have been, they have generally been transcrib'd and copied by other Nations, who had no other Opportunity of informing themselves of the State of those Countries before the *Spaniards* arriv'd, insomuch that I have found as much Difficulty in discovering the true State of those Countries as if we had but just heard of them, especially as to the Religion and Morals of the *Indians* when the *Spaniards* came amongst them.

As to the numerous Nations of Canibals, Giants and Monsters that were said to be found in *America*, I am perfectly satisfy'd that these Relations

Conclu-  
sion.

The Un-  
certainty  
of the  
*Spanish*  
Accounts.

Conclu-  
sion.



Relations were all pure Fiction: And as to their human Sacrifices, I am very much in doubt upon the most strict and impartial Review whether there were any such. Certain it is these Matters were very much aggravated, if there was ever any Foundation for them: And it is strange, if many *Indian* Nations did formerly sacrifice Men, there should not be one left among the Nations unsubdued and unconverted that sacrifice Men at present. Their celebrated *Acosta* and other *Spanish* Writers do charge both the *Peruvians* and *Florida Indians* with sacrificing Children, which is now known to be false: Why may we not then suspect the Truth of the human Sacrifices they pretend there were among the *Mexican* Nations?

Another thing I cannot help doubting of is, the noble and elegant Buildings that are said to be found in the City of *Mexico* and some other Cities at the Arrival of the *Spaniards*. I must confess, when I first observ'd the concurrent Testimony of the *Spanish* Writers in these Particulars, I did give Credit to them, as the Reader will observe in the Description of the *Mexican* Cities; but having observ'd since, that there are no such Buildings to be found in any other Parts of *America*, I think we have some Reason to question whether these were not set in a better Light than they deserv'd: As to the Largeness of their Buildings, and the vast Stones they were compos'd of, these Particulars possibly may be true, since the whole Country were Slaves to their Princes, who could command as many of them as they pleas'd to assist in building their Palaces, Temples or Fortresses. But when it is related, that the Materials of their Buildings were of Jasper

Jasper and other polish'd Marble, when they had no Iron Tools to form or beautify the Stone; and when there are no such Works to be found in any Part of the Country which the *Indians* possess at this Day, and when so many other Particulars in the *Spanish* Historians have been found to be false, I cannot give entire Credit to all that has been written on this Head.

Conclu-  
sion.





THE  
PRESENT STATE  
OF  
*B R A Z I L.*

---

C H A P. I.

*Of the Situation and Extent of Brazil;  
of its Name, the Face of the Country,  
Springs, Rivers, Lakes, Seas, Air,  
Winds and Seasons.*

Brazil.  
———  
Situation.



COME now to the second grand Division of *America* I propos'd to describe, namely, that of *Brazil*, under the Dominion of the King of *Portugal*, which is situated between the Mouth of the great River *Amazon*, under the Equator, and the Mouth of the River *La Plata*, in 35 Degrees of South Latitude, being

being bounded by the *Atlantick Ocean* on the North and East, by the River *La Plata* on the South, and by the Province of *La Plata*, or *Paragua*, and the Country of the *Amazons* on the West, being two thousand four hundred Miles and upwards in Length from North to South, if we measure in a direct Line, and near four thousand if we take in all the Turnings and Windings of the Coast, but is not in many Places more than two thousand Miles broad, tho' in some the *Portuguese* may have penetrated four or five hundred Miles into the Country.

The *Portuguese*, who first discover'd this Name. Country, gave it the Name of *The Holy Cross*, but it afterwards obtain'd the Name of *Brazil* (by which it is now universally known) from the great Abundance of *Brazil Wood* which grows here.

As to the Face of the Country, the Land Face of is rather low than high near the Coast, but the Coun- exceeding pleasant, being chequer'd (according to *Dampier's* Expression) with Woods and Savannahs, or Meadow Grounds, and the Trees, for the most part, Ever-greens: But on the West Side of it, far within Land, are high Mountains, which separate it from the *Spanish* Province of *La Plata*, and in these are innumerable Springs and Lakes, from whence Springs, issue abundance of Rivers that fall into the Lakes, great Rivers *Amazon* and *La Plata*, or run and Riv- cross the Country from West to East, and fall eis. into the *Atlantick Ocean*, which last are very numerous, and of great Use to the *Portuguese* in turning their Sugar-Mills, and meliorating their Lands, which they over-flow annually, as the *Nile* does *Egypt*.



**Brazil.** Through every Province of *Brazil* there runs a great River (besides several lesser Streams) which communicates its Name to the Province, the Course whereof will be describ'd in treating of the respective Provinces.

**The Sea.** The only Sea that borders upon *Brazil* is that of the *Atlantick Ocean*, which washing its Coasts for the Space of three hundred Miles and upwards, forms several fine Harbours, Bays, Capes, and Promontories, the principal whereof are, 1. Cape *Roque*, in 4 Degrees odd Minutes South Latitude. 2. The Harbour of *Pernambuco*, or *Recief*, in 7 Degrees 30 Minutes South Latitude. 3. Cape *St. Augustin*, in 8 Degrees. 4. The Harbour or Bay of *All Saints*, in 13 Degrees odd Minutes. 5. The Harbour of *Porto Seguro*, in 16 Degrees 30 Minutes. 6. The Port and Bay of *Reio Janeiro*, in 23 Degrees South Latitude. 7. Cape *Frio*, some few Minutes East of *Reio Janeiro*. 8. The Port of *St. Vincent*, in 25 Degrees South Latitude. 9. Cape *St. Mary*, the most Southerly Promontory of *Brazil*, in 34 Degrees odd Minutes South Latitude. 10. The Port of *St. Gabriel*; and, 11. The Port of *St. Salvador*, situate on the North Shore, at the Entrance of the River *La Plata*: The rest of the Ports and Bays will be taken notice of in the Description of the respective Provinces.

**Air,  
Winds,  
and Sea-  
sons.**

As to the Seasons, Air and Winds, they are not the same throughout this extensive Country, but vary with the several Situations. I shall divide it therefore, in respect of the Seasons, into three Parts, *viz.* 1. The most Northerly, which lies next the Equator. 2. That Part of it which extends from 5 Degrees South Latitude to the Tropick of Capricorn; and, 3. That Part of the Country which is situated

situated between the Tropick and 35 Degrees of South Latitude. Brazil.

As to the North of *Brazil*, which lies almost under the Equator, this, like other Countries in the same Situation, is subject to great Rains and variable Winds, particularly in the Months of *March* and *September*, when they have Deluges of Rain, with Storms and Tornadoes; the Country is over-flow'd, and the Air unhealthful; but this Part is very little inhabited: The *Portuguese* only keep possession of the Coasts to keep Foreigners out. As to the Air, Winds and Seasons in that Part of *Brazil* which lies between 5 Degrees South Latitude and the Tropick of Capricorn, Mr. *Dampier* has given us this Account of it. Near the Equator.

He observes, that the Winds and Seasons are the very reverse here to what they are in other Parts of the World in the same Latitudes; for whereas the dry Season comes on in other Places South of the Equinoctial, when the Sun goes to the Northward of the Equator, and the wet Season begins when the Sun returns to the Southward; here the wet Season begins in *April*, when the South-East Winds set in with violent Tornadoes, Thunder and Lightning: And in *September*, when the Wind shifts to East North-East, it brings with it a clear Sky and fair Weather, and this is the Time of their Sugar Harvest. In the middle of Brazil.

There are but two Winds blow upon this Coast, viz. the South-East from *April* to *September*, and the North-East from *September* to *April* again: But thirty or forty Leagues out at Sea they meet with the constant Trade-Wind, which blows in the *Atlantick Ocean* all the Year round from the Eastward with very little Variation.

Brazil.

There is no Country between the Tropicks where the Heats are more tolerable, or the Air more healthful than this, being constantly refresh'd with Breezes from the Sea, and abounding in Lakes and Rivers, which annually over-flow their Banks: And in the in-land Part of the Country the Winds from the Mountains are still cooler than these that blow from the Ocean.

In the  
South of  
*Brazil.*

3. I proceed in the next place to enquire into the Air and Seasons of the most Southerly Part of *Brazil*, which lies without the Tropick of Capricorn, and this appears to be like other Countries in the same Climate, one of the most desirable Parts of the World, having a greater Share of fair Weather, and a more temperate Air than those Countries that are nearer, or those that are remov'd further from the Equator, and are generally blest'd with a most fruitful Soil. The Winds here are variable, at least beyond the Latitude of 30, and the little Winter they have is when the Sun is in the Northern Signs; but the Territories of the *Portuguese* are but very narrow here, lying between the Sea and the Mountains which divide them from that Part of *La Plata* subject to the *Spanish* Jesuites, deservedly call'd *The Jesuites Paradise*, from the Excellency of the Soil and Climate.



CHAP. II.

*Of the Provinces and chief Towns of Brazil, and the Buildings of the Natives.*



**B**RAZIL is usually divided into <sup>Brazil.</sup> fifteen Provinces or Captainships <sup>Provinces of Brazil.</sup> (viz.) 1. The Captainship of *Paria*. 2. *Maragnan*. 3. *Sipara*. 4. *Potigi*, or *Rio Grande*. 5. *Parayba*. 6. *Tamara*. 7. *Pernambuco*. 8. *Seregippe*. 9. *Batria de Todos Santos*. 10. *Ilheos*. 11. *Porto Seguro*. 12. *Spirito Santo*. 13. *Rio Janeiro*. 14. *St. Vincent*; and 15. *Del Rey*.

1. The Captainship of *Paria*, or *Para*, is *Paria*. bounded by the Mouth of the River *Amazon* and the Ocean on the North, by the Province of *Maragnan* on the East, by the Country of the *Tapuyers* on the South, and by the Country of the *Amazons* on the West. The principal River, which gives Name to the Province, runs through it from South to North, and falls into the Mouth of the River *Amazon*; and the chief Town, call'd also *Para*, or *Belem*, <sup>Para Town.</sup> is situated at the Mouth of the River *Amazon*, in 1 Degree of South Latitude, and 47 Degrees odd Minutes Western Longitude, where 'tis said the *Portuguese* keep a Garrison of four or five hundred Soldiers. 2. *Corupa*, <sup>Corupa Town.</sup> situated about fifty Leagues South-West of *Para*.

2. The

Brazil. 2. The Captainship of *Maragnan*, bounded by the Ocean on the North, by the Province of *Siara* on the East, by the *Tapuyers* Country on the South, and by *Paria* on the West.

Chief Town *St. Lewis*. The chief Towns are, 1<sup>st</sup>. *St. Lewis de Maragnan*, situated in 2 Degrees odd Minutes South Latitude, on an Island in a fine Bay made by the Mouths of their three principal Rivers, viz. 1. *Mary*, or *Maragnan*. 2. *Tapucary*; and 3. *Mony*.

The Town and Island of *St. Lewis* were formerly possess'd by the *French*, and then by the *Dutch*, but both Nations were driven from thence by the *Portuguese*, who are now in possession of it.

*Cuma*. 2<sup>dly</sup>, *Cuma*, situated on the Continent, over-against the said Island of *Maragnan*.

*Siara* Province. 3. The Captainship of *Siara*, bounded by the Ocean on the North and East, by the Province of *Potigi*, or *Rio Grande*, on the South, and by *Maragnan* and the *Tapuyers* Country on the West. The River *Siara*, which gives Name to the Province, runs from the South-West to the North-East, and falls into the Sea in 4 Degrees odd Minutes South Latitude, at the Mouth whereof stands the Town of *Siara*, and about twenty Leagues to the Eastward of it the Fort of *St. Luke*.

*Potigi* Province. 4. The Captainship of *Potigi*, or *Rio Grande*, bounded by *Siara* on the North, by the Ocean on the East, by the Province of *Payraba* on the South, and by the Country of the *Tapuyers* on the West. The chief River of *Rio Grande* gives Name to the Province, runs from West to East, and falls into the Ocean in 5 Degrees odd Minutes South Latitude, on which River stands the Town of *Tiguares*, being the only Town I meet with in this Province.

Chief Town *Tiguares*.

5. The

5. The Captainship of *Payraba*, bounded <sup>Brazil.</sup> by *Potigi* on the North, by the Ocean on the East, by *Tamaraka* on the South, and by the <sup>*Payraba* Province.</sup> Country of the *Tapuyers* on the West.

The River *Payraba* running from West to <sup>*Payraba* River,</sup> East, divides this Province in two equal Parts, and falls into the Ocean in 6 Degrees odd Minutes South Latitude.

The Town of *Payraba* lies on the South <sup>and Town.</sup> Side of this River, about five Leagues from the Sea. There are in it several Churches and Cloisters, and it is defended by a Wall and Forts; and two Leagues to the North of this Town lies the Port of *Lucena*, which is a good <sup>*Lucena* Harbour.</sup> Harbour for Ships.

6. The Captainship of *Tamara*, or *Tamari-* <sup>*Tamara* Province.</sup> *ca*, bounded by *Payraba* on the North, the Ocean on the East, by *Pernambuco* on the South, and the *Tapuyers* Country on the West. <sup>River, and Town.</sup> The chief River whereof is *Tamara*, in the Mouth whereof lies the Island and Town of *Tamarica*, which form a tolerable Harbour.

There is another Town call'd *Guia*, or *Goy-* <sup>*Guia* Town.</sup> *ana*, situated on the *Goyana*, about three Leagues from the Sea, but of none of these Towns do I meet with any particular Descriptions, only 'tis said the *Portuguese* have abundance of Sugar-Mills on these Rivers, Sugar being the principal Produce and Manufacture of the Country.

7. The Captainship of *Pernambuco* is bound- <sup>*Pernambuco* Province.</sup> ed by that of *Tamera* on the North, by the Ocean on the East, by *Serigippe* on the South, and by the Country of the *Tapuyers* on the West, extending two hundred Miles along the Coast from North to South, and an hundred and fifty Miles in Breadth from East to West, and was the principal Province belonging to the *Dutch*

*Brazil.* *Dutch* when they were in possession of *North-Brazil*. The chief Town whereof was *Pernambuco*, or *The Recief*. This Harbour was call'd *Pernambuco*, or rather *Infernoboco*, the Mouth of Hell, by the *Portuguese*, on account of the Rocks and Shoals under Water at the Entrance of it. It is compos'd partly of a Peninsula on the Continent, and partly of several small Islands which were built upon and fortify'd in the Time of the *Dutch*. The Peninsula is call'd *The Recief*, and lies in 7 Degrees 30 Minutes South Latitude, and 35 Degrees of Western Longitude, a little to the North of Cape *St. Augustin*. South of *The Recief*, and just opposite to it, is an Island built upon, and call'd *Maurice-Town*, from the Palace of Prince *Maurice*, which was situated on it, and hath a Communication with *The Recief* by a Bridge. It was naturally strong, surrounded by Water or Morasses, and defended by several Forts and Redoubts; but was however surrender'd by the *Dutch* to the *Portuguese*, in the Year 1647, for want of Ammunition and Provisions, which the *Dutch West-India* Company did not take care to supply their Colonies in *Brazil* with in due time.

*Olinda.* 2dly, The City of *Olinda* is situated on some small Hills on the Sea-Coast, a very little North of *The Recief*, and before the *Dutch* took it from the *Portuguese*, was the principal Port in *Brazil*, well built and fortify'd, and contain'd two thousand Inhabitants, besides the religious People and Slaves, who were both very numerous.

*Porto Calvo.* 3dly, *Porto Calvo*, or *Cavelo*, lies at the Conflux of four Rivers, about thirty Miles South of *The Recief*, and four Leagues West of the Sea.

Sea-Coast. This Place was strongly fortify'd when in the Hands of the *Dutch*. Brazil.


4thly, Cape *St. Augustin* Harbour is situated near the most Easterly Promontory of the same Name, in 8 Degrees odd Minutes South Latitude, and 35 Degrees of Western Longitude, and lies about twenty-five Miles North of the little Island of *St. Alexio*. The Entrance of the Harbour is dangerous on account of the Rocks which lie under Water; and this is the Case of most of the Harbours upon the Coast of *Brazil*, which may however safely be enter'd by the Assistance of the Pilots of the Coast. Cape St. Augustin.

8 and 9. The Captainship of *Babia de Todos Santos*, or of the Bay of *All Saints*, in which I include *Serigippe* is bounded by the Province of *Pernambuco*, from whence it is separated by the great River *St. Francis* on the North, by the Ocean on the East, by that of *Ilheos* on the South, and the *Tapuyers* Country on the West, being about two hundred and forty Miles in Length from North to South along the Sea-Coast; how far it extends to the Westward is uncertain, but it is esteem'd the richest and most populous Province in *Brazil*. The chief Towns whereof are, 1. *Serigippe*, or *St. Christophers*; and, 2. *Babia*, or *St. Salvador*. Captainship of Babia, or Serigippe.

1st, *Serigippe* is situated on a Bay of the Sea, in 11 Degrees South Latitude, between the great Rivers of *St. Francis* and *Real*. Serigippe Town.

2dly, *Babia*, or *St. Salvador*, of which the last is the true Name; but it is generally known by that of *Babia*, or the Bay, on account of the Commodiousness of the Harbour on which it stands. It is situated on a Hill above the Harbour, in 13 Degrees of South Latitude, Babia, or St. Salvador, the Capital of Brazil describ'd.



 *Brazil.* according to *Dampier*, and is the most considerable Town in *Brazil*, whether we regard the Beauty of its Buildings, its Magnitude, or its Trade or Revenue. The Harbour is capable of receiving Ships of the greatest Burthen. The Entrance whereof is guarded by a strong Fort, call'd *St. Antoni*, and there are other small Forts which command the Harbour, one whereof is built upon a Rock, about half a Mile from the Shore: close by this Fort all Ships must pass that anchor here, and must ride also within half a Mile of it at farthest between this and another Fort (that stands on a Point at the inner Part of the Harbour, and is call'd *The Dutch Fort*) but must ride nearest to the former all along against the Town, where there is good holding Ground, and less exposed to the Southerly Winds that blow very hard here. They commonly set in about *April*, but blow hardest in *May*, *June*, *July*; and *August*: But the Place where the Ships ride is expos'd to these Winds not above three Points of the Compass.

Beside these there is another Fort fronting the Harbour, and standing on the Hill upon which the Town stands. The Town itself consists of about two thousand Houses, the major Part of which cannot be seen from the Harbour; but so many as appear in Sight, with a great Mixture of Trees between them, and all placed on a rising Hill, make a very pleasant Prospect.

There are in the Town thirteen Churches, Chapels, Hospitals, and Monasteries, and one Nunnery, viz. the *Ecclesia Major*, or Cathedral, and the *Jesuites College*, which are the chief, and both in sight from the Harbour: *St. Antonio*, *St. Barbara*, both Parish Churches, the *Franciscans*,

*Franciscans*, and the *Dominicans*, and two Convents of *Carmelites*, a Chapel for Seamen close by the Sea-side, where Boats commonly land, and the Seamen go immediately to Prayers; another Chapel for poor People, at the farther End of the same Street, which runs along by the Shore, and a third Chapel for Soldiers at the Edge of the Town, remote from the Sea, and an Hospital<sup>n</sup> in the middle of the Town. The Nunnery stands at the outer Edge of the Town next the Fields, wherein, by Report, there are seventy Nuns. Here lives an Archbishop, who has a fine Palace in the Town, and the Governor's Palace is a fair Stone Building, and looks handsome to the Sea, tho' but indifferently furnish'd within, both *Spaniards* and *Portuguese* in their Plantations abroad affecting to have large Houses, but are little curious about Furniture, except Pictures. The Houses of the Town are two or three Stories high, the Walls thick and strong, being built with Stone, with a Covering of Pantile, and many of them have Balconies. The principal Streets are large, and all of them pav'd or pitch'd with small Stones. There are also Parades in the most eminent Places of the Town, and many Gardens, as well within the Town as in the Out-parts of it, wherein are Fruit-Trees, Herbs, Sallading, and Flowers in great Variety, but order'd with no great Care or Art.

Here are about four hundred Soldiers in Garrison. They commonly draw up and exercise in a large Parade before the Governor's House, and many of them attend him when he goes abroad. The Soldiers are decently clad in brown Linnen, which in these hot Countries is far better than Woollen. Beside

Brazil.

the Soldiers in Pay, he can soon have some thousands of Men up in Arms upon Occasion. The Magazine is on the Skirts of the Town, on a small Rising between the Nunnery and the Soldiers Church. 'Tis big enough to hold two or three thousand Barrels of Powder, but it seldom has more than an hundred. There are always a Band of Soldiers to guard it, and Centinels looking o't both Day and Night.

A great many Merchants always reside at *Babia*, for 'tis a Place of great Trade. *Dampier* found here above thirty great Ships from *Europe*, with two of the King of *Portugal*'s Ships of War for their Convoy, beside two Ships that traded to *Africa* only, either to *Angola*, *Gambia*, or other Places on the Coast of *Guinea*, and abundance of small Craft that only run to and fro on this Coast, carrying Commodities from one Part of *Brazil* to another.

Trade and Shipping.

The Merchants that live here are said to be rich, and to have many *Negroe* Slaves in their Houses, both Men and Women. They are chiefly *Portuguese*, Foreigners having but little Commerce with them; yet here was one Mr. *Cock*, an *English* Merchant, *Dampier* relates, a Gentleman of good Repute, who had a Patent to be *English* Consul, but did not care to take upon him any publick Character, because *English* Ships seldom came hither, and there had been none in eleven or twelve Years before *Dampier* was there in the Year 1699. Here was also a *Dane*, and a *French* Merchant or two, but all have their Effects transported to and from *Europe* in *Portuguese* Ships, none of any other Nation being admitted to trade hither. There is a Custom-house by the Seaside, where all Goods imported or exported are enter'd: And to prevent Abuses, there are five

five or six Boats that take their Turns to row <sup>Brazil.</sup> about the Harbour, searching any Boats they suspect to be running of Goods.

The chief Commodities that the *European* Ships bring hither are Linnen Cloths, both <sup>Goods imported and ex-</sup> coarse and fine, some Woollens, as Bays, <sup>ported.</sup> Seärges, Perpetuana's, &c. Hats, Stockings, both of Silk and Thread, Biscuit-Bread, Wheat-Flower, Wine (chiefly Port) Oil, Olive, Butter, Cheese, &c. and salt Beef and Pork would there also be good Commodities. They bring hither also Iron, and all sorts of Iron Tools, Pewter Vessels of all sorts, as Dishes, Plates, Spoons, &c. Looking-glasses, Beads, and other Toys; and the Ships that touch at *St. Jago* bring thence Cotton-cloth, which is afterwards sent to *Angola*.

The *European* Ships carry from thence Sugar, Tobacco, either in Roll or Snuff, never in Leaf. These are the Staple Commodities; besides which here are Dye-woods, as Fustick, &c. with Woods for other Uses, as speckled Wood, Brazil, &c. They also carry home raw Hides, Tallow, Train-Oil of Whales, &c. Here are also tame Monkeys, Parrots, Parroquets, &c. which the Seamen carry home.

The Sugar of this Country is much better than that which we bring home from our Plantations: For all the Sugar that is made here is clay'd, which makes it whiter and finer than our *Muscovado*, as we call our unrefin'd Sugar. Our Planters seldom refine any with Clay, unless sometimes a little to send home as Presents to their Friends in *England*.

Their Way of doing it is by taking some of the whitest Clay, and mixing it with Water till 'tis like Cream; with this they fill up the Pans with Sugar that are sunk two or three Inches

Brazil.

Inches below the Brim by the draining of the Molosses out of it, first scraping off the thin hard Crust of the Sugar that lies at the Top, and would hinder the Water of the Clay from soaking through the Sugar of the Pan. The Refining is made by this Percolation: For ten or twelve Days time, that the clayish Liquor lies soaking down the Pan, the white Water whitens the Sugar as it passes through it, and the gross Body of the Clay itself grows hard on the Top, and may be taken off at pleasure, when scraping off with a Knife the very upper Part of the Sugar, which will be a little fully'd, that which is underneath will be white almost to the Bottom: And such as is call'd *Brazil* Sugar is thus whiten'd. When *Dampier* was here, this Sugar was sold for fifty Shillings *per* Hundred, and the Bottoms of the Pots, which is very coarse Sugar, for about twenty Shillings *per* Hundred, both Sorts being then scarce; for here was not enough to lade the Ships, and therefore some of them were to lie here till the next Season.

The Voyage from  
Portugal  
to Brazil.

The *European* Ships commonly arrive here in *February* or *March*, and they have generally quick Passages, finding at that time of the Year brisk Gales to bring them to the Line, little Trouble then in crossing it, and brisk East-North-East Winds afterwards to bring them hither. They commonly return from hence about the latter End of *May*, or in *June*.

From  
Brazil to  
Guinea.

The Ships that use the *Guinea* Trade are small Vessels in comparison of the former: They carry out from hence Rum, Sugar, the Cotton Cloths of *St. Jago*, Beads, &c. and bring in Return Gold, Ivory, and Slaves, making very good Returns.

The

The small Craft that belong to this Town are chiefly employ'd in carrying *European* Goods from *Bahia*, the Center of the *Brazilian* Trade, to other Places on this Coast, bringing back hither Sugar, Tobacco, &c. They are sail'd chiefly with *Negroes* Slaves, and about *Christmas* these are mostly employ'd in Whale-killing; for about that time of the Year a sort of Whales, as they call them, are very thick on this Coast. They come in also into the Harbours and inland Lakes, where the Seamen go out and kill them. The Fat of them is boiled to Oil, the Lean is eaten by the Slaves and poor People. These are said to be but small Whales, yet here are so many, and so easily kill'd, that they get a great deal of Money by it. Those that strike them buy their Licence for it of the King, who, 'tis said, receives thirty thousand *Dollars per Annum* for this Fishery. All the small Vessels that use this coasting Traffick are built here, and so are some Men of War also for the King's Service: And the Timber of this Country is very good and proper for this Purpose, being more strong and durable than any we have in *Europe*, and they have enough of it.


Besides Merchants and others that trade by Sea from this Port, here are other pretty wealthy Men, and several Artificers and Tradesmen of most sorts, who by Labour and Industry maintain themselves very well, especially such as can arrive at the Purchase of a *Negro* Slave or two. And indeed, excepting People of the lowest Degree of all, here are scarce any but what keep Slaves in their Houses. The richer Sort, besides the Slaves of both Sexes whom they keep for servile Uses in their Houses, have Men Slaves who wait on them abroad for

Brazil.

Whale  
Fishery.

Ship  
Building.

The Way  
of Life of  
the Portu-  
guese at  
Bahia.

Brazil.  for State, either running by their Horses sides when they ride out, or to carry them to and fro on their Shoulders in the Town when they make short Visits near home. Every Gentleman or Merchant is provided with things necessary for this sort of Carriage. The main thing is a pretty large Cotton Hammock of the *West-India* Fashion, but mostly dy'd blue, with large Fringes of the same hanging down on each Side. This is carry'd on the *Negroes* Shoulders by the Help of a Bambo about twelve or fourteen Foot long, to which the Hammock is hung, and a Covering comes over the Pole, hanging down on each Side like a Curtain; so that the Person so carry'd cannot be seen unless he pleases, but may either lie down, having Pillows for his Head, or may sit up by being a little supported with these Pillows; and by letting both his Legs hang out over one Side of the Hammock, when he hath a mind to be seen he puts by his Curtain and salutes every one of his Acquaintance whom he meets in the Streets; for they take a piece of Pride in greeting one another from their Hammocks, and will hold long Conferences thus in the Streets; but then their two Slaves who carry the Hammock have each a strong well-made Staff with a fine Iron Fork at the upper End, and a sharp Iron below, like the Rest for a Musket, which they stick fast in the Ground, and let the Pole or Bambo of the Hammock rest upon them till their Masters Business or Compliment be over. There is scarce a Man of any Fashion, especially a Woman, will pass the Streets but so carry'd in a Hammock.

Artificers. The chief mechanick Trades here are Smiths, Hatters, Shoe-makers, Tanners, Sawyers, Carpenters, Coopers, &c. Here are also Taylors;

Taylor, Butchers, &c. which last kill the  
 Bulls very dextrously, sticking them at  
 one Blow with a sharp-pointed Knife in the  
 Nape of the Neck, having first drawn them  
 close to a Rail; but they dress them very  
 slovenly, *Dampier* says. It being *Lent* when  
 he came hither, there was no Buying any Flesh  
 till *Easter-Eve*, when a great Number of Bul-  
 locks were kill'd at once in the Slaughter-houses  
 within the Town, Men, Women and Children  
 flocking thither with great Joy to buy, and a  
 Multitude of Dogs almost starv'd following  
 them, for whom the Meat seem'd fittest it was  
 so lean. All these Tradesmen buy *Negroes* Slaves,  
 and train them up to their several Employ-  
 ments, which is a great Help to them: And  
 they having so frequent a Trade to *Angola* and  
 other Parts of *Guinea*, they have a constant  
 Supply of Blacks both for their Plantations and  
 Towns. These Slaves are very useful in this  
 Place for Carriage as Porters; for as here is a  
 great Trade by Sea, and the Landing-place is  
 at the Foot of a Hill too steep for drawing with  
 Carts, so there is great need of Slaves to carry  
 Goods up into the Town, especially for the  
 inferior Sort. But the Merchants have also  
 the Convenience of a great Crane that goes  
 with Ropes or Pullies, one End of which goes  
 up while the other goes down. The House  
 in which this Crane is stands on the Brow of  
 the Hill towards the Sea, hanging over the  
 Precipice, and there are Planks set shelving  
 against the Bank from thence to the Bottom  
 against which the Goods lean or slide as they  
 are hoisted up or let down. The *Negroes* Slaves  
 in this Town are so numerous that they make  
 up the greatest Part or Bulk of the Inhabitants:  
 Every House, as I said, having some both



Brazil.

Men and Women of them. Many of the *Portuguese*, who are Batchelors, keep of these black Women for Misses, tho' they know the Danger they are in of being poison'd by them if ever they give them any Occasion of Jealousy. These Slaves also of either Sex will easily be engag'd to do any sort of Mischief, even to murder, if they are hir'd to do it, especially in the Night.

Thus far Mr. *Dampier's* Description, who was there in the Year 1699: After which it is almost unnecessary to observe, that *Babia*, or *St. Salvador*, is the Capital of *Brazil*, the Residence of the Vice-roy and the Courts of Justice, and the See of an Archbishop, to whom the rest of the Bishops of *Brazil* are Suffragans. This City was founded by *Thomas de Sousa*, a *Portuguese*, in the Year 1541, and is observ'd not to be very strong on the Land-side, being commanded by some neighbouring Hills, and accordingly it has been frequently taken and retaken by the *Dutch*, the *Spaniards*, and *Portuguese*; but the last have now continued in the quiet Possession of it for fourscore Years and upwards.

10. The Captainship of *Ilheos* is bounded by that of *Babia* on the North, by the Ocean on the East, by the Province of *Porto Seguro* on the South, and by the Country of the *Tupinambes* on the West. There are two considerable Rivers in this Province, the one nam'd *St. Antonio*, which separates it from the Province of *Seguro*, rising in the West and running Easterly falls into the Ocean in 16 Degrees odd Minutes South Latitude. 2. The River *Ilheos*, which rising in a Lake to the Westward of this Province, runs to the East and falls into the Sea about twenty Leagues to the North

The Captainship of  
*Ilheos*.

*St. Antonio*  
River.

*Ilheos*  
River.

North of *St. Antonio*. The chief Town, also named *Ilheus*, stands on a Promontory near the Mouth of the said River, in 15 Degrees odd Minutes South Latitude, and is only remarkable for the Sugar-Mills. Brazil.  
*Ilheus* Town.

11. The Captainship of *Porto Seguro* is bounded by that of *Ilheus*, from whence it is separated by the River *Antonio* on the North, by the Ocean on the East, by the Province of *Spirito Santo* on the South, and by the Country of the *Tupinambes* on the West. The River of *Dolce*, or the River of sweet Water, is the largest in this Province. It rises in the Mountains to the Westward, and running Eastward falls into the *Atlantick Ocean* in 20 Degrees South Latitude; besides which there are three other Rivers that run parallel to it (*viz.*) the River of *Crocodiles*, the *Alqua*, and the River of *St. Michael*. The Captainship of *Porto Seguro*,  
Three other Rivers.

The chief Towns are, 1<sup>st</sup>, *Porto Seguro*, situate upon a Rock near the Sea-coast, in 17 Degrees South Latitude. 2<sup>dly</sup>, *Sancta Cruz*, about three Leagues South of *Seguro*, and *Sancta Amaria*, a little further to the Southward. Towns of *Porto Seguro*,  
*Sancta Cruz*, and  
*Sancta Amaria*.

12. The Captainship of *Spirito Santo* is bounded by that of *Seguro* on the North, by the Ocean on the East, by the Province of *Rio Janeiro* on the South, and by the Country of the *Tupinambes* on the West. The principal River of this Province is that of *Pariba*, or *Parina* River, which falls into the *Atlantick Ocean* in 22 Degrees odd Minutes South Latitude. The only Town I meet with here is *Spirito Santo*, situate in 20 Degrees 40 Minutes South Latitude, on the Banks of a River of the same Name, about twenty-fix Miles. The Captainship of *Spirito Santo*.  
River.

Brazil. Miles from the Sea, a good Harbour, but of difficult Entrance.

The Captainship of *Rio Janeiro*. 13. The Captainship of *Rio Janeiro*, so call'd from a celebrated Bay and River of that Name, discover'd in the Month of *January*, in the Year 1515, is bounded by the Province of *Spirito Santo* on the North, by the Ocean on the East, by the Captainship of *St. Vincent* on the South, and by the Mountains which separate it from *La Plata* or *Paraguay* on the West, being about two hundred Miles long, and as many broad. This Bay and River are now resorted to by the *Portuguese* as much as any Part of *Brazil* on account of the rich Gold Mines that have been discover'd in the Mountains to the Westward of this and the neighbouring Province of *St. Vincent*; these have occasion'd the building and peopling the Banks of the River *Janeiro* more than any other Part of *Brazil*, and brought hither a very great Trade.

Chief Town *St. Sebastian*. The chief City of *St. Sebastian* is situated in 23 Degrees South Latitude, on the West Side of this River, about two Leagues from the Sea, and defended by several strong Forts. It is the See of a Bishop Suffragan to the Archbishop of *St. Salvador*, or *Bahia*. 2dly, *Los Reyes*, or *Angra de Los Reyes*, situate about twelve Miles West of the Bay of *Rio Janeiro*. 3dly, The Town and Harbour of *St. Salvador*, over-against which lies the Cape or Promontory call'd *Cape Frio*, in 23 Degrees odd Minutes South Latitude, and in 42 Degrees of Western Longitude.

The Captainship of *St. Vincent*. 14. The Captainship of *St. Vincent* is bounded by that of *Rio Janeiro* on the North, by the Sea on the East, by the Province of *Del Rey* on the South, and by the Mountains which

which separate it from *La Plata* on the West, Brazil. extending in Length from North to South three hundred Miles and upwards, viz. from the Tropick of Capricorn to 28 Degrees South Latitude, and is reckoned two hundred Miles broad at the North End of it, but not more than ninety or an hundred Miles broad in the South. The chief Towns are, 1<sup>st</sup>, *St. Vincent*, Chief Towns St Vincent, situated at the Confluence of three Rivers on a fine Bay of the *Atlantick Ocean*, in 24 Degrees odd Minutes South Latitude, and defended by several Forts. This Harbour is at present in a flourishing Condition on account of the Gold Mines that have been discover'd in the Mountains to the Westward; but the Town which has the most immediate Advantage by them is, 2<sup>dly</sup>, that of *St. Paul*, built on purpose for their Security, and situate about an hundred Miles North-West of the Town of *St. Vincent*. 3<sup>dly</sup>, The Town of *Santos*, situate on the same Bay with that of *St. Vincent*, and a little to the Northward of it, by some reckon'd the chief Town in the Province.

15. The fifteenth and last Province of *Brazil* The City is that of *Del Rey*, bounded by *St. Vincent* on the North, by the *Atlantick Ocean* on the East, by the Mouth of the River *La Plata* on the South, and by the Country of *La Plata*, or *Paragua*, on the West, extending from Latitude 28 to Latitude 34 odd Minutes, being four hundred Miles in Length from North to South, but scarce an hundred broad in any Place from East to West. This Province has been pretty much neglected by the *Portuguese* till of late Years. But since they have found Gold in the adjoining Province of *St. Vincent* they have built several Forts on the North Side of the River *La Plata*, and on the Islands

Brazil.

Islands at the Mouth of it to prevent the *Spaniards* settling there again, who were once possess'd of the North Side of that River. This has already occasion'd some Hostilities between the *Spaniards* and *Portuguese*, and possibly may occasion a War between them one time or other; for the Gold Mines are such a Bone of Contention that no Peace can be of any long Duration between two Powers situated as the *Spaniards* and *Portuguese* are, for their Territories are divided only by the Mountains which separate *Brazil* from *La Plata*, or *Paragua*, in which the Gold they both thirst after is supposed to be found; but no doubt the *Portuguese* conceal the Place as well as they can from the *Spaniards* and all other *European* Nations, as they do their Mines of Diamonds and other precious Stones they have discover'd in *Brazil* of late Years: However, there is no doubt but they have great Plenty of Gold and precious Stones in some Part of *Brazil* (and most probably to the Southward) there being brought great Quantities of both from thence annually to *Europe*, which has pretty much sunk their Value.

Diamonds  
and other  
precious  
Stones.

No Division  
of the  
Country  
before the  
*Europeans*  
arriv'd.

Towns,  
Houses,  
and Fur-  
niture of  
the Na-  
tives.

Before the *Portuguese* planted *Brazil*, the Country was not divided into Provinces, but was all one great Common, every Tribe and Family inhabiting and cultivating what Part of it they saw fit, and removing their Dwellings whenever they pleas'd, only every Man was look'd upon as the Proprietor of what he plant-ed or possess'd till he remov'd and left that Part of the Country with the Fruits and Pro-duce of it for another he liked better: And as for their Towns, they consist'd usually of five or six great B.r.s, each of which contained two or three hundred and sometimes a thousand

thousand People, and over these the Head of the Tribe or Family presided. The Materials of their Houses were only long Poles and Reeds, or *Palmeto* Leaves for a Covering, and consequently it was no great Trouble for them to remove or to erect their Town in another Place: Nor was their Furniture any great Burthen to them, which consisted of Hammocks of Cotton Net-work, fasten'd to Poles, in which they slept; some earthen Pots and Pans, and their Gourds and Calabashes which served them cut in half for Pails, Tubs, and Drinking-cups, for they have them of all Sizes; besides which they had Baskets, in which they carried their Provisions on a March; and the Ornaments of their Houses were their Bows, Arrows, Spears, and other Arms.

There were some vagrant Nations also that had no settled Abode, but living in Tents were continually removing from Place to Place, and both the one and the other as often ty'd their Hammocks to the Boughs of Trees and slept without Doors as within, but used to make Fires near their Lodging to correct the Air, and prevent the ill Effects of the cold Dews that fell in the Night-time, or as others imagine to keep off wild Beasts and noxious Vermine and Insects.



## C H A P. III

*Of the Persons and Habits of the Brazilians;  
their Genius and Temper, Arts and Sci-  
ences, Food, Exercises, and Diversions.*

Brazil.

Two great  
Nations  
of the

Brazilians



THE Portuguese and Dutch Writers give the Name of *Tapuyers* to the Natives which inhabit the North Part of *Brazil*, and the Name of *Tupinambes*, or *Tupinamboys*, to those who dwell in the South of *Brazil*, but divide these again into several petty Nations, differing in Language, but not much in Manners and Customs; and therefore I shall only treat of them under the two first grand Divisions of *Tapuyers* and *Tupinambes*.

*Tapuyers*,  
their Per-  
sons.

Wear no  
Cloaths.

The *Tapuyers* are Men of a good Stature (but not the Head and Shoulders taller than *Dutchmen*, as some have related) and as they inhabit a hot Climate, almost under the Equator, are of a dark Copper Colour, their Hair black, and hanging over their Shoulders; but they suffer no Hair on their Bodies or Faces, and go almost naked, the Men only inclosing the *Penis* in a Case, as some other *Americans* do, and the Women concealing their Nudities with Leaves, like their Mother *Eve*. The Man has also a Cap or Coronet of Feathers, but I don't perceive the Women have any Covering on their Heads.

Their

Their Ornaments are glittering Stones hung upon their Lips or Nostrils, and Bracelets of Feathers about their Arms. Some of them paint their Bodies of all manner of Colours, whereas others rubbing their Bodies with Gums, stick beautiful Feathers upon them, which make them look more like Fowls than human Creatures at a Distance.

Brazil.

Orna-  
ments.  
Paint.

Feathers.

The *Tupinambes*, who inhabit the South of *Brazil*, are of a moderate Stature, and not so dark a Complexion as their Northern Neighbours who lie nearer the Line; but neither the one or the other are so black as the *Africans* are, who lie in the same Latitude, it having been observ'd already that there were no *Negroes* in *America* till they were transported thither by the *Spaniards* and *Portuguese*. The *Tupinambes*, however, resemble the *Africans* in their flat Noses, which are not natural, but made so in their Infancy, a flat Nose being esteem'd a Beauty among them. They have also black curl'd Hair on their Heads, but suffer no Hair to grow on their Bodies or Faces any more than the *Tapuyers*, and paint themselves like the Northern *Brazilians*.

*Tupinambes*, their  
Persons.

The general Food of the *Brazilians* was the Food. *Cassavi*, or *Mandioka* Root, dry'd and ground to Powder, of which they made Cakes, like our Sea-Biscuit. They carry'd this Flower with them also on Journeys, and it serv'd them, infus'd in Water, as the *Scots* do Oatmeal, both as Meat and Drink; but I don't find they had any Sort of Corn till the *Europeans* carry'd it thither. They used also to feed on other Roots, Fruits, and Herbs, and such Venison as they could take in Hunting, as also on Fish and Fowl, if they lived near the Water, and with every thing eat a great deal



*Brazil.* of Pepper ; some have added, that they were Canibals, and eat human Flesh from one End of *Brazil* to the other ; but late Travellers observing no such thing, little Credit can be given to this. The general Liquor the Natives drink is Spring-Water, of which, 'tis said, they have the best and the greatest Variety in the World ; but there are other kinds of Liquors which have a good Body, made of their Fruits press'd and infus'd, or of Honey, with which they sometimes get very drunk, sitting whole Days and Nights over their Cups. They are charg'd also with being a very lazy Generation, that will never work or hunt but when Necessity compells them : And as to Arts and Sciences, they were Masters of scarce any, unless the Art of Spinning and Weaving, and forming their Arms, (which consisted of Bows, Arrows, Launces, and Darts) and the Art of Building, which was but mean, for their Houses did not want any great Contrivance. As for Letters, Characters, and Arithmetick, they were perfectly ignorant of them.

Arts and  
Sciences.

They had some Knowledge of the Virtues of several Herbs and Drugs, which they frequently administer'd with Success to the Sick ; but a merry Writer relates, that when they despair'd of recovering the Patient, all his Relations agreed to knock him on the Head, which they thought much better than a lingering Death ; and this may be as true as their devouring human Flesh.

*Exercises.* Hunting, Fishing, and Fowling were rather their Business than Diversion, being absolutely necessary for the Support of their Families, in a Country where they had no tame Cattle or Corn : Drinking, Singing, and

Diversions

and Dancing were more properly their Diversions, these they practis'd on their rejoicing Days, on a Victory, or the Birth of their Children. They are great Smoakers, and take the strongest Tobacco: Their Pipes are a hollow Reed or Cane, and the Bowl a large Nut-shell that holds almost a Handful of Tobacco.

They are a tractable and ingenious People, Genius. ready to learn any Art or Science the *Portuguese* will teach them, and take nothing so kindly of the Fathers as the instructing their Children; which has given the Jesuites an Opportunity of making abundance of Converts; and those who live under the *Portuguese* generally conform themselves to their Customs in Eating, Drinking, Cloathing, &c. Few of these go naked.





## C H A P. IV.

*Of the Animals of Brazil.*

Brazil.  
Animals.

Those of  
Europe  
carry'd  
thither.

Beasts  
proper to  
this Coun-  
try.



It has been observ'd of the rest of *America*, so here they had neither Horses, Cows, Sheep, Affes, Hogs, Cats, or Dogs (unless some little mungrel Curs) before the *Europeans* carry'd them over, of all which they have now great Abundance.

The Beasts that were found in this Country were the same with those already describ'd in *Mexico* and *Peru*, particularly the *Peruvian* Sheep, their Peccaree (to which the *Europeans* gave the Name of Hogs, from some Resemblance they had to our Hogs) the Sloth, the Armadillo, the Opossum, the Guanoë, the Raccoon, and Flying-Squirrel, with great Variety of Monkeys, Deer, Hares, and Rabbits, differing something from ours, the Ant, Bear, and some Lions and Tygers, but neither so large or fierce as those of *Africa*, and Porcupines. Many of these Animals have different Names given us by Travellers, but are the same already enumerated and describ'd in *Mexico* or *Peru*.

Fowls.

Their Fowls are Maccaws, Parrots, Paroquets, the Quam, the Curasoe, the Bill-Bird, the Cockrecoe, the Partridge, the Wood-Pigeon, the Heron, the Pelican, the Crab-catcher, the Fishing-Hawk, the Ostrich, the Cormorant,

Cormorant, the Curlew, the Carrion-Crow, and the Humming-Bird; all which having been already describ'd, I would not tire the Reader with Repetition. They have also great Variety of Singing-Birds, several Species of Wild-Ducks, Wild-Geese, and Dunghil-Fowls, and there is not any sort of Poultry in *Europe* but what has been carry'd thither by the *Portuguese*: However, Fowls of all Kinds are but dry Meat in these hot Climates; nor is their Mutton very good; Pork is the best Flesh we eat between the Tropicks, and observ'd to be as easy of Digestion there as any Meat.

The most surprizing Relations Travellers entertain us with are concerning the Multitude and monstrous Size of their Serpents. We are told of some that are thirty Foot long and upwards, as big about as an Hoghead, and which will swallow a whole Buck, or a Man, and that they easily take either by throwing their Tails about them: And I remember, some Travellers that have wrote of the *East-Indies* have mention'd Serpents that have swallow'd a Buck Horns and all; but as I could never hear of any such Monsters when I was in the *East-Indies*, or of any Serpents that were any thing near that Size, I can't help doubting whether there be any such Monsters here, how gravely or positively soever such Stories are related; and I am apt to think at last that they have mistaken the Crocodile for a Serpent here as well as elsewhere, tho' even this Creature does not come up to the Dimensions of this pretended Serpent.

The same Writer (Mr. *Nieuboff*) has furnish'd us in his Cuts with a Dragon that has Wings and Feet, an Animal which I am still  
of

Brazil.

of opinion had never any other Existence than in the Brains of the ancient Poets. Indeed the Word Dragon is found in Scripture, but as the Creature is not describ'd there, the Term may belong to an Animal of a different Form. I believe no one will pretend to affirm that our Translators have never mistaken the Nature and Form of some Animals we meet with in Scripture: For I don't find the Learned are agreed about the Behemoth and the Unicorn any more than they are about the Dragon. But commend me to my Friend *Harris*, who tells us of a Water-Snake in *Brazil* near forty Foot long, and every way proportionable, in whose Body were found two whole wild Boars he had swallow'd. One would think our Voyage-Writers were lying for a Wager in these Cases. As for the Amphibena, or Snake with two Heads, I think 'tis agreed now that he really has but one; only some short-sighted People mistook his Tail for a Head, it seems.

Insects.

Here is also found the Rattle-Snake, and several other Species of Snakes, which will be describ'd when I come to treat of the *British* Plantations in *America*. They have also Scorpions, Centepees, Spiders, and other venomous Insects of an extraordinary Size: And their Ants are almost as troublesome here as in *Africa*, marching in great Bodies, and devouring every thing in their Way, and are only to be destroy'd by Fire or Water, and one Species of them, 'tis said, have Wings. Here also is the Fire-Fly, which seems to differ but little from the Glow-Worm, only in its Wings: When any of these fix on Boughs of Trees they appear at a little Distance like so many Stars.

Of

Of Bees they reckon up twelve several Sorts, some of which have vast Nests in hollow Trees in the Woods, and others in Holes of Rocks, and yield them great Quantities of Honey and Wax ; and the Honey does not only serve them for Food, but they make a Liquor with it that has some Resemblance of Mead.

Brazil.

Their Seas, Lakes, and Rivers, are full Fish. of excellent Fish, and, as *Dampier* has observ'd, the lean Flesh of the Whales, of which they have great Plenty on this Coast, is eaten by the Slaves and poor People at *Brazil*. But the best Fish on their Coast is the Manatee, as big as an ordinary Ox, which has been already describ'd in *Mexico*. They have also the Sword-Fish, Thrasher, Paracood, Old-wife, Cavally, Gar-fish, Mulletts, Snooks, Herrings, Mackerel, and Turpoons already describ'd, Oysters, Crabs, Shrimps, Prawns, and other Shell-fish. Their best River Fish has a Resemblance of our Perch, and they have others not unlike Jacks and Carp.

Of amphibious Animals they have Tortoises of three Kinds, viz. the Hawksbill, the Loggerhead, and the green Tortoise; but of these it seems the *Portuguese* never eat, tho' our Seamen esteem the green Tortoise very good Food. There are also great Numbers of Crocodiles in their Lakes and Rivers, but not so large as those of *Africa* ; and they have a Creature, which the *Portuguese* call *Cachora de Agua*, or the Water-Dog, as big as a Mastiff, and hairy from Head to Tail ; he has four short Legs and a long Head, and is of a dark Colour, and lives in fresh Water Lakes and Ponds, but comes on Shore to sun himself, and is said to be good Food.

Amphibious Animals.



## C H A P. V.

*Of their Plants and Vegetables.*

Brazil.

Vegeta-  
bles.

THE Soil of *Brazil*, according to *Dampier*, is generally good, producing very large Trees of divers Sorts, and fit for any Uses. Their Savannahs or Pastures are laden with Grass and Herbs, and being cultivated, produce every thing that is proper for such Countries as lie between the Tropicks, as Cotton, Tobacco, Indico, Sugar-Canes, Maiz, or *Indian* Corn, and Fruits.

Forest  
Trees.

Of their Forest-Trees the chief are, the *Sapiera*, the *Vermiatico*, the *Commefferie*, the *Guiteba*, and the *Serrie*; the speckled Wood, the *Fustick*, and other dying Woods; three Kinds of *Mangrove-Trees*, and the *Manchinele-Tree*.

The *Sapiera* is a large tall Tree, very good Timber, and made use of in building Houses, as is also the *Vermiatico*, a tall strait-body'd Tree, which furnishes them with Plank two Foot broad, and of the Bodies of these Trees they make their Canoes, or little Country Boats all of a Piece, the Body of the Tree being only scoop'd hollow, and shap'd something like a Boat at the Head and Stern; and tho' they are so narrow that they frequently over-set they can't sink, and the *Indians*, who excell in Swimming, make no Difficulty when they are over-set to turn them up again.

The

The Commesferie and the Guiteba are most used in building of Ships, for which Purpose they are as much esteem'd as Oak with us, and are said to be harder and more durable Wood. The Serrie-Tree resembles the Elm, and is very durable in Water. Their Mangrove Trees are red, white and black, the red being used in tanning Leather here, of the black they make good Plank, and of the white, Masts and Yards for their Barks, both the black and white being much larger in *Brazil* than in the Gulph of *Mexico*. Brazil.

There grows also in *Brazil* a wild Cocoa-nut Tree, neither so tall or so large as those that grow in the *East* or *West-Indies*. They bear Nuts as the others, but not a quarter so big as the right Cocoa-nuts. The Shell is full of Kernel, without any hollow Place or Water in it, and the Kernel is sweet but very hard both for the Teeth and Digestion. These Nuts are in much Esteem for making Beads for *Paternosters*, Bowls of Tobacco-Pipes, and other Toys; and every small Shop at the Bay has a great many to sell. At the Top of these bastard Cocoa-Trees among the Branches there grows a Sort of long black Thread, like Horse-hair, but much longer, which by the *Portuguese* is call'd *Tresabo*; of these they make Cables, which are very serviceable, strong and lasting; for they will not rot as Cables made of Hemp, tho' they lie expos'd to Wet and Heat. These are the Cables which they keep in their Harbours to let out to hire to *European* Ships, and resemble the *Coyre* Cables.

There are also in *Brazil* three Sorts of Cotton Trees, but very little of the right *West-India* Cotton Shrub, of which the Cotton Cloth is made.



Brazil.

Fruits.

As to Fruits they have several Kinds of Oranges and Limes, Pomegranates, Pomecitrons, and *European* Grapes; but all these have been transported thither by the *Portuguese*. There were no such Fruits in *America* till the *Europeans* introduc'd them. They have also Plantains, Banana's, Guava's, the true Cocoa-Nut, Cabbage-Trees, Custard-Apples, Sourfops, Cashews, Papahs, Jenipahs.

The Sourfop is a Fruit as large as a Man's Head, of an oval Shape, green on one Side and yellowish on the other when ripe. The Outside or Coat is pretty thick and very rough, with small sharp Knobs, the In-side is full of a spongy Pulp, with black Seeds or Kernels, in Shape and Bigness like a Pumpkin-seed. The Pulp is very juicy, of a pleasant Taste and wholesome. You suck the Juice out of the Pulp, and so spit it out. The Tree or Shrub that bears this Fruit grows about ten or twelve Foot high, with a small short Body, the Branches growing pretty strait up. The Twigs are slender and tough, and so is the Stem of the Fruit. This Fruit grows also both in the *East* and *West-Indies*.

The Cashew is a Fruit as big as a Pippin, pretty long, and bigger near the Stem than at the other End, growing tapering. The Rind is smooth and thin, of a red and yellow Colour. The Seed of this Fruit grows at the End of it. 'Tis of an Olive Colour, shap'd like a Bean, and about the same Bigness, but not altogether so flat. The Tree is as big as an Apple-Tree, with Branches, not thick, yet spreading off. The Boughs are gross, the Leaves broad and round, and in Substance pretty thick. This Fruit is soft and spongy when ripe, and full of Juice. It is very pleasant,

pleasant, and gratefully rough on the Tongue, and is accounted very wholesome. This Fruit also grows both in the *East* and *West-Indies*.

The Jenipah, or Jenipapah, is a Sort of Fruit of the Calabash or Gourd kind. It is about the Bigness of a Duck-Egg, and somewhat of the oval Shape, and is of a grey Colour. The Shell is not altogether so thick nor hard as a Calabash. 'Tis full of whitish Pulp mixt with small flat Seeds, and both Pulp and Seeds are taken into the Mouth, but sucking out the Pulp they spit out the Seeds. It is of a sharp and pleasing Taste, and is very innocent. The Tree that bears it is much like an Ash, strait-body'd, and of a good Height, clear from Limbs till near the Top, where the Branches put forth a small Head. The Rind is of a pale grey, and so is the Fruit.

Beside these, here are many Sorts of Fruits which are not met with any where else, as Arisah's, Mericafah's, Petango's, &c. Arisah's are an excellent Fruit, not much bigger than a large Cherry, shap'd like a Catherine-Pear, being small at the Stem and swelling bigger towards the End. They are of a greenish Colour, and have small Seeds as big as Mustard-Seeds; they are somewhat tart, yet pleasant, and very wholesome, and may be eaten by sick People.

Mericafah's are an excellent Fruit, of which there are two Sorts, one growing on a small Tree or Shrub, which is counted the best, the other growing on a kind of Shrub like a Vine, which they plant about Arbours to make a Shade, having many broad Leaves. The Fruit is as big as a small Orange, round and green. When they are ripe they are soft, full

Brazil.

of white Pulp mixt thick with little black Seeds, and there is no separating one from the other till they are in your Mouth, when you suck out the white Pulp and spit out the Stones. They are tart, pleasant, and very wholesome.

Petango's are a small red Fruit that grow also on small Trees, and are as big as Cherries, but not so globular, having one flat Side, and also five or six small protuberant Ridges. 'Tis a very pleasant tart Fruit, and has a pretty large flatish Stone in the Middle.

Petumbo's are a yellow Fruit (growing on a Shrub like a Vine) bigger than Cherries, with a pretty large Stone. These are sweet, but rough in the Mouth.

Mungaroo's are a Fruit as big as Cherries, red on one Side and white on the other Side. They are full of small Seeds, which are commonly swallow'd in eating them.

Muckishaws are a Fruit as big as Crab Apples, growing on large Trees. They have also small Seeds in the Middle, and are well tasted.

Ingwa's are a Fruit like the Locust Fruit, four Inches long and one broad. They grow on high Trees.

Otee is a Fruit as big as a large Cocoa-nut. It hath a Husk on the Out-side, and a large Stone within, and is accounted a very fine Fruit.

Musteran de Ova's are a round Fruit as big as large Hazel-nuts, cover'd with thin brittle Shells of a blackish Colour. They have a small Stone in the Middle, inclos'd within a black pulpy Substance, which is of a pleasant Taste. The Out-side Shell is chewed with the Fruit and spit out with the Stone, when the Pulp is suck'd from them.

Palm-

Palm-Berries (call'd here Dendes) grow plentifully about *Bahia*; the largest are as big as Wallnuts. They grow in Bunches on the Top of the Body of the Tree among the Branches or Leaves, as all Fruits of the Palm kind do. These are the same kind of Berries or Nuts as those they make the Palm-Oil with on the Coast of *Guinea*, where they abound.

Physick-Nuts, as our Seamen call them, are call'd here Pineon, and *Agnus Castus* is call'd here Carrepat. These both grow here; so do Mendibees, a Fruit like Physick-Nuts. They scorch them in a Pan over the Fire before they eat them.

They have Plenty of Callavances, Pine-apples, Pumpkins, Water-melons, Musk-melons, Cucumbers, and Roots, as Yams, Potatoes, Cassava's, &c. Garden Herbs, a good store, as Cabbages, Turnips, Onions, Leeks, and abundance of Sallading; and for the Pot, Drugs of several Sorts, *viz.* Saffras, Snake-root, &c. besides the Wood mention'd for Dying and other Uses, as Fustick, speckled Wood, &c.

*Dampier* relates, that the Jesuites have introduc'd the Cinamon-Tree into their Garden at *St. Salvador*, but it is probable it degenerates, and the Bark is not so fine a Spice as that of the *Ceylon* Cinamon, from whence it is brought; for if it were, there is no Reason they should not propagate it more; and indeed the Cinamon that grows on the *Malabar* Coast in the *East-Indies*, which is but a few Leagues from *Ceylon*, is not comparable to it; which inclines me to believe that no other Soil but that of *Ceylon* will bear the true Cinamon. I wish it were otherwise, that we might share that valuable Spice with the *Dutch*, and were  
not

Brazil.

not oblig'd to pay what Price they are pleas'd to set upon it.

The Jesuites have Mango's also in their Garden at *St. Salvador*, which is another *East-India* Fruit, but I find they are not common in *Brazil*.

Corn.

As to their Corn, there is no Sort that thrives in *Brazil* like Maiz, or *Indian* Corn. Wheat and Rye grow too rank and run up into Straw; and the only way to procure a good Crop is to make the Soil poorer by mixing Sand with it instead of Dung to enrich it: And this is the Case of most foreign Seeds. Their Seed-time is at the Beginning of the rainy Season, and their Harvest immediately after it. Their own Trees and Shrubs bear Leaves, Blossoms, and Fruit all the Year round; and the same is observ'd of their Oranges, Limes, and some other Fruits that have been carry'd thither: And those who would have ripe Grapes all the Year, 'tis said, only prune their Vines at different Times to effect it, and they produce a fine luscious Grape as sweet as Honey; and yet they can have no Wine that will keep here, or in any other Country between the Tropicks, unless in *Peru*.

And here I must caution the Reader to understand what is said above only of that Part of *Brazil* which lies within the Tropick of Capricorn, which is the best planted and peopled of any Part of *Brazil*; for in the Countries South of the Tropick of Capricorn, the same Grain and Fruits grow as do to the Northward of the Tropick of Cancer, and many Kinds of Fruit which flourish between the Tropicks will not come to any thing without the Tropicks: As the Air and Seasons are very different, so are their Grain, Fruits, and Plants generally;

generally ; tho' there are some will thrive on either side the Tropick.

Brazil.

The Ants in *Brazil* are great Enemies to the Corn, Fruits, and other Produce of the Earth, which the Husbandmen endeavour to destroy by Fire and Water, but all their Care sometimes proves ineffectual.

As to their Minerals, there is no doubt but they have discover'd very rich Gold Mines of late Years by the vast Treasures of that kind they send annually to *Europe* ; and 'tis said there are some Silver Mines in the Country. They have also discover'd very rich Diamond Mines, Jasper, Emeralds, Chrystal, and other precious Stones, insomuch that the Value of these are much fallen.

Minerals.

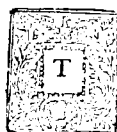




## CHAP. VI.

*Of their History, Government, Arms, Forces, Wars, Marriages, Women, Children, Slaves, and Funerals.*

Brazil.  
History.



THE first Adventurer that discover'd the Coast of *Brazil* was *Americus Vesputius*, an *Italian*, then in the Service of the King of *Spain*: This was in the Year 1498, but then he sail'd no further than to the 5th Degree of South Latitude. Afterwards, in the Year 1500, being employ'd by the King of *Portugal*, he sail'd again to *Brazil*, and extended his Discoveries to 52 Degrees of South Latitude; but he does not give us any Account of the Country, or the Natives he saw in either of those Voyages.

The same Year, 1500, *Emanuel* King of *Portugal* sending a Fleet of thirteen Sail to the *East-Indies*, they were driven from their intended Course upon the Coast at *Brazil*, where meeting with a pretty good Harbour, after a Storm, wherein they had suffer'd much, they gave it the Name of *Porto Seguro*, which lies in 17 Degrees of South Latitude, and to the Country they gave the Name of *Santa Cruz*; tho' it soon after lost it, and obtain'd the Name of *Brazil*, as has been observ'd already.

The

The Admiral of this Fleet, *Peter Alvarez Capralis*, sent one of his Ships back to *Portugal* with an Account of the Richness of the Country and its agreeable Situation, and then continued his Voyage to the *East-Indies* with the rest.

*Braz.*

Several private Adventurers upon this Intelligence went over to *Brazil* with their Families, but were most of them destroy'd by the Natives, and no Settlement was made to any purpose till the Year 1549, when *John III.* King of *Portugal*, sent a great Fleet thither with a thousand Soldiers on Board, under the Command of *Thomas de Sofa* their General, and with them a great many Jesuites, whom Pope *Paul III.* desired might be embark'd in order to endeavour the Conversion of the Natives.

This Fleet arriving at the Bay of *All Saints*, General *Sofa* there built the City of *St. Salvador*, of which *Ferdinandez Sardinia* was appointed the first Bishop in the following Year 1550.

The *Portuguese* finding the *Brazilians* divided into several petty Kingdoms and States, at War among themselves, and joining with one Nation against another, by this Means subdu'd first their Enemies and then their Allies, making Slaves of all without Distinction. *Serigippe*, which lies contiguous to the Bay of *All Saints* on the North, and which I have consider'd as Part of this Province, was the first Conquest the *Portuguese* made.

The *French* also made several Attempts to settle Colonies on the Coast of *Brazil*, but were driven from thence from time to time by the *Portuguese*, who at length possess'd them-



Brazil.

selves of all the Coast from the River *Amazon* to the River of *Plata*.

To justify their Invasions of this Country, and the barbarous Massacres they committed there, they have represented the People as Infidels without any Notion of God or Religion, and even Canibals: And whereas we have been told by the *Spaniards* that the Countries of *Guiana* and *Caribiana*, which lie contiguous to *Brazil*, and extend from the Equator to 10 Degrees North Latitude, were Canibals, Now the *Portuguese* endeavour to persuade us, that the *Brazilians*, whose Country extends from the Equator to 35 Degrees of South Latitude, were likewise Canibals and Infidels: And indeed this is what the *Spaniards* and *Portuguese* have affirm'd of all the *American* Nations at one time or other. They tell us, they were perpetually engag'd in War with each other, and eat up their Enemies that fell into their Hands; and yet none of our *English* Adventurers for an hundred Years past, none of our *Buccaneers*, that have penetrated through and through the Country, and resided among the *Caribbees* themselves, who were most fam'd for eating human Flesh, have ever seen any such thing.

*Knivet's*  
Account of  
Canibals,  
Giants,  
Monsters,  
&c.

About an hundred and forty Years ago, indeed, some of our People, who had their Intelligence, I presume, from the *Spaniards* and *Portuguese*, pretended that they had seen the *Brazilians* devour their Enemies, of whom the most eminent is *Knivet*. This Gentleman tells us he was left sick on Shore at *Brazil* by Captain *Cavendish*, in the Year 1592, and being taken Prisoner by the Natives, together with twelve *Portuguese*, his Companions were kill'd, broil'd, and eaten, but his Life was sav'd

fav'd because the Natives took him for a *Frenchman*; and of these Executions he gives us the following Account:

That having taken a Prisoner in Battle, and convey'd him into their own Country, they give him one of their Sisters or Daughters to serve him as a temporary Wife, furnishing him with the best Food, and all that is desirable in Life; and when they have fatt'd him, they proclaim the Day and Place of his Execution; in the Morning whereof many thousands of the People assemble early, drinking, singing, and dancing for several Hours; after which the Captive is brought out, bound about the Body with Cords, which are held by six or seven People, but his Hands at liberty: In this Condition the Prisoner usually makes a Speech to the People, and tells them, *Thus have I often bound your Friends and Relations, and then broil'd and devour'd them; nor will my Countrymen suffer my Death to be long unre- venged.* Then they bring him Stones and bid him revenge himself, whereupon he throws them among the Multitude, of whom he frequently wounds several; and having continued this Sport some time, one advances with the fatal Club, and demanding, *Art thou he that hast kill'd and devour'd our People? Take leave of all that is pleasant and desirable to thee, for thou shalt see them no more; thou shalt be kill'd and devour'd in like manner as thou hast kill'd and devour'd our Friends;* and then beats out his Brains with a Club. After which the Wife they had given him comes and bewails the Fate of her Husband, but eats the first Slice of him, however, when he is broil'd, 'tis said, and then the rest of the Carcase is cut in Pieces and distributed among the People, par-

## THE PRESENT STATE

ticularly they give the Guts and Entrails to the Women, and the Head and Brains fall to the Share of the Children. *Purchase*, Vol. IV. p. 1217. Vol. V. p. 914.

If any Man should be found credulous enough to believe this formal and improbable Tale, yet the rest of the monstrous Relations contain'd in Mr. *Kniver's* Narrative, which are now known to be false, are sufficient to shock his Faith in this.

He relates, that the People of *Tucuman*, a Province of *La Plata*, are Pigmies; *Purchase*, Vol. IV, p. 1231. And that at the Streights of *Magellan* he met with another Nation of Pigmies, of about five Spans high, and with Mouths from Ear to Ear, of whom he saw several thousands; and that they traffick'd with the *English*, giving them Pearls and Feathers for *European* Toys.

That in the same Streights he saw naked Giants sixteen Spans high; *Purchase*, Vol. IV. p. 1231.

That he saw a Monster of a Mermaid, p. 1240.

That he had seen a Snake that swallow'd Men, Stags, and Oxen, and after such Morfels would lie sleeping till his Flesh rotted, or was pick'd clean off the Bones by Birds of Prey; after which new Flesh grew upon the Bones again, and the Creature awaked, his Head having been alive all the while, but bury'd in Mud. *Purchase*, Vol. V. p. 914.

That he knew several *Brazilians* possess'd by the Devil, and some of them kill'd by evil Spirits. He himself heard an *Indian* discoursing with an evil Spirit, and threatening to turn Christian if the Spirit did not cease to afflict him. May we not, after such a multitude of idle

idle Stories, very well suspend our Belief of the first in relation to Canibals? And yet this is the Man whose Accounts of these Things are most depended upon, and which *Purchase*, in his Collection, has given such Countenance to that he has compil'd his Narratives twice over (*viz.*) in the fourth and fifth Volumes, from whence I took these pretty Stories. But it being acknowledg'd that the *Caribbees* and other Nations charged with eating human Flesh have generally left it off at this Day; and the Reason of their present Abstemiousness being demanded, one of Mr. *Purchase's* Authors informs us, that they happen'd to eat a Friar whose Flesh poison'd several of them, and that was the Reason they never lik'd Man's Flesh since. *Purchase*, Vol. III. p. 865.

Brazil.

As to Religion, the *Portuguese* will not allow the *Brazilians* any, and yet they tell us they have Priests, and allow a State of Rewards and Punishments; that the Brave go to *Elysium*, or Paradise, and mean and cowardly Souls to a Place of Torment. *Purchase*, Vol. V. p. 915, &c.

Religion.

The same Authors admit, that their Priests direct them to bring their Offerings to them, and assure them, on their doing this, that those invisible Beings who give them Food and all the good Things they enjoy, will prosper their Affairs; and if they neglect this they must expect some dreadful Calamities will overtake them, and that accordingly the People bring them such Fruits as they apprehend will be most acceptable. They inform us also, that they believe their Souls survive their Bodies, and are converted into Dæmons, or Spirits, after Death. *Purchase*, Vol. IV. p. 1289. Vol. V. p. 916, 917.

Another


Brazil.

Another Writer in *Purchase's* Collection tells us, they comforted themselves that they should after Death visit their Ancestors beyond certain Mountains. From all which it is evident that this People were not entirely without Religion; that they believe some invisable Beings are the Authors of all their good and bad Fortune in the World; and that they shall be rewarded and punish'd hereafter according to their Behaviour in this Life, and consequently are not those Infidels they are sometimes represented.

And tho' the idolatrous *Portuguese* make their having no Images amongst them another Argument that they have no Religion, I presume that will be of little Weight with Protestants. But further, we meet with Writers in *Purchase* that tell us some of the *Brazilians* worship the new Moon, at least that they dance and sing when it appears: And that others worship the Constellation call'd the great Bear, rejoicing much when it appears in their Hemisphere.

As to their having no Temples, perhaps they look upon the Heaven over their Heads to be the only proper Temple to adore the great Creator in, or at least most proper to adore the Sun, Moon, and Stars, if they worship them as Gods, as some relate.

Nor do these People live without Government. They have Kings in their respective Territories, who administer Justice according to the Custom of their several Countries, tho' they have no written Laws: And where one Man has injur'd another, he is oblig'd to make him Satisfaction in kind, if it be possible: And no People are more kind or hospitable to Strangers than the *Brazilians* are, so far are they

they from murdering and devouring Foreigners, Brazil.  
even by the Relation of those very *Portuguese*,   
that have represented them as Canibals.

In their Marriages they are not confin'd to Marriages  
one Woman, but enter into a Contract, how-  
ever, with their Relations to use them well,  
in which they are usually as good as their  
Words; and when a Man takes home his  
Wife there is great Feasting and Rejoicing,  
but no other Ceremony that I can learn.

The Women, however, seem to have much  
the greatest Share in the Care and Trouble of  
providing for the Family; for they are not  
only employ'd in their domestick Affairs, but  
it falls to their Lot to plant and gather in their  
Fruits, Roots, and other Food. The Man is  
only employ'd in making his Arms, or in  
Hunting or Fishing; and upon a March or  
Removal, the Women carry all the Baggage.

They tell us a great many idle Stories in  
relation to their Womens bearing Children,  
and particularly, that the Woman is no sooner  
deliver'd but she goes about her Business, and  
the Husband is put to Bed in her Stead, and  
the Child is left to shift for itself upon the  
Floor. And yet in other Places they tell us,  
that no People are so fond of their Children as  
the *Brazilians*; and indeed the Relations that  
*Purchase* has compil'd are so inconsistent and  
full of Contradictions, that we scarce know  
what to make of them.

The best Account I can collect of their Funerals.  
Funerals and Mourning is, that upon the Death  
of any Person, the Friends and Relations as-  
semble and set up a Howl, not unlike that of  
the wild *Irish*, repeating by Turns the Praises  
of the Deceas'd, admiring his Wealth, his  
Strength, Beauty, and excellent Parts, the multi-  
tude

Brazil.



tude of his Friends, Servants and Cattle, concluding with Words of the following Tenour : *He is dead ; we shall see him no more until we dance with him beyond the Mountains.* These Lamentations having continued six Hours, they prepare to bury the Deceas'd, digging a Grave like the Mouth of a Well, in which they place the Corpse in a sitting Posture, and building a little Tomb of the Form of a Dome over him, they leave at the Place all manner of Meat and Drink, his Arms, and whatever was useful to him while alive, coming every Day with fresh Supplies to the Grave for a Month, making the same Lamentations they did the first Day, and afflicting themselves during this time by Fasting and other Penances ; and if he leave Wives behind him they cut off their Hair. This Mourning having continued a Month, they resume their former Way of Life. The Master of the Family is usually buried in the Middle of the House, and his Tomb adorn'd with beautiful Feathers and other Ornaments.

Wars and  
Arms.

As to the Wars of these People among themselves, they had no other Arms but Bows, Arrows, and wooden Swords or Clubs, and in some Places Shields ; and when they charg'd an Enemy it was never in Rank and File, but in great Confusion if they came to a Field Fight, which was not often, for most of their Actions were perform'd by Surprise. They would march Day and Night with great Expedition, and lying in Woods fall upon their Enemies when they were unprepar'd to receive them, carrying away Men, Women, and Children into Slavery ; for their Towns had no Walls or Fortifications to defend them.

To

To proceed in the History. I have already observ'd that the *Portuguese* discover'd this Country in the Year 1500 ; that they made several Attempts to plant it with small Success, till the Year 1549, when they fix'd themselves at the Bay of *All Saints*, and built the City of *St. Salvador*; that the *French* also made some Attempts to plant Colonies on this Coast, but were driven from thence by the *Portuguese*, who remain'd in *Brazil* almost without a Rival till the Year 1623 ; but being then under the Dominion of the King of *Spain*, with whom the *United Provinces* were at war, the *Dutch West-India* Company fitted out a strong Fleet, and putting a good Body of Land Forces on Board, sent them to *Brazil*, where they attack'd and took the City of *St. Salvador*, in the Bay of *All Saints*, with very little Loss : But the King of *Spain* sending a great Fleet and Army thither in the Year 1625, recover'd the City again, and drove the *Dutch* out of the Country. However, the *Hollanders* continued to send strong Squadrons to the Coast of *Brazil* every Year, where they harra's'd the *Portuguese* Settlements, and made abundance of rich Prizes ; and making a Descent near *Olinda*, in the Year 1629, took that City with the Fortrefs of *The Recife*, and being join'd by some Nations of the *Indians* against the *Portuguese*, at length possess'd themselves of the entire Province of *Pernambuco*, where they erected a great many Forts, and compell'd the *Portuguese* who resid'd in that Part of the Country to obey them as their Sovereigns ; whereupon Count *Maurice* of *Nassau* was pleas'd to accept the Government of the *Dutch* Territories in *Brazil*, and remain'd in that Capacity at *The Recife*, or

*Brazil*.

*St. Salvador* re-taken by the *Spaniards*.

The *Dutch* take *Olinda* and the whole Province of *Pernambuco*.

Count *Maurice* Governor of *Dutch* *Brazil*.



Brazil.



Reduces  
three Pro-  
vinces  
more.

*Pernambuco*, from the Year 1637 to the Year 1644, during all which Time the *Dutch* and *Portuguese* remaining in a State of War, Prince *Maurice* recover'd from the *Portuguese* three more of their Northern Provinces: Nor did he content himself with taking Places from the *Portuguese* in *Brazil*, but detach'd from thence a Squadron to the Coast of *Africa*, and took from them the important Fort of *Del Mina*, the strongest Fortress on the *Guinea* Coast, which the *Hollanders* are in possession of at this Day. But the *Dutch West-India* Company not supplying the Count with such a Number of Forces as he apprehended was necessary to secure their Conquests against the *Portuguese*, he return'd to *Holland* in Disgust, in the Year 1644, after which the Affairs of the *Dutch* in *Brazil* declin'd apace; for the *Portuguese* who lived under the Government of the *Hollanders*, joining their Countrymen, by degrees recover'd all the Towns which the *Hollanders* were in possession of, and drove them entirely out of *Brazil* again, in the Year 1654.

However, the *Dutch* still continuing their Pretensions to *Brazil*, and committing continual Depredations on the *Portuguese* at Sea, the latter agreed, at a Treaty of Peace made between the King of *Portugal* and the *States General*, by the Mediation of *England*, in the Year 1661, to pay the *Dutch* eighty Tuns of Gold to relinquish their Interest in that Country; which was accepted, and the *Portuguese* have remain'd in the peaceable possession of all *Brazil* from that Day to this.

The present Inhabitants of *Brazil*.

I come now to consider the present Inhabitants of *Brazil*, which are, 1. *Portuguese*. 2. *Crioli*. 3. *Mestise*. 4. *Negroes*; and, 5. *Brazilians*. The *Portuguese* of *Europe*, who are

are the Governors, are the fewest in Number ; the *Crioli*, or those born of *Portuguese* Parents in *Brazil*, are more numerous ; and the *Mestise*, or mingled Breed, still more numerous than either ; for few of the *Portuguese* but have had black or tawny Mistresses, and the Issue of these having intermarry'd, they are multiply'd to a very great degree : But whether the *Negroes* do not exceed all the rest I much question, there having been so many imported annually from *Africa* for an hundred and fifty Years past. The *Dutch* relate, that when they were possess'd of the Northern Provinces of *Brazil*, which are not a Third of the Whole, they employ'd no less than forty thousand *Negroes* in their Sugar-Works and other Husbandry : And as the *Portuguese* employ'd a proportionable Number, which have been increasing and multiplying for upwards of an hundred Years, and so many thousands annually imported all the while, they must of necessity swarm upon the *Brazil* Coast by this time ; and indeed there are some *Portuguese* Planters, 'tis said, that have several hundreds of *Negroes* Slaves, and when they have not Employment for them they suffer them to work for themselves, paying their Masters something weekly out of what they get : And those *Negroes* which are bred up to any Trade, such as Carpenters, Smiths, and Bricklayers, bring in their Masters a handsome Income.

As to the native *Brazilians*, they are partly Freemen and partly Slaves ; but the *Negroes* Slaves are much more valued than the *Brazilians*, being of more robust Constitutions, and fitter for Labour : As they come from the Coast of *Africa*, opposite to *Brazil*, which is

Brazil.



much hotter, they endure Fatigue in the hot Season better than the Natives. Nor are the latter now very numerous ; for the *Portuguese*, on their Invasion of this Country, like the *Spaniards*, in their Conquests destroy'd the unfortunate Natives by all the cruel Ways they could invent, insomuch that of an hundred thousand Men they found in the small Province of *Serigippe* (if we may credit the *Dutch* Writers) they reduc'd them in a few Years to four or five hundred Men.

The Force  
of the *Portu-  
guese* in  
*Brazil*.

As to the Forces and Strength of the *Portuguese* in *Brazil*, I don't at all doubt but that it is sufficient at this Day to maintain the Dominion of that Country against any other Power. The *English* and *Dutch* and other Powers may disturb their Navigation, and perhaps now and then surprize their maritime Places, but I don't apprehend they would any of them be able to take this Country from them, if they should attempt it ; for that Mixture of People, *Portuguese*, *Crioli*, Natives, *Mestise*, and *Negroes*, are now in a manner one People, their Religion the same, and their Blood intermix'd by Marriages, and would infallibly unite therefore against all the rest of the World, however they may disagree among themselves while they have no Enemy to contend with. And this is an Advantage that the *Spaniards*, *Portuguese*, and *French* have of the *English* in *America* ; these Nations always make the Natives and *Negroes* where they have any Power of their own Religion, and these, in a little time, discover as much or more Zeal for their Superstition than the *Spaniards* themselves, and would never bear that any People, who carry'd the Name of Hereticks, should plant themselves

themselves amongst them, if they had no other Reason to oppose it. Brazil.

Nor is the Circumstance of Marriage and Alliance inconsiderable. Blood and Relation lays strong Obligations upon all People to unite against Strangers; and this the *English* do not enough consider when they prohibit their People matching with the Natives or *Negroes*, and we seem as averse to the instructing them in our Religion as we do to the mingling our Blood with theirs; which is the Reason they generally remain in a separate Interest, and instead of serving their Allies or Masters faithfully, are ever conspiring to cut their Throats, and escape out of their Hands, and possibly would rather join an Enemy than oppose him.

But to proceed. Any *European* Power would find much greater Difficulties in driving the *Portuguese* from their Settlements in *Brazil* than they did to fix themselves there; for the Inhabitants were then a naked defenceless People, and divided into a great many little States and Kingdoms; whereas the present Inhabitants are all united and understand the Art of War as well as we do. They are also used to that hot Climate, which must prove fatal to abundance of *Europeans* on their Arrival there, as well as the Want of Provisions, which the *Portuguese* would not fail to destroy in order to distress their Enemies. From all which Considerations I conclude, that the *Portuguese* are now so well fix'd in *Brazil* that it is not in the Power of any other Nation to expell them from this Country and fix themselves in it.

If

Brazil.

If the *Dutch*, who had possess'd themselves of four of their Provinces, and had so many Fortresses in *Brazil*, could not maintain their Ground, it is reasonable to believe that no other Power will be able to succeed in such an Enterprize.



THE



THE  
PRESENT STATE  
OF THE  
*British* Plantations.

---

C H A P. I.

*Of the Name, Situation, Extent, and Subdivisions of the British Plantations on the Continent of America, and more particularly of the Province of Virginia.*



THE *British* Dominions in *A-* <sup>*British*</sup>  
*merica* come next to be con- <sup>*Plantations*</sup>  
sider'd ; and these are divided  
into, 1<sup>st</sup>, Those that are situ-  
ated on the Continent ; and,  
2<sup>dly</sup>, The Islands. The Ter-  
ritories subject to *Britain* on  
the Continent (except *Hudson's Bay*, or *New-*  
*Britain*) lie contiguous, and are extended along  
the Eastern Coast of *North-America* from 31  
Degrees

Their  
Situation  
and Ex-  
tent.

Virginia.

Degrees of Northern Latitude to 50 and upwards, lying between the 63d and 83d Degrees of Western Longitude: And as the Coast runs or extends from the South-West to the North-East, they are about fifteen hundred Miles in Length, and generally under two hundred Miles broad, but in no Place four hundred, unless we take in the *Iroquois* and other *Indian* Nations under our Protection, and then they may be extended further Westward.

When the *Spaniards* first discover'd the Country North of the Gulph of *Mexico*, they call'd it all by the general Name of *Florida*; but having grasp'd more than they could cultivate or defend, they in a manner deserted this Part of *America*, and fix'd themselves in those Parts of it that abounded in Silver and Gold. Whereupon the *English*, *French*, and *Dutch* thought themselves at liberty to send Colonies to *North-America*, and gave such Names to the Countries they respectively possess'd themselves of as they saw fit.

The Name.

Sir *Walter Ralegh* was the first *English* Adventurer who attempted to settle Colonies on this Coast, and gave it the Name of *Virginia*, in Honour of his Sovereign, the Virgin Queen *Elizabeth*, as will appear more at large in the Chapter assign'd for treating of the History of this Country. It was afterwards divided into *North* and *South-Virginia*, but at this Day we find it subdivided into the eight following Provinces (*viz.*) 1. *Carolina*, in which *Georgia* is comprehended. 2. *Virginia Proper*. 3. *Maryland*. 4. *Pensilvania*. 5. *New Jersey*. 6. *New-York*. 7. *New-England*; and 8. *New-Scotland*, call'd also *Acadia* and *Acady*. 9. There is still a ninth Province call'd *New-Britain*, or the *Terra de Labarador*, which

Subdivision.

which is in a great measure the same with that call'd *Hudson's Bay* and Streights, and is separated from the rest of the *British Territories* by the River of *St. Laurence* and Part of the *French Canada*. It extends from 50 to 64 Degrees of North Latitude, and lies between 60 and 90 Degrees of Western Longitude.

And that I may not be thought to have assign'd this vast Country to *Britain* without any Foundation, I shall here present the Reader with that Article in the Treaty of *Utrecht*, made in the Year 1712, whereby the *French* resign'd this Part of *America* to *Great-Britain*, which is of the following Tenour (*viz.*)

“ The said most Christian King shall restore to the Kingdom and Queen of *Great-Britain*, to be possess'd in full Right for ever, the Bay and Streights of *Hudson*, together with all Lands, Seas, Sea-Coasts, Rivers, and Places situated in the same Bay and Streights, and which belong thereto, no Tracts of Land or Sea being excepted which are at present possess'd by the Subjects of *France*. All which, as well as any Buildings there made in the Condition they now are, and likewise all Fortresses there erected, either before or since the *French* seiz'd the same, shall, within six Months from the Ratification of the present Treaty, or sooner, if possible, be well and truly deliver'd to the *British* Subjects, having Commission from the Queen of *Great-Britain* to demand and receive the same, entire and undemolish'd, together with all the Cannon and Cannon-Ball, and Powder, &c. which are therein.”

As the *French* have yielded this Country to the *English*, they have at least given us all the



*Virginia.* Right they had to it, and excluded themselves from it; what Right we may have to it in regard to the Natives is another Point that will be discussed hereafter.


I proceed now to describe the respective Provinces in the Order of Time they were severally planted, of which *Virginia Proper* being the first, naturally becomes the first Subject of our Enquiries.

*Virginia Proper, its Situation.* This Country with the rest of the abovesaid Provinces, obtain'd the Name of *Virginia*, as has been already observ'd, from Sir *Walter Raleigh*, who call'd it *Virginia* in Honour of Queen *Elizabeth*; but the Province to which the Name of *Virginia* is now appropriated is bounded by the great River *Patowmack* on the North-East, by the *Atlantick Ocean* on the East, by *Carolina* on the South, and by the *Apalathian* Mountains, which separate it from *Florida*, on the West, extending from 36 to 39 Degrees odd Minutes North Latitude, and lying between 74 and 80 Degrees of Western Longitude, and is about two hundred and forty Miles in Length from North to South, and one hundred and twenty Miles in Breadth from East to West.



## C H A P. II.

*Of the Face of the Country, its Mountains,  
Seas, Capes, Bays, Rivers, Springs,  
Lakes, Winds, Tides, and Seasons.*

 HERE are no Mountains in Virginia. *Virginia*, unless we take in the *Apalathian* Mountains, which *The Face of Virginia* separate it from *Florida*; but these have not yet been planted or inhabited by the *English* or any other People that I can learn.

As we approach *Virginia* from the Ocean, it appears to be low Land, intomuch that (according to Mr. *Clayton*) the Trees seem at a little Distance to grow out of the Water: And for an hundred Miles up into the Country there is scarce a Hill or a Stone to be met with, only in some Places there are Rocks of Iron Ore appear, and in others there are Banks of petrefy'd Oyster-shells, some of them above twenty Yards deep. The whole Country, before it was planted, was either Forests or Bogs and Morasses, which the People in the *West-Indies* call Swamps; and such the greatest Part of it is at present. Their Trees being much loftier than ours, and no Underwood or Bushes growing beneath, People travel with Ease through these Forests on Horseback, and never want a fine Shade to defend them from the Summer Heats.

- Virginia.* The only Sea that borders upon *Virginia* is that of the *Atlantick Ocean* on the East, in which are two very remarkable Capes or Promontories (*viz.*) 1. That of *Cape Henry*; and, 2. That of *Cape Charles*. *Cape Henry* lies in 37 Degrees North Latitude, and *Cape Charles* about thirty Miles to the Northward of it; between which Capes Ships enter the great Bay of *Chesapeake*, which runs up through *Virginia* and *Maryland*, almost due North three hundred Miles and upwards, being navigable most part of the Way for large Ships. This Bay is at the Entrance seven or eight and twenty Miles over, and in most Places about twenty Miles broad.
- Rivers.* Into the West Side of this Bay fall four great Rivers, which rise in the *Apalathian* Mountains, all of them running from the North-West to the South-East. The most Southerly of these is *James River*, the *Indian* Name whereof was *Powhatan*, being generally about two Miles over, and navigable at least fourscore Miles. *York River*, whose *Indian* Name was *Pamunky*, is a little to the Northward of *James River*, and in some Places they approach one another so near that they are not five Miles asunder. To the Northward of *York River* is the River of *Raphanack*, which in some Places is not ten Miles distant from *York River*, and either of them as broad or broader than *James River*. North of *Raphanack* is the great River of *Patowmack*, which in some Places is not above seven Miles distant from *Raphanack River*, and in other Places upwards of fifty: This River of *Patowmack* is navigable near two hundred Miles, being nine Miles broad in some Places, but generally about seven. The Mouth of the River

River *Patowmack* and that of *James River* Virginia.  
are about an hundred Miles asunder ; but the  
Hheads of all the four Rivers rise in the same  
Hills pretty near each other ; and, as Mr.  
*Clayton* expresses it, the Hheads of these Rivers  
interfere and are lock'd within each other, as  
they are also within the Hheads of several other  
Rivers that rise in the same Mountains and run  
towards the West.

The Tides in these Rivers regularly ebb and Tides.  
flow about two Foot perpendicular ; and at  
*James Town* there is a Tide and half Tide,  
as they call it, that is, it flows near two Hours  
along by the Shore after it is Ebb in the  
Channel, and again it ebbs near two Hours by  
the Shore after it is Flood. This is a great  
Advantage to the Boats passing up and down  
the River. I suppose, says Mr. *Clayton*, this  
is caused by the numerous Creeks and Branches  
of the River, which are many of them as broad  
as the *Thames* at *London*, some ten Miles long,  
and others above twenty that have little fresh  
Water in them, their Current primarily de-  
pending upon the Flux and Reflux of the Sea ;  
so that after the Tide is made in the Channel it  
flows by the Shore a considerable time after-  
wards, those Creeks being still to fill, and  
therefore (as it were) draws up a Source upwards  
by the Shore, and likewise when the Tide  
returns in the Channel, the Creeks that could  
not so readily disburse their Water, being  
still to empty themselves, they make an Eb-  
bing by the Shore a considerable time after it  
is Flood in the Channel ; and so far as the salt  
Waters reach, the Country is deem'd less  
healthy.

As to their Springs, Mr. *Clayton* observes, Springs.  
that their Waters are generally more eager  
than

Virginia. than those in *England*, and require more Malt to make Beer: Nor will they bear Soap. He saw a Spring in *The Isle of Wight* County, he says, from whence their issu'd a greater Body of Water than ever he met with, except that of *Holy-Well* in *Wales*; and there is another Spring so cold that it is dangerous drinking of it in Summer-time. He observ'd also, that most of their Waters had a petrefying Quality.

Lakes. As to Lakes, I don't find there are any on the East Side of the Mountains, unless their Swamps or Bogs are to be accounted such (as they very well may in Winter-time) and of these indeed they have as many as any Country can boast of; but on the West Side of the Mountains are a great many large Lakes, of which the *French* are in possession, as 'tis said, but these have not a Communication with each other, or with the River of *St. Laurence*, as is commonly reported.

The Air, Winds, and Seasons. The same Writer in his Letters to the *Royal Society* observes, that the Air and Seasons depend very much on their Winds, as to Heat and Cold, Dryness and Moisture. The North and North-West Winds are very nitrous and piercing cold and clear, or else stormy. The South-East and South, hazy and sultry hot. Their Winter is a fine clear Air and dry, which renders it very pleasant. Their Frosts are short, but sometimes very sharp, that it will freeze the Rivers over three Miles broad; nay, the Secretary of State assur'd me, says Mr. *Clayton*, it had frozen *Patormack* River, over-against his House, where it is near nine Miles over. He adds, I have observ'd it freezes there the hardest when from a moist South-East, on a sudden the Wind passing by the *Nore*, a nitrous sharp *Nore-West* blows,

blows, not with high Gusts, but with a cutting brisk Air, and those Valleys then that seem to be shelter'd from the Wind, and lie warm, where the Air is most stagnant and moist, are frozen the hardest and seized the soonest, and there the Fruits are more subject to Blast than where the Air has a free Motion. Snow falls sometimes in pretty great Quantities, but rarely continues there above a Day or two. Their Spring is about a Month earlier than in *England*; in *April* they have frequent Rains; *May* and *June* the Heat increases, and it is much like our Summer, being mitigated with gentle Breezes that rise about nine of the Clock, and decrease and incline as the Sun rises and falls. *July* and *August* those Breezes cease, and the Air becomes stagnant, that the Heat is violent and troublesome. In *September* the Weather usually breaks suddenly, and there falls generally very considerable Rains. When the Weather breaks many fall sick, this being the Time for Cachexies, Fluxes, scorbutical Dropsies, Gripes, or the like; which I have attributed to this, says Mr. *Clayton*, that by the extraordinary Heat, the Ferment of the Blood being rais'd too high, and the Tone of the Stomach relaxed, when the Weather breaks the Blood palls, and like over-fermented Liquors, is depauperated, or turns eager and sharp, and there is a crude Digestion, whence the above-named Distempers may be supposed to ensue; and then Chalibiates, that raise the decay'd Ferment, are no bad Practice, after which, I conceive, Armoniack Spirits might be very beneficial. But their Doctors are so learned, that I never met with any of them, says this Gentleman, that understood what Armoniack Spirits were. Two or three of them one time

Virginia.

Diseases.

Remedies.

ran

Virginia.
ran me clear down by Consent, that they were vomitive, and that they never used any thing for that Purpose but *Crocus Metallorum*, which indeed every House keeps, and if their Finger ach they immediately give three or four Spoonfuls thereof; if this fail they give them a second Dose, then perhaps purge them with fifteen or twenty Grains of the Rosin of Jallop, afterwards sweat them with Venice-Treacle, Powder of Snake-root, or *Gascoin's* Powder: And when these fail, *Conclamatum est*. 'Tis wonderful, he adds, what Influence the Air has over Mens Bodies, whereof I had myself sad Assurances; for tho' I was in a very close warm Room, where was a Fire constantly kept, yet there was not the least Alteration or Change, whereof I was not sensible when I was sick of the Gripes; and when a very ingenious Gentlewoman was visited with the same Distemper, I had the Opportunity of making very considerable Observations. I stood at the Window, and could view the Clouds arise; for there small fleeting Clouds will arise and be swiftly carry'd cross the whole Element; and as these Clouds arose and came nigher her Torments were increased, which were grievous as a labouring Woman's; there was not a Cloud but lamentably affected her, and that at a considerable Distance; but by her Shrieks it seem'd more or less according to the Bigness and Nearness of the Clouds. The Thunder, says Mr. *Clayton*, is attended often with fatal Circumstances here. I was with my Lord *Howard of Effingham*, the Governor, when they brought word that one Dr. *A.* was kill'd therewith after this Manner: He was smoaking a Pipe of Tabacco, and looking out of his Window, when he was struck dead, and immediately became

Frequent  
and terrible  
Thunder.

became so stiff that he did not fall, but stood leaning in the Window, with the Pipe in his Mouth, in the same Posture he was in when struck: And these Things are remarkable, that it generally breaks in at the Gable End of the Houses, and often kills Persons in or near the Chimney's Range, darting most fiercely down the Funnel of the Chimney, more especially if there be a Fire (I speak here confessedly of Thunder and Lightning) for when they do any Mischief, the Crash and Lightning are at the same Instant, which must be from the Nearness of the Cloud. One time, when the Thunder split the Mast of a Boat at *James Town*, I saw it break from the Cloud, which it divided in two, and seem'd as if it had shot them immediately a Mile asunder to the Eye. It is dangerous when it thunders standing in a narrow Passage, where there is a thorough Wind, or in a Room betwixt two Windows, tho' several have been kill'd in the open Fields. 'Tis incredible to tell how it will strike large Oaks, shatter and shiver them, sometimes twisting round a Tree, as if it struck the Tree backwards and forwards. I had noted a fine spreading Oak in *James Town Island*; in the Morning I saw it fair and flourishing, in the Evening I observ'd all the Bark of the Body of the Tree, as if it had been artificially peel'd off, was orderly spread round the Tree in a Ring, whose Semi-diameter was four Yards, the Tree in the Center; all the Body of the Tree was shaken and split, but its Boughs had all their Bark on, few Leaves were fallen, and those on the Boughs as fresh as in the Morning, but gradually afterwards wither'd, as on a Tree that is fallen. I have seen several vast Oaks and other Timber Trees twisted, as if it had been a



Virginia. {small Willow that a Man had twisted with his Hand ; which I could suppose had been done by nothing but the Thunder. I have been told by several Planters, that thirty or forty Years since, when the Country was not so open, the Thunder was more fierce, and that sometimes after violent Thunder and Rain the Roads would seem to have perfect Casts of Brimstone : And he seems to be of opinion, that the fierce and frequent Thunders they had formerly proceeded from the Air's being more stagnant when the Motion of the Winds was impeded by the Trees, before the Country was clear'd.





## C H A P. II.

*Of the Provinces and chief Towns of Virginia, and of the Buildings of the Indians.*



OW the Country was divided when the *Indians* had the Dominion of it does not appear, only the first Adventurers inform us, that there were a great many petty Monarchs in it who commanded on the several Rivers ; and that the most potent frequently subdu'd his weaker Neighbours, and held them in Subjection during his Life, after which every Principality usually return'd to the original Proprietor ; but I shall be more particular on this Head in the Chapter assign'd for the History of this Country.

Virginia.  
Provinces  
and chief  
Towns.

*Virginia* is at present divided into twenty-five Counties, (*viz.*) 1. *James County.* 2. *Henrico County.* 3. *Prince George.* 4. *Charles County.* 5. *Surrey.* 6. *Isle of Wight.* 7. *Nansamund.* 8. *Norfolk.* 9. *Princess Anne.* 10. *York County.* 11. *Warwick.* 12. *Elizabeth.* 13. *New Kent.* 14. *King William.* 15. *King and Queen.* 16. *Gloucester.* 17. *Middlesex.* 18. *Essex.* 19. *Richmond.* 20. *Stafford.* 21. *Westmorland.* 22. *Lancaster.* 23. *Northumberland.* 24. *Acomack ; and,* 25. *Northampton.*

S f 2

1. *James*

Virginia.

James  
County.

1. *James County* lies on both Sides of *James River*, and is bounded by *New-Kent* on the North, by *York County* on the East, by *Surrey* on the South, and *Henrico County* on the West, and contains five Parishes (*viz.*) 1. *James Town*. 2. *Williamsburg*. 3. *Wallingford*, all which lie on the North Side of *James River*. 4. *Merchants Hundred*; and 5. *Bruton*, on the South Side of the River.

James  
Town.

1<sup>st</sup>, *James Town*, the Capital of this County and of the whole Province, is situated in a Peninsula on the North Side of *James River*, about forty Miles from the Mouth of it, the River being at this Place about a Mile broad. There are not above three or fourscore Houses at present in it, and those most of them publick Houses, kept for the Entertainment of sea-faring People who resort hither; for it is not agreeable to the Humour or Business of the *Virginian* Planters to live in Towns. Every Man of Substance almost chuses to reside upon his Estate, and have his Farms and Plantations under his Eye; and when they have amass'd as much Wealth as satisfies them, they either remain in the Place they acquir'd it, or return to *England*, but seldom reside in the little Towns of *Virginia*. Another Reason which makes *James Town* now so inconsiderable is, the removing the Courts of Justice and the Seat of the Government to *Williamsburgh*: And lastly, *James Town* suffer'd very much in the Rebellion during the Reign of King *Charles II.* when it was almost entirely burnt down to the Ground. Before that Misfortune happen'd, 'tis said, there were several spacious Streets and handsome Buildings in *James Town*, and the Government seem'd to be set upon peopling and improving it, by obliging all Shipping to unload

load their Merchandize at this Place, but that Order was never obey'd. Few Towns are capable of being made stronger than *James Town*, as it is situated on a Peninsula, which, at high Water, is a perfect Island, and there is no approaching it but on one Side, which might easily be render'd inaccessible; but the Fortifications I perceive are but mean.

2dly, *Williamsburgh*, heretofore call'd *Middle Williamsburgh*, is situated about seven Miles from *James Town*, further within Land, and this, tho' the Seat of the Government, and the Place where their Parliament or General Assembly meet, is but a very small Place, consisting only of thirty or forty Houses that are not contiguous. Governor *Nicholson* did all that lay in his Power to increase the Buildings and enlarge the Town, in the Year 1689, particularly he built a Town-house, to which he gave the Name of *The Capitol*. A fine College also was erected here, and a good Revenue settled upon it; but this was unfortunately burnt down. There are some Redoubts and Batteries of Guns erected for the Defence of the Place, but of no great Consequence; what the late Orders for the repairing and strengthening our Fortifications in *America* may produce, we shall see in a little time. This County contains 108,362 Acres of Land.

I shall not pretend to give the Boundaries of the rest of the Counties, only observe in what Part of the Province they lie, the Parishes and the Number of Acres contained in them.

2. *Henrico* County is situated the most West-*Henrico* erly of all those that lie on the South of *James* County. *River*, and contains the two Parishes of *Henrico* and *Bristol*, in which are 148,787 Acres of Land.

- Virginia. 3 and 4. *Prince George* and *Charles* Counties are situated over-against *Henrico* County, on the North Side of *James River*, in which are the three Parishes of *Martin Brandon*, *Wyanoke*, and *Westover*, containing 161,239 Acres of Land; and twenty Miles higher, above the Falls of *James River*, is the *Monacan* Town, where the *French* Refugees are settled.
- Prince George and Charles Counties.*
- Surrey County.* 5. *Surrey* County is situated over-against *James* County, on the South Side of *James River*, containing the two Parishes of *Southwark* and *Lyons Creek*, in which are 111,050 Acres of Land.
- Isle of Wight County.* 6. *Isle of Wight* County is situated South-East of *Surrey* County, on the South Side of *James River*, containing the two Parishes of *Warwick-Squeak* and *New-Port*, in which are 142,796 Acres of Land.
- Nansamund County.* 7. *Nansamund* County, which lies South of the *Isle of Wight* County, containing the three Parishes of *Upper-Parish*, *Lower-Parish*, and *Chukatsuck*, in which are 131,172 Acres of Land. In this County rises the River of *Nansamund*, which running to the North-East falls into *James River*, near *Bennet's Creek*.
- Norfolk County.* 8. *Norfolk* County lies South-East of *Nansamund* County, extending to the Borders of *Carolina*, and contains only the Parish of *Elizabeth*, in which are 112,019 Acres of Land. In this County rises the River *Elizabeth*, which running due North falls into *James River*, between the East and West Bay.
- Princess Anne County.* 9. *Princess Anne* County lies North-East of *Norfolk*, having the Bay of *Chesapeake* on the North, and the Ocean on the East, and contains only the Parish of *Lynhaven*, in which are 98,305 Acres of Land. *Cape Henry* is a Promontory

Promontory on the North-East Part of this <sup>Virginia.</sup> County.

10. *York* County, situate between *York* and *James* Rivers on the East of *James* County, in which are the three Parishes of *York*, *Hampton*, and *New-Pokoson*, and contains 60,767 Acres of Land.

11. *Warwick* County lies contiguous to *York* <sup>Warwick</sup> County, and South-East of it between the same Rivers, in which are the two Parishes of *Denby* and *Mulberry Island*, containing 38,444 Acres of Land. In this County rises the River of *Pokoson*, which running to the Eastward discharges itself into the Mouth of *York* River.

12. *Elizabeth* County lies contiguous to *Warwick* County, and to the Eastward of it, having the Bay of *Chesapeake* on the North, and the Mouth of *James River* on the South. It hath but one Parish, call'd *Elizabeth*, in which was a City of the same Name, but it is of late Years dwindled to a Village. This County contains 29,000 Acres of Land.

13. *New-Kent* lies North of *James* County <sup>New-Kent</sup> on the Southern Branch of *York River*, and contains the two Parishes of *Blissland* and *St. Peters*, in which are 171,314 Acres of Land, being one of the largest and most populous Counties in *Virginia*. In the West Part of this County are some Hills of glittering Sand, which the first Adventurers mistook for Gold, and loaded home a Ship with it, but to their great Mortification it prov'd but common Earth.

14. *King William* County is contiguous to *King* <sup>King</sup> *New-Kent*, and lies to the Westward of it, <sup>William</sup> the River *Pamunky* (being the Southern Branch of *York River*) running through it. It contains only

Virginia. only the Parish of *St. John's*, in which are 84,524 Acres of Land.

*King and Queen County.* 15. *King and Queen County* lies on the South of *King William County*, and is contiguous to it, and contains the two Parishes of *Straton Major* and *St. Stephen's*, in which are 131,716 Acres of Land. In this County rises the River *Chicohomeny*, and running Eastward falls into *James River*, near *Bromfield's* Plantation.

*Gloucester County.* 16. *Gloucester County* is situated between the Mouth of *Tork River* and *Prankitank River*, having the Bay of *Chesapeake* on the East, and contains the four Parishes of *Perse*, *Abington*, *Ware*, and *Kingston*, in which are 142,450 Acres of Land.

*Middlesex County.* 17. *Middlesex County* lies North of *Gloucester*, having the River *Raphanock* on the North, and the River *Prankitank* on the South, containing only the Parish of *Christ-Church*, in which are 49,500 Acres of Land.

*Essex County.* 18. The County of *Essex* lies on the River *Raphanock*, North-West of *Middlesex*, containing the three Parishes of *South-Farnham*, *Sittingburn*, and *St. Mary's*, in which are 140,920 Acres of Land. Upon the Confines of this County and that of *Middlesex* there is a great Swamp or Bog almost sixty Miles in Length, call'd *Dragons Swamp*, cover'd with Bushes and Flags, in which harbour wild Beasts and Game in abundance.

*Richmond and Stafford Counties.* 19 and 20. *Richmond* and *Stafford Counties* lie North-West of *Essex*, upon the same River *Raphanock*, and contain the three Parishes of *North-Farnham*, *St. Paul's*, and *Over-worton*.

21. *Westmorland* County lies Eastward of Virginia. the last, between the two Rivers of *Rappahannock* <sup>Westmor-</sup> and *Patomack*. <sup>land</sup>

22. *Lancaster* County lies on the North <sup>County.</sup> Shore of the River *Rappahannock*, near the Mouth, <sup>County.</sup> being divided into two Parts by the River <sup>County.</sup> *Cartomain*, and contains the two Parishes of *Christ-Church* and *St. Mary White-Chapel*.

23. *Northumberland* County is bounded by <sup>Northum-</sup> the Mouth of *Patomack* River on the North, <sup>berland</sup> and by the Bay of *Chesapeake* on the East, <sup>County.</sup> containing the two Parishes of *Fairfield-Bawtry*, and *Wicomoco*.

24. *Acomac* County lies in the Peninsula on <sup>Acomac</sup> the opposite Side of the Bay of *Chesapeake*, hav- <sup>County.</sup> ing Part of *Maryland* on the North, the *Atlantick Ocean* on the East and South, and the Bay of *Chesapeake* on the West, in which is the Parish of *Acomac* only, but contains, however, 200,923 Acres of Land, being the largest County of *Virginia*, but not so well peopled as those on the West Side of the Bay.

25. *Northampton* County lies South of that <sup>Northamp-</sup> of *Acomac*, and forms the South Part of the <sup>ton Coun-</sup> Peninsula on which the Promontory call'd Cape <sup>ty.</sup> *Charles* is situated. This is a long narrow County, lying between the Ocean and the Bay of *Chesapeake*, in which is but one Parish, call'd *Hungers*, containing 99,384 Acres of Land.

In all which Counties, it is computed there <sup>Numbers</sup> may be at this Day about an hundred thousand of People. Souls, besides Servants and Slaves, which are above three times that Number.

As to the Towns of the *Indians*, I don't <sup>Indian</sup> find they had any thing that deserved the Name <sup>Villages</sup> of a Town even in their greatest Prosperity, <sup>and Build-</sup> before the *English* came among them. They <sup>ings.</sup>

Vol. XXX.

T t

liv'd



Virginia.

liv'd dispers'd in small Villages of ten or twelve Huts a-piece (scarce any of them exceeding thirty such Houses) either in the Woods or on the Banks of Rivers, where they had little Plantations of *Indian* Corn and Roots, scarce sufficient to supply their respective Families half the Year, subsisting the Remainder of it by Hunting, Fishing, and Fowling, and the Fruits of the Earth, which grow spontaneously in great Plenty there.

The Materials of their Houses were Poles cover'd with Bark or Matts; the Poles being let into the Ground in a circular Form were bent inwards, and made the Hutt of the Shape of a Bee-hive: The Hearth or Fire-place was in the Middle of it, about which they lay upon Matts, or the Skins of Beasts. The Palaces of their greatest Men were no better than ordinary Barns, in which were several Partitions made by Matts, and might therefore be call'd so many Rooms, in the furthest of which was placed their favourite Idol, and sometimes two or more, which they carry'd with them on every Enterprize, and whenever they removed. The Length of these Barns (or Palaces, as some call them) were from twelve to twenty-four Yards in Length, and usually half as broad as they were long. Their Furniture consisted of their Skins and Furrs, some earthen Pots and Pans; Gourds and Calabashes cut asunder serv'd them for Tubs, Pails, Cups, and Dishes.

The Country was then very thinly inhabited, these small Villages being usually several Miles asunder, as appears by the concurrent Relations of the first Adventurers, collected by *Hackluit* and *Purchase*.

Captain

Captain *Smith*, one of the first Adventurers, <sup>Virginia.</sup> says, the Land is not populous within sixty Miles of *James Town*. There are about seven thousand People, but of Men fit for War scarce two thousand : Seven or eight hundred are the most that have been seen together ; *Purchase*, Vol. IV. 1697. So that there is little Reason to charge the *English* with destroying such Numbers, as some have done either ignorantly or maliciously. The Middle of *America*, between the Tropicks, where the *Spaniards* fix'd themselves, indeed was very populous, but towards the North and South there were few Inhabitants. Even at this Day those Parts of *Florida* which have never been under the Subjection of any *Europeans*, and consequently have not been destroy'd by them, live in the like little Villages, and are very thinly peopled.





## C H A P. III.

*Of the Persons and Habits of the Virginians, their Genius and Temper, Arts, Manufactures, Food, Exercises, and Diversions, Diseases, and Remedies.*

Virginia.

Persons  
of the  
Virginians.



AS to the Persons of the *Virginians*, their Stature is much the same with the People of *Europe*. In some Provinces there are huge lusty Fellows like the *Germans*, whom some People are pleas'd to call a gigantick Race, and there are others as little as the *French*, but all in general well made, strong and active. They are born tolerably white, but take a great deal of Pains to darken their Complexion by anointing themselves with Grease, and lying in the Sun. They also paint their Faces, Breasts, and Shoulders of various Colours, but generally red. Their Hair and Eyes are black, the Men cutting their's in several Forms; and Persons of Condition have always a long Lock behind. The Women wear their Hair long, sometimes loose and flowing, and at others twisted and adorn'd with Beads, Shells, and Feathers. The Men suffer no Hair on their Chins, or any Part of their Bodies. Their Features are good, especially those of the Women, their Limbs clean and strait, and scarce ever any crooked or deform'd Persons among them.

them. Their Noblemen and Chiefs wear a <sup>Virginia.</sup> Coronet adorn'd with Feathers, and sometimes a whole Fowl stuff'd and dry'd on their Heads, their Ornaments being Ear-rings of Copper, Chains of Shells, Feathers, and Beads about their Necks, and Bracelets of the same about their Arms.

Their Cloathing is only a Piece of a Skin <sup>Habits.</sup> about their Waist that reaches down to their Knees; and those of Condition have the Skin of a Deer or some other Beast for a Mantle, and another Piece of Skin serves them for Shoes or Buskins.

Their Characters are given us variously by <sup>Genius</sup> different Travellers; which, I presume, proceeds from the various Circumstances the *Indians* <sup>and Temper.</sup> or our People were in when they were Friends with our People and entertain'd them hospitably; then they were all that was good, and when in a State of Hostility, no Character was thought bad enough for them; but I think they all agree, that the *Virginians* did not want Wit or natural Parts.

Mr. *Whitaker*, Chaplain to the Colony of *Virginia*, observes, that the *Indians* are neither so ignorant or so innocent as some suppose them, but are a very understanding Generation, quick of Apprehension, sudden in Dispatch, subtle in their Dealings, exquisite in their Inventions, and industrious in their Labour: That the World has not better Marksmen with Bow and Arrow than the Natives, who kill Birds flying, Fishes swimming, and wild Beasts running, and shoot their Arrows with such prodigious Force, that one of them shot an *Englishman* quite through, and nail'd both his Arms to his Body with the same Arrow. And he saw a  
Boy

Virginia. Boy of twelve or thirteen Years of Age kill a  
 { Bird with an Arrow.

In the Character Captain *Smith* gives of them, he says, they are strong, nimble, and hardy, and when they are at war, or engag'd in an Enterprize, they will lie all Night abroad in the hardest Winters under a Tree, making Fires about them.

That they are inconstant, crafty, quick of Apprehension, and very ingenious, some bold, some timorous, but all of them cautious, circumspect and savage : That they are soon mov'd to Anger, and so malicious that they seldom forget an Injury.

However, the same Captain *Smith* acknowledges the *English* were hospitably entertain'd when they landed first in *Virginia*, before the Natives had any Apprehension the *English* came to invade their Country, and usurp the Dominion of it: And the Reason he gives them an ill Character in other Places seems to be, because they would not tamely suffer the Yoke to be put about their Necks by Foreigners. But if we would judge rightly of these People, I think we ought to observe how they treated ours before any Injury was offer'd them. And it appears that in the first Voyage that was made thither by Captain *Philip Amidas* and Captain *Arthur Barlow*, in the Year 1584, they were here feasted and caress'd beyond their Expectations. The politest and most hospitable People of *Europe* could not have used them better. They relate, that on their coming to an Anchor near Cape *Hateras*, an *Indian* came on Board, to whom they gave some Wine and a Dish of Meat ; and that thereupon the *Indian* returning to his Boat, caught them as many Fish as it would hold and brought them.

That

That the next Day, the Brother of one of their Kings came to the Sea-side with forty or fifty Attendants, and setting himself down over-against the Ship, Mr. *Amidas* and several more of the *English* went on Shore with their Arms. Whereupon this Prince, without being terrify'd at their warlike Appearance, invited them to set down on the Matts his Servants had provided, and made a great many Signs to express his Joy at their Arrival: After which they traffick'd with the Natives for their Deer-skins, Furrs, and other Peltry, giving them Dishes, Kettles, Hatchets, Knives, and other Implements in Return for them.

That afterwards, the Prince brought his Wife and several other Women on Board the Ship, where the *English* entertain'd them in the best Manner they could; and the Lady, in Return, invited them on Shore, and gave them Venison roast and boil'd, Fish, Melons, and other Fruits; and the Captain, who was one of the Company that was thus feasted by the Natives, and wrote this Relation, says, *they found the People most gentle, loving, and faithful, void of all Guile and Treachery.*

As to Arts and Sciences they understood but little. They knew no more of Letters than the rest of the *Americans*, but appear'd very tractable and capable of learning any thing. There were no Companies or Societies of Mechanicks or Artificers amongst them, but every Family did their own Business. They all understood how to build their Hutts, make their Cloaths, sow and plant their Grounds; and the greatest of them busied themselves in these Works: Their Princes were not exempted. King *Powhatan*, according to Captain *Smith*, made his own Robes, Shoes, Bows, Arrows,

Virginia. Arrows, Pots, and Pans, as well as the mean-  
 est of his Subjects.

They did not know the Use of Iron, and the Copper they had only serv'd them for Ornaments. Their edg'd Tools were sharp Stones, or Shells, set in Wood. They burnt down the Timber they used, hollow'd the Trunks of their great Trees with Fire, of which they made their Canoes, or Country Boats, all of a Piece, scraping them smooth with Stones or Shells, and some of these Boats were thirty Foot in Length.

They were infinitely surpris'd at the Effects of the Loadstone ; the Compass, and Mathematical Instruments, the Burning-Glass, the Perspective-Guns, Clocks, and Fire-works amazed these People ; they look'd upon them to be the Works of the Gods rather than Men, or at least that the Men that made them must be taught by the Gods ; which gave them an uncommon Veneration for the *English* when they arriv'd upon their Coasts, and made them ready to listen to whatever was propos'd.

The *Virginians* reckon'd their Years by Winters, and their Months by the Moon, and some say they reckon'd every Spring and Autumn a new Year, beginning it at either Equinox, which was the Occasion that so many of their People were reckon'd upwards of an hundred when the *English* came amongst them. They kept their Accounts with a notch'd Stick, and reckon'd from one to ten, and so to an hundred, as we do ; but large Sums confounded them.

Food.

Their usual Food was Hommony, which is *Indian* Corn boil'd to a Pulp, and comes the nearest butter'd Wheat of any thing I can compare it to : They eat also Venison, Fish,  
 and

and Fowl, great Part of their Time being employ'd in hunting and taking them; for they had no tame Cattle or Fowls. They both broil and stew their Meat, and their Fish they dress with the Scales on, and without gutting them. They eat also Peas and Beans, and several other kinds of Pulse and Roots, and among the rest the Cassavi Root, of which they make Bread, as in other Parts of *America*; 'tis said they eat Snakes also and other Vermin with as great a Gust as any other Flesh.

On rejoicing Days they sing and dance in a Ring, taking Hands, as other *Americans* do, and are much delighted with Masquerades, one of which Captain *Smith* gives a particular Relation of, being perform'd for his Diverſion when he was in the Court of King *Powhatan*.

They carry'd him into a Field by a Wood-side, and having seated him and his Company on Mats by a Fire, thirty young Women issu'd out of the Woods perfectly naked, only some Leaves to hide what all the World conceal, their Bodies painted red, white and black, and all manner of Colours, and on their Heads every one a Pair of Stags Horns, having Bows and Arrows in their Hands and Quivers at their Backs. Thus accoutred, these Ladies took Hands, danced and sung about the Fire and the Strangers, and having continued this Exercise for an Hour, they retir'd into the Woods, where they invited the Captain and his Friends to as elegant a Feast of Fish, Flesh, Fowl, and Fruits, as *Indians* were capable of making, some of the Nymphs singing and dancing, while others attended them; and, if we may credit this Traveller, making Love to him with so much Fondness, that he was perfectly surfeited with it.



Virginia.

Diseases  
and Re-  
medies.

The Natives are generally healthful and long-liv'd, subject to but few Diseases, and those chiefly proceeding from Colds, which they endeavour to get off by Sweating; but they are sometimes swept away by epidemical Distempers, occasion'd by unkindly Seasons; and the Small-pox proves as fatal to them as the Plague. As to the *Europeans* that live amongst them, Fevers and Agues, the Gripes, and Fluxes are the most common Distempers here, as in the rest of the *British* Plantations, the Occasion whereof, and the Methods of Cure, Sir *Hans Sloan*, who resided some time in *Jamaica*, has given very particular Accounts of, and from him I shall take the Liberty to communicate them to my Readers when I come to the Description of that Island, and only observe here, that the Bark is an infallible Remedy for their Fevers and Agues.





CHAP. IV.

Of the Virginian Animals.



THE Description Mr. Clayton has given us of these is so full that little can be added to it, and therefore I shall give it the Reader in his own Words; viz.

Virginia.  
Animals.

There were neither Horses, Cows, Sheep, or Swine in all the Country before the Coming of the *English*; but now there is good store of Horses, tho' they are very negligent and careless about the Breed. It is true there is a Law, that no Horse shall be kept stoned under a certain Size, but it is not put in execution. Such as they are there is good store, and as cheap or cheaper than in *England*, worth about five Pounds a-piece. They never shoe them, or stable them in general; some few Gentlemen may be something more curious, but it is very rare; yet they ride pretty sharply, a *Planter's Pace* is a Proverb, which is a good hand Gallop. The *Indians* have not yet learned to ride, only the King of *Pamunkie* had got three or four Horses for his own Saddle, and an Attendant, which I think should in no wise be indulged; for I look on the allowing them Horses much more dangerous than even Guns and Powder.

Horses.

Wild Bulls and Cows there are now in the uninhabited Parts, but such only as have been bred from some that have stray'd and become wild, and have propagated their Kind, and

Kine.

Virginia.

are difficult to be shot, having a great Acuteness of Smelling. The common Rate of a Cow or Calf is fifty Shillings un-sight un-seen; be the big or little they are never very curious to examine that Point.

Sheep. Their Sheep are of a midling Size, pretty fine fleec'd in general, and most Persons begin to keep Flocks, which hitherto has not been much regarded because of the Wolves that destroy them; so that a Piece of Mutton is a finer Treat than either Venison, Wild-goose, Duck, Widgeon, or Teal.

Elks.

Elks: I have heard of them beyond the Inhabitants, and that there was one presented to Sir *William Berkly*, which he kept some time; but they are not common.

Deer.

There are abundance of brave red Deer; so that a good Woodsman, as they call them, will keep his House with Venison. The *Indians* make artificial Sorts of Heads of Boughs of Trees, which they consecrate to their Gods, and these they put on to deceive the Deer when they go a Shooting or Hunting, as they call it, and by mimicking the Feeding of the Deer, they by Degrees get within Shot.

Hogs.

Swine they have now in great Abundance. Shoats, or Porkrels, are their general Food, and I believe as good as any *Westphalia*, certainly far exceeding our *English*.

Raccoons.

Raccoon: I take it to be a Species of a Monkey, something less than a Fox, grey hair'd, its Feet form'd like a Hand, and the Face too has likewise the Resemblance of a Monkey's, besides, being kept tame, are very apish. They are very prejudicial to their Poultry, as I remember,

## of VIRGINIA.

34

An Opossum : as big, and something shap'd <sup>Virginia.</sup> like our Badgers, but of a lighter dun Colour, with a long Tail something like a Rat, but as thick as a Man's Thumb. The Skin of the Females Belly is very large, and folded so as to meet like a Purse, wherein they secure their Young whilst little and tender, which will as naturally run thither as Chickens to a Hen, and in these false Bellies they will carry their Young. These also feed on and devour Corn.

Hares: Many will have them to be a Hares. Hedge-Rabbit, but I know not what they mean thereby. I take them to be a perfect Species of Hares, because I have seen Leverets there with the white Spot in the Head, which the old ones have not ; so it is in *England*, and the Down is perfectly of the Colour of our Hares ; they sit as our Hares do, and make no Holes and Burrows in the Earth ; true, they are but about the Bigness of an *English* Rabbit, and run no faster ; they generally take into some hollow Tree within a little Space, which then the People catch by gathering the wither'd Leaves, and setting them on Fire within the Hollow of the Tree, and smoaking them so till they fall down. Sometimes they take long Briars and twist them in the Down and Skin, and so pull them forth.


Their Squirrels are of three Sorts, the first is <sup>Squirrels.</sup> the great Fox-Squirrel, much larger than the *English*, and grey almost as a common Rabbit. These are very common. I have eaten of them at the best Gentlemens Tables, and they are as good as a Rabbit. The second is the Flying-Squirrel, of a lighter dun Colour, and much less than the *English* Squirrel. The Skin on either Side the Belly extended is very large

Virginia. large betwixt the Fore-leg and Hind-leg, which helps them much in their skipping from one Bough to another, that they will leap farther than the Fox-Squirrel, tho' much less; yet this is rather Skipping than Flying, tho' the Distinction be well enough. The third is the Ground-Squirrel. I never saw any of this Sort, only I have been told of them, and have had them describ'd to me to be little bigger than a Mouse, finely spotted like a young Fawn; by which I further apprehend, they are an absolute sort of Dor-Mouse, only different in Colour.

Musk-Rats Musk-Rats: In all things shap'd like our Water-Rats, only something larger, and is an absolute Species of Water-Rats, only having a curious musky Scent. I kept one for a certain Time in a wooden Chest: Two Days before it dy'd it was extraordinary odoriferous, and scented the Room very much, but the Day that it dy'd and a Day after the Scent was very small; yet afterwards the Skin was very fragrant; the Stones also smelt very well. They build Houses as Beavers do in the Marshes and Swamps (as they call them) by the Watersides, with two or three Ways into them, and they are finely daub'd within. I pull'd one in Pieces purposely to see the Contrivance; there were three different Lodging-rooms, very neat, one higher than another, as I conceive purposely made for Retirement when the Water rises higher than ordinary: They are considerably large, having much Trash and Lumber to make their Houses withal. I suppose they live mostly on Fish.

Batts.

Batts: As I remember, at least two Sorts, one a large sort with long Ears, and particularly long stragling Hairs. The other much like the

the *English*, something larger I think ; very <sup>Lions.</sup> *Virginia.* common. 

I never heard of any Lions ; they told me of a Creature kill'd whilst I was there in <sup>Lions.</sup> *Gloucester* County, which I conceiv'd to be a sort of Pard, or Tyger.

Bears: There are but few in the inhabited <sup>Bears.</sup> Part of *Virginia*. Towards *Carolina* there are many more. There was a small Bear kill'd within three Miles of *James City*, the Year that I left the Country ; but it was suppos'd to have stray'd and swam over *James River*. They are not very fierce. Their Flesh is commended for a very rich sort of Pork ; but the lying Side of the Bear, as I remember, is but half the Value of the other, Weight for Weight.

There are several Sorts of wild Cats, and <sup>WildCats.</sup> Poll-Cats.

Beavers build their Houses in like manner <sup>Beavers.</sup> as the Musk-Rats do, only much larger, and with Pieces of Timber make Dams over Rivers, as I suppose either to preserve their Furs dry in their Passage over the Rivers, or else to catch Fish by standing to watch them thereon, and jumping upon them on a sudden. They are very subtle Creatures, and if half the Stories be true that I have been told, they have a very orderly Government among them. In their Works each knows his proper Work and Station, and the Overseers beat those young ones that loiter in their Business ; and will make them cry and work stoutly. *These will be further describ'd in New-England.*

Of Wolves there are great store ; you may <sup>Wolves.</sup> hear a Company hunting in an Evening, and yelping like a Pack of Beagles ; but they are very cowardly, and dare scarce venture on any

*Virginia.* any thing that faces them ; yet if hungry, will pull down a good large Sheep that flies from them. I never heard that any of them adventur'd to set on Man or Child.

*Foxes.* Foxes : They are very much like ours, only their Furr is much more grissled or grey ; neither do I remember ever to have seen any Fox-holes ; but of this I am not positive.

*Dogs.* Every House keeps three or four mungrel Dogs to destroy Vermine, such as Wolves, Foxes, Raccoons, Opossums, &c. But they never hunt with Hounds, I suppose because there are so many Branches of Rivers that they cannot follow them. Neither do they keep Greyhounds, because they say, that they are subject to break their Necks by running against Trees, and any Cur will serve to run their Hares into a hollow Tree, where, after the aforesaid Manner, they catch them.

*Tortoises.* They have great store both of Land and Water-Tortoises, but they are very small I think. I never saw any in that Country to exceed a Foot in Length. There is also another sort of Land-Tortoise, different from the common Sort, with a higher-ridg'd Back, and speckled with red sort of Spots.

*Frogs.* Frogs they have of several Sorts ; one of a prodigious Largeness, eight or ten times as big as any in *England*, and it makes a strange Noise, something like the Bellowing of a Bull, or betwixt that and the hollow sounding Noise that the *English* Bittern makes.

*Toads.* Another very common Sort which they call Toads, because black ; but I think differs nothing from our black Frog. They have Toads also, like ours in *England*, and another small sort of Frog, which makes a Noise like Pack-horse Bells all the Spring long. Another little


little green Frog that will leap prodigiously, <sup>Virginia.</sup> which they therefore call the Flying-Frog. There is still heard in the Woods a shrill sort of Noise, much like that which our Shrew-Mouse makes, but much sharper. I could never learn the Certainty what it was that made this Noise. It is generally in a Tree, and some have asserted to me that it was made by the green Frog, yet I scarcely believe it. Mr. *Banister* assur'd me that it was made by a sort of scarabeus Beetle, that is, I think, full as big as the Humming-Bird; but neither do I believe that, and for this Reason, because I never saw that Beetle so low as the *Salts*, but always as high up in the Country as the *Freshes*, and that Noise is frequent all over the Country.

Lizards are grey and very common here; the Snakes feed much on them, for I have taken several of them out of the Bellies of Snakes.

Snakes: about seven several Sorts. The Rattle-Snake, so call'd from certain Rattles at the End of the Tail. These Rattles seem like so many perished Joints, being a dry Husk over certain Joints; and the common Opinion is, that there are as many Rattles or Joints as the Snake is Years old. I kill'd four or five, and they had each eleven, twelve, or thirteen Joints each; but the young ones have no Rattles of a Year or two old, but they may be known notwithstanding, being very regularly diced or chequer'd black and grey on the Backs. The old ones shake and shiver these Rattles with wonderful Nimbleness when they are any ways disturb'd. Their Bite is very deadly, yet not always of the same Force, but more or less mortal according as the Snake is in Force or Vigour, and therefore in *June* or *July*



Virginia.


*July* much worse, and more mortal than in *March* and *April*. This Snake is a very majestick sort of Creature, and will scarce meddle with any thing unless provok'd, but if any thing offend it, it makes directly at them. I was told a pleasant Story of an old Gentleman, Colonel *Cleyborn*, as I remember, was his Name, the same that sent the Rattle-Snakes to the *Royal Society* some Years since: He had an odd Fancy of keeping some of these Snakes always in Barrels in the House; and one time an *Indian* pretending to charm them so as to take them by the Neck in his Hand without biting of him, the old Gentleman caused a Rattle-Snake to be brought forth; the *Indian* began his Charm with a little Wand, whisking it round and round the Rattle-Snake's Head, bringing it by degrees nigher and nigher, and at length flung the Switch away, and whisked his Hand about in like manner, bringing his Hand still nigher and nigher by taking less Circles, when the old Gentleman immediately hit the Snake with his Crutch, and the Snake snap'd the *Indian* by the Hand, and bit him very sharply betwixt the Fingers, which put his Charm to an End, and he roar'd out, but stretch'd his Arm out as high as he could, calling for a String, wherewith he bound his Arm as hard as possibly he could, and clap'd a hot burning Coal thereon and singed it stoutly, whereby he was cur'd, but look'd pale a long while after. And I believe this truly one of the best Ways in the World of curing the Bite either of a Viper or mad Dog. I was with the Honourable 'Squire *Boyle* when he made certain Experiments of curing the Bite of Vipers with certain *East-India* Snake-stones, that were sent him by King *James* the Second,

the

the Queen, and some of the Nobility, purposely to have him try their Virtue and Efficacy: For that End he got some brisk Vipers, and made them bite the Thighs of certain Pullets, and the Breasts of others. He apply'd nothing to one of the Pullets, and it dy'd within three Minutes and a half, as I remember, but I think they all recover'd to which he apply'd the Snake-stones, tho' they turn'd wonderful pale, their Combs, &c. immediately, and they became extreme sick, and purg'd within half an Hour, and the next Morning all their Flesh was turn'd green to a Wonder; nevertheless they recover'd by degrees. The Manner of the Application was only by laying on the Stone, and by two cross bits of a very sticking Diaculum Plaister, binding it on, which he let not lie on past an Hour or two, but I think not so long, then took the Stone off and put it into Milk for some time; some Stones were of much stronger Virtue than others. I propos'd a Piece of unquench'd Lime-stone to be apply'd, to see whether it might not prove as powerful, but know not whether ever it was try'd. But here one telling Mr. *Boyle* the Story of this *Indian*, he approv'd the Method of Cure, and said, an actual Cautery was the most certain Cure. The Poison both of a Viper and mad Dog (as I conceive) kill by thickning of the Blood, after the manner that Runnet congeals Milk when they make Cheese. Vipers, and all the viperous Brood, as Rattle-Snakes, &c. that are deadly, have, I believe, their poisonous Teeth fistulous, for so I have observ'd the Vipers Teeth are, and the Rattle Snakes very remarkable, and therefore they kill so very speedily by injecting the Poison through these

Virginia.

fitulous Teeth into the very Mafs of Blood; but the Bite of mad Dogs is oft of long Continuance before it get into and corrupt the Mafs of Blood, for that it sticks only to the Out-fides of the Teeth, and therefore when they bite through any Thicknefs of Cloaths, it rarely proves mortal, the Cloaths wiping the Poison off before it comes to the Flefh.

Colonel *Spencer*, the Secretary of State in *Virginia*, a very ingenious Gentleman, told me, that his Servant brought him word once that a Sow having farrow'd, a Rattle-Snake was got into the Den and had kill'd the Pigs. The Colonel went to fee the Snake, which they faid was ftill coyl'd in the Den; there follow'd them two or three mungrel Curs, and they fet one of the Dogs at the Snake, which was too quick for the Dog and fnapt him by the Nofe; whereupon he fet a howling, and run immediately into the adjacent River and dy'd very fhortly after. Another of the Dogs upon the like Attempt was bit by the Snake alfo, and fell a howling and frothing and tumbling, but he not dying fofoon as the other Dog did, they fetch'd fome of the Herb which they call Dittany, as having a great traditionary Virtue for the Cure of Poifons. They pounded it, and adding a little Water expreffed the Juice, and gave the Dog frequently thereof, neverthelefs he died within a Day or two. The Howlings of the Dogs he fuppos'd gave Notice to the Sow, and made her come furiously briftling, and run immediately into her Den, but being likewise bit by the Snake, ſhe fet up a miferable Squeak; and ran alfo into the River and there dy'd.

A Gen-

A Gentlewoman, who was a notable female <sup>Virginia.</sup> Doctress, told me, that a Neighbour having been bit by a Rattle-Snake, swell'd excessively. Some Days afterwards she was sent for, who found him swell'd beyond what she thought it had been possible for the Skint to contain, and very thirsty. She gave him oriental Bezoar, shav'd with a strong Decoction of the aforesaid Dittany, whereby she recover'd the Person. To the best of my Remembrance it was he that told me. Asking him afterwards what he felt when the Snake first bit him, he said it seem'd as if a Flash of Fire had run through his Reins.

Besides the Rattle-Snake, there is the Blow-<sup>The Blow-</sup>ing-Snake, an absolute Species of a Viper, <sup>ing-Snake.</sup> but larger than any that I have seen in *Europe*. It is so call'd because it seems to blow and spread its Head, and swell very much before it bites, which is very deadly. It is remarkable there is none of their Snakes which make any of that hissing Noise that ours in *England* make, but only shoot out their Tongues, shaking them as ours do, without any Noise at all. This is a short thick sort of Snake.

There is another sort of deadly Snake, call'd <sup>The Red-</sup>the Red-Snake. I once narrowly escap'd <sup>Snake.</sup> treading on the Back of one of them. They are of an ugly dark brown Colour, inclining to red; their Bellies are of a more dusky white, with a large Streak of Vermillion red on either Side. This too is of the Viper Kind, but is not so short, and its Tail is more taper and small.

The Horn-Snake is, as they say, another <sup>The Horn-</sup>sort of deadly Snake. I never saw any of them <sup>Snake.</sup> unless once, shortly after my Arrival in that Country. I could not see the Horn, which, they

*Virginia.* they say, it has in its Front, wherewith it strikes, and if it wounds is as deadly as the Rattle-Snakes's Bite. This, I think, may not improperly be refer'd to the Dart-Snakes.

*The Black Snake.* The Black-Snake I think is the largest of all others, but I am sure the most common. I have kill'd several of them full six Foot long. Their Bite is not deem'd mortal, but it swells and turns to a running Sore; they feed upon Lizards, Mice, Rats, Frogs, and Toads, which I have taken out of their Bellies. I was once a simpling in the Woods on a fair Sun-shine Day, when I saw a Snake crawling on a Tree that was fallen, and licking with its forked Tongue as it mov'd. I stood still to observe it, and saw it lick up small Insects and Flies with wonderful Nimbleness, catching them betwixt the Forks of its Tongue.

*The Corn-Snake.* The Corn-Snake is most like the Rattle-Snake of all others in Colour, but the Chequers are not so regular, neither has it any Rattles. They are most frequent in the Corn Fields, and thence I suppose so call'd. The Bite is not so venomous as the Black-Snake's.

*The Water-Snake.* The Water-Snake is a small Snake. I never saw any of them above a Yard long, tho' I have seen sometimes forty or fifty at once. They are of an ugly dark blackish Colour. They say they are the least venomous of any.

*Sir Hans Sloan's Remarks on Snakes.* To this Account of Mr. Clayton's, if I add Sir Hans Sloan's Remarks on the same Animals, and the Instances he produces of the Effects their Bite has upon other Creatures, I presume it will not be unacceptable.

The various Relations, says that Gentleman, not only of curious and credible Authors who have given us Accounts of *Virginia, Carolina,*  
and


and the neighbouring Countries, but also the <sup>Virginia.</sup> Testimonies of several Men of Integrity by word of Mouth concerning what they call Charms, Enchantments, or Fascinations by Snakes, have often seem'd to me greatly surprising, without my being able to satisfy myself of the true Cause of such Appearances.

These Opinions are the greatest Support of a common Notion, that several chronical wasting Diseases, and such Disorders of the Nerves as are not easily accounted for, not only in Men but in Cattle, are believ'd to be the Effects of an evil Eye, of old malicious Women, &c. thought to be Witches and Sorcerers, or assisted by the Devil.

In particular, as to Rattle-Snakes, they all agree in their Relations, that those Snakes keeping their Eyes fix'd on any small Animal, as a Squirrel, Bird, or such like, tho' sitting upon the Branch of a Tree of a considerable Height, shall, by such stedfast or earnest Looking, make or cause it to fall dead into their Mouths. This is a thing so well attested, that they think there is no Reason to question their Belief of it.

Mr. *Read*, an eminent Merchant in the City of *London*, had a Rattle-Snake sent him alive in a Box with some Gravel from *Virginia*, which he did me the Favour to give me. It had liv'd three Months before, without any Sustenance, and had in that Time parted with its outer Coat, or *Exuviae*, which was found amongst the Gravel. Mr. *Ranby*, a very ingenious Surgeon and Anatomist, undertook the lodging it; and Captain *Hall*, a very understanding and observant Person, who had liv'd many Years in that Country in great Repute, ventur'd to take the Snake out of the Box,

Virginia.

 Box, notwithstanding that the Poison from the Bite thereof is almost present Death; for he gave us an Instance of a Person bitten, who was found dead at the Return of a Messenger going to the next House to fetch a Remedy or Antidote, tho' he was not gone above half an Hour. Nay, so certain are the mortal Effects of this Poison, that sometimes the Waiting till an Iron can be heated in order to burn the Wound, is said to have proved fatal. This Gentleman told me, he thought the securest Way was immediately to cut out the Part where the Wound was made; for he had seen several who carry'd these hollow Scars about them, as Marks of the narrow Escape they had had, and never felt any Inconvenience afterwards.

Tho' Providence hath produc'd a Creature so terrible to other Animals, yet it seems to have provided it with the Rattle at its Tail, that the Noise thereof might give Warning to them to get out of its Way.

I desir'd an Experiment should be try'd before several Physicians, which was accordingly done in the Garden belonging to their College in *London*. The Captain, by keeping the Head fast with a forked Stick, and making a Noose, which he put about the Tail of the Snake, ty'd it fast to the End of another Stick, wherewith he took him out of the Box and laid him upon the Grass-plat; then a Dog being made to tread upon him, he bit the Dog, who thereupon howled very bitterly, and went away some few Yards distant from the Snake, but in about one Minute of Time he grew paralytick in the hinder Legs, after the manner of Dogs who have the *Aorta Descendens* ty'd. He dy'd in less than three Minutes Time, as is related by Mr. *Ranby* in an Account

count of this Experiment in *Philos. Transf.* <sup>Virginia.</sup> N<sup>o</sup>. 401. p. 377. and by Captain Hall, N<sup>o</sup>. 399, p. 309.

In my Opinion, the whole Mystery of their enchanting or charming any Creature is chiefly this, that when such Animals as are their proper Prey, namely, small Quadrupedes, or Birds, &c. are surpris'd by them, they bite them, and the Poison allows them time to run a small Way, as our Dog did, or perhaps a Bird to fly up into the next Tree, where the Snakes watch them with great Earnestness till they fall down, or are perfectly dead, when having lick'd them over with their Spawl or Spittle, they swallow them down, as the following Accounts relate.

Some People in *England* (says Colonel <sup>Colonel</sup> *Beverley*, in his *History of Virginia*, Edit. 2. <sup>*Beverley's*</sup> p. 260. *Lond.* 1722. 8vo.) are startled at the very Name of the Rattle-Snake, and fancy <sup>Account</sup> of the Rattle-Snake. every Corner of that Province so much pester'd with them that a Man goes in constant Danger of his Life that walks abroad in the Woods; but this is as gross a Mistake as most of the other ill Reports of this Country; for in the first place, this Snake is very rarely seen, and when that happens it never does the least Mischief, unless you offer to disturb it, and thereby provoke it to bite in its own Defence: But it never fails to give you fair Warning by making a Noise with its Rattle, which may be heard at a convenient Distance. For my own part, I have travell'd the Country as much as any Man in it of my Age by Night and by Day, above the Inhabitants as well as among them, and yet before the first Impression of this Book I had never seen a Rattle-Snake alive and at liberty in all my Life. I had seen



Virginia.  


them indeed after they had been kill'd or pent up in Boxes to be sent to *England*. The Bite of this Viper, without some immediate Application, is certainly Death; but Remedies are so well known that none of their Servants are ignorant of them. I never knew any kill'd by these or any other of their Snakes, altho' I had a general Knowledge all over the Country, and had been in every Part of it. They have several other Snakes which are seen more frequently, and have very little or no Hurt in them, *viz.* such as they call Black-Snakes, Water-Snakes, and Corn-Snakes. The black Viper-Snake, and the Copper-belly'd-Snake, are said to be as venomous as the Rattle-Snake, but they are as seldom seen. These three poisonous Snakes bring forth their Young alive, whereas the other three sorts lay Eggs, which are hatch'd afterwards, and that is the Distinction they make, esteeming only those to be venomous which are viviparous. They have likewise the Horn-Snake, so call'd from a sharp Horn it carries in its Tail, with which it assaults any thing that offends it with that Force, that, as it is said, it will strike its Tail into the butt End of a Musket, from whence it is not able to disengage itself.


All sorts of Snakes will charm both Birds and Squirrels; and the *Indians* pretend to charm them (the Snakes.) Several Persons have seen Squirrels run down a Tree directly into a Snake's Mouth. They have likewise seen Birds fluttering up and down, and chattering at these Snakes till at last they have drop'd down just before them.

In the End of *May*, 1715, stopping at an Orchard by the Road-side to get some Cherries, being three of us in Company, we were entertain'd

tain'd with the whole Process of a Charm between a Rattle-Snake and a Hare, the Hare being better than half grown. It happen'd thus: One of the Company, in his search for the best Cherries, espy'd the Hare sitting, and altho' he went close by her, she did not move, till he (not suspecting the Occasion of her Gentleness) gave her a Lash with his Whip; this made her run about ten Foot, and there sit down again. The Gentleman not finding the Cherries ripe, immediately return'd the same Way, and near the Place where he struck the Hare he espy'd a Rattle-Snake. Still not suspecting the Charm, he goes back about twenty Yards to a Hedge to get a Stick to kill the Snake, and at his Return found the Snake remov'd, and coil'd in the same Place from whence he had mov'd the Hare. This put him into immediate Thoughts of looking for the Hare again, and soon espy'd her about ten Foot off the Snake, in the same Place to which she had started when he whip'd her. She was now lying down, but would sometimes raise herself on her Fore-feet, struggling as it were for Life, or to get away, but could never raise her hinder Parts from the Ground, and then would fall flat on her Side again, panting vehemently. In this Condition the Hare and Snake were when he call'd me, and tho' we all three came up within fifteen Foot of the Snake, to have a full View of the whole, he took no Notice at all of us, nor so much as gave a Glance towards us. There we stood, at least half an Hour, the Snake not altering a Jot, but the Hare often struggling and falling on its Side again, till at last the Hare lay still, as dead, for some Time; then the Snake moved out of his Coil, and slid gently

## THE PRESENT STATE

and smoothly on towards the Hare, his Colours at that Instant being ten times more glorious and shining than at other Times ; as the Snake mov'd along, the Hare happen'd to fetch another Struggle, upon which the Snake made a Stop, lying at his Length till the Hare had lain quiet again for a short Space, and then he advanc'd again till he came up to the hinder Parts of the Hare, which in all this Operation had been towards the Snake ; there he made a Survey all over the Hare, raising Part of his Body above it, then turn'd off and went to the Head and Nose of the Hare ; after that to the Ears, took the Ears in his Mouth, one after the other, working each apart in his Mouth, as a Man does a Wafer to moisten it ; then return'd to the Nose again, and took the Face into his Mouth, straining and gathering his Lips sometimes by one Side of his Mouth, sometimes by the other. At the Shoulders he was a long time puzzled, often hauling and stretching the Hare out at length, and straining forward first one side of his Mouth, then the other, till at last he got the whole Body into his Throat ; then we went to him, and taking the Twist-band off from my Hat, I made a Noose and put it about his Neck : This made him at length very furious, but we having secur'd him, put him into one End of a Wallot and carry'd him on Horseback five Miles to Mr. *John Baylor's* House, where we lodg'd that Night, with a Design to have sent him to Dr. *Cock* at *Williamsburgh*, but Mr. *Baylor* was so careful of his Slaves, that he would not let him be put into his Boat for fear he should get loose and mischief them ; therefore the next Morning we kill'd him, and took the Hare out of his Belly. The  
Head

Head of the Hare began to be digested, and the Hair falling off, having lain about eighteen Hours in the Snake's Belly. 

I thought this Account of such a Curiosity would be acceptable, and the rather because, tho' I live in a Country where such Things are said frequently to happen, yet I never could have any satisfactory Account of a Charm, tho' I have met with several Persons who have pretended to have seen them. Some also pretend that those sort of Snakes influence Children, and even Men and Women by their Charms. But this that I have related of my own View, I aver (for the Satisfaction of the Learned) to be punctually true, without enlarging or wavering in any Respect, upon the Faith of a Christian.

In my Youth I was a Bear-hunting in the Woods above the Inhabitants, and having straggled from my Companions, I was entertain'd at my Return with the Relation of a pleasant Rencounter between a Dog and a Rattle-Snake about a Squirrel. The Snake had got the Head and Shoulders of the Squirrel into his Mouth, which being something too large for his Throat, it took him up some Time to moisten the Furr of the Squirrel with his Spawl to make it slip down. The Dog took this Advantage, seiz'd the hinder Parts of the Squirrel, and tugg'd with all his Might. The Snake on the other side would not let go his Hold for a long time, till at last fearing he might be bruise'd by the Dog's running away with him, he gave up his Prey to the Dog. The Dog eat the Squirrel and felt no Harm.

Another Curiosity concerning this Viper, which I never met with in Print, I will also relate from my own Observation.

Some

Virginia.



Some time after my Observation of the Charm, my Waiting-boy being sent abroad on an Errand, also took upon himself to bring home a Rattle-Snake in a Noose. I cut off the Head of this Snake, leaving about an Inch of the Neck with it. This I laid upon the Head of a Tobacco Hogshead (one *Stephen Lankford*, a Carpenter, now alive, being with me.) Now you must note, that these Snakes have but two Teeth, by which they convey their Poison, and they are placed in the upper Jaw, pretty forward in the Mouth, one on each Side. These Teeth are hollow and crooked, like a Cock's Spur; they are also loose or springing in the Mouth, and not fasten'd in the Jaw Bone, as all the other Teeth are; the Hollow has a Vent also through by a small Hole, a little below the Point of the Teeth. These two Teeth are kept lying down along the Jaw, or shut like a Spring-Knife, and don't shrink up, as the Talons of a Cat or Panther. They have also over them a loose thin Film or Skin of a Flesh Colour, which rises over them when they are rais'd; which I take to be only at the Will of the Snake to do Injury. This Skin does not break by the Rising of the Tooth only, but keeps whole till the Bite is given, and then is pierc'd by the Tooth, by which the Poison is let out. The Head being laid upon the Hogshead, I took two little Twigs, or Splinters of Sticks, and having turn'd the Head upon its Crown, open'd the Mouth, and lifted up the Fang or springing Tooth on one Side several times; in doing of which I at last broke the Skin: The Head gave a sudden Champ with its Mouth breaking from my Sticks, in which I observ'd that the Poison ran down in a Lump like Oil round the Root of the

the Tooth; then I turn'd the other Side of the Head, and resolv'd to be more careful to keep the Mouth open on the like Occasion, and observe more narrowly the Consequence; for it is to be observ'd, that tho' the Heads of Snakes, Terrapins (a sort of Tortoise) and such like Vermine be cut off, yet the Body will not die in a long time after; the general Saying is, till the Sun sets. After opening the Mouth on the other Side, and lifting up that Fang also several times, he endeavour'd to give another Bite or Champ, but I kept his Mouth open, and the Tooth pierc'd the Film and emitted a Stream like one full of Blood in Blood-letting, and cast some Drops upon the Sleeve of the Carpenter's Shirt, who had no Waistcoat on. I advis'd him to put off his Shirt, but he would not, and receiv'd no Harm, and tho' nothing could then be seen of it upon the Shirt, yet in washing there appear'd five green Specks, which every Washing appear'd plainer and plainer, and lasted as long as the Shirt did, which the Carpenter told me was about three Years after. The Head we threw afterwards down upon the Ground, and a Sow came and eat it before our Faces and receiv'd no Harm. Now I believe had this Poison lighted upon any Place of the Carpenter's Skin that was scratch'd or hurt it might have poison'd him. I take the Poison to rest in a small Bag or Receptacle in the Hollow at the Root of these Teeth, but I never had the Opportunity afterwards to make a further Discovery of that.

I will likewise give you a Story of the violent Effects of this sort of Poison, because I depend on the Truth of it, having it from an Acquaintance of mine of good Credit, one  
Colonel

Virginia. Colonel *James Taylor* of *Metapony*, still alive. He being with others in the Woods a surveying, just as they were standing to light their Pipes, they found a Rattle-Snake, and cut off his Head and about three Inches of the Body ; then with a green Stick which he had in his Hand, about a Foot and an half long, the Bark being newly peel'd off, urg'd and provok'd the Head till it bit the Stick in Fury several times. Upon this the Colonel observ'd small green Streaks to rise up along the Stick towards his Hand ; he threw the Stick upon the Ground, and in a quarter of an Hour the Stick of its own accord split into several Pieces, and fell asunder from End to End. This Account I had from him again at the writing hereof. *Beverley's History of Virginia*, p. 260 to 267.

Father *Labat* likewise tells us (in his *Nouveau Voyage aux Isles de l'Amerique*, Tom. IV. p. 96 and 106, Edit. Paris, 1722, in 8vo.) that Serpents when they bite their Prey retire to avoid being hurt by them, and when dead cover them with their Spittle, extend their Feet along their Sides and Tails, if Quadrupedes, and then swallow them.

A certain Viper-Catcher who suffer'd himself to be bitten before forty Gentlemen of the University of *Cambridge* last Month (*July*, 1737) for the slender Reward of Twelvepence he receiv'd of every one of the Spectators, having provok'd a Viper to fasten upon his Wrist, said he felt at that Instant a most exquisite Pain as high as his Elbow, and was in no small Consternation, tho' he had been bitten a great many times before, both accidentally in catching Vipers, and designedly for a Reward, and particularly before some Gentlemen of the *Royal Society*.

He

He kept stroaking down his Arm to the Virginia. Wrist from the time he was wounded, but apply'd nothing to it except common Sallad Oil, and did not do this till half an Hour after he was bitten, and his Arm was pretty much swell'd, and the next Day he appear'd perfectly well.

Give me Leave to add, in relation to the Horn-Snake, that I saw a Letter lately which Mr. *Wilkinson*, Fellow of *Emanuel-College*, receiv'd from his Brother, then at *Virginia*, who assur'd him that Trees had been kill'd by this Snake's striking his Horn into them ; which does not seem more improbable than the splitting of a Stick that has been penetrated by the Tooth of a Rattle-Snake : But as to the Business of Charming, I have very little Faith in it, unless as I have hinted, in treating of the *East-India* Serpents, that Birds may be delighted with the sparkling Eyes of Snakes, as they are with the Fowler's Glafs, or as a Moth is with the Flame of a Candle, and be taken in flying to the Snake to satisfy their Curiosity.

As to the feather'd Race, says Mr. *Clayton*, Fowls, already cited, there are three sorts of Eagles ; and Birds. the largest I take to be that they call the grey Eagle, being much of the Colour of our Kite Eagles. or Glead.

The second is the bald Eagle, for the Body and Part of the Neck being of a dark brown, the upper Part of the Neck or Head is cover'd with a white sort of Down, whereby it looks very bald, whence it is so named.

The third is the black Eagle, resembling most the *English* Eagle. They build their Nests generally at the Top of some old Tree, naked of Boughs, and nigh the River-side, and the People fell the Tree generally when



Virginia. they take the Young. They are most frequently sitting on some tall Tree by the River-side, whence they may have a Prospect up and down the River, as I suppose to observe the Fishing-Hawks ; for when they see the Fishing-Hawk has struck a Fish, immediately they take Wing, and 'tis sometimes very pleasant to behold the Flight ; for when the Fishing-Hawk perceives herself pursu'd she will scream and make a terrible Noise, till at length she lets fall the Fish to make her own Escape, which the Eagle frequently catches before it reach the Earth or Water. These Eagles kill young Lambs, Pigs, &c.

Fishing-Hawk. The Fishing-Hawk is an absolute Species of a King's-Fisher, but full as large or larger than our Jay, much of the Colour and Shape of a King's-Fisher, tho' not altogether so curiously feather'd. It has a large Crop as I remember. There is a little King's-Fisher, much the same in every respect with ours.

If I much mistake not, I have seen both Goss, Hawk, and Faulcon ; besides, there are several sorts of the lesser kind of Stannels.

There is likewise the Kite and the Ring-tale.

I never heard the Cuckow there to my Remembrance.

Owls. There's both a brown Owl and white Owl, much about as large as a Goose, which often kills their Hens and Poultry in the Night. The white Owl is a very delicate feather'd Bird, all the Feathers upon her Breast and Back being snow-white, and tip'd with a Punctal of jet-black ; besides, there is a Barn-Owl, much like ours, and a little sort of Screech-Owl.

There's

There's both the Raven and the Carrion-  
Crow. I do not remember I saw any Rooks  
there.

Virginia.  
Ravens.

The Night-Raven, which some call the  
*Virginian* Batt, is about the Bigness of a Cuc-  
kow, feather'd like them, but very short Legs,  
not discernable when it flies, which is only in  
the Evening, scudding like our Night-Raven.

There's a great sort of ravenous Bird that  
feeds upon Carrion, as big very nigh as an  
Eagle, which they call a Turkey-Bustard ;  
its Feathers are of a duskyish black, it has red  
Gills, resembling those of a Turkey, whence  
it has its Name. It is nothing of the same  
sort of Bird with our *English* Turkey-Bustard,  
but is rather a Species of the Kites, for it will  
hover on the Wing something like them, and  
is carnivorous. The Fat thereof, dissolved  
into an Oil, is recommended mightily against  
old Aches and Sciatica Pains.

I think there are no Jackdaws, nor any  
Magpies. They there prize a Magpye as  
much as we do their red Bird.

The *Pica Glandaria*, or Jay, is much less Jay.  
than our *English* Jay, and of another Colour,  
for it is all blue where ours is brown, the  
Wings marbled as curiously as ours are ; it  
has both the same Cry and sudden jetting  
Motion.

There are great Variety and Curiosity in Wood-  
the Wood-peckers. There's one as big as our  
Magpye, with blackish brown Feathers, and  
a large scarlet Tuft on the top of the Head.  
There are four or five sorts of Wood-peckers  
more variegated with green, yellow, and red  
Heads, others spotted black and white, most  
lovely to behold.

Virginia.

Turkies.

There are wild Turkies extreme large: They talk of Turkies that have been kill'd which have weigh'd betwixt fifty and sixty Weight. The largest that ever I saw weigh'd something better than thirty-eight Pound. They have very long Legs, and will run prodigiously fast. I remember not that ever I saw any of them on the Wing except it were once. Their Feathers are of a blackish shining Colour, that look in the Sun-shine like a Dove's Neck.

Poultry  
without  
Rumps.

Hens and Cocks are for the most part without Tails and Rumps; and as some have assur'd me, our *English* Hens, after some time being kept there, have their Rumps rot off; which I am the apter to believe being all their Hens are certainly of an *English* Breed. I am sorry I made no Anatomical Observations thereof, and Remarks about the Use of the Rumps in Birds, which at present I take to be a couple of Glands, containing a sort of Juice for the varnishing the Feathers, having observ'd all Birds have much Recourse with their Bills to the Rumps when they dress their Plumes, whereby they scud thro' the Air more nimbly in their Flight.

Partridges. Partridges there are much smaller than ours, and resort in Covies, as ours do. Their Flesh is very white, and much excels ours, in my Mind; *sed de gustibus non est disputandum.*

Doves.

Their Turtle-Doves are of a dusky blue Colour, much less than our common Pigeon; the whole Train is longer much than the Tails of our Pigeons, the middle Feather being the longest. There is the strangest Story of a vast Number of these Pigeons that came in a Flock, a few Years before I came thither; they say they came through *New-England*, *New-York*, and *Virginia*, and were so prodigious

digious in Number as to darken the Sky for several Hours in the Place over which they flew, and brake massive Bows where they light, and many like things which I have had asserted to me by many Eye-witnesses of Credit, that to me it was without doubt, the Relaters being very sober Persons, and all agreeing in a Story. Nothing of the like ever happen'd since, nor did I ever see past ten in a Flock together, that I remember. I am not fond of such Stories, and had suppress'd the relating of it but that I have heard the same from very many.

Virginia.

The Thrush and Fieldfare are much like Thrush. ours, and are only seen in Winter there, according as they are here.

Their Mocking-Birds may be compar'd to Mocking-Bird. our Singing-Thrushes, being much of the same Bigness. There are two sorts, the grey and the red; the grey has Feathers much of the Colour of our grey Plovers, with white in the Wings like a Magpye. This has the much softer Note, and will imitate in its singing the Notes of all Birds that it hears, and is accounted much the finest singing Bird in the World. This Mocking-Bird, having its Name from mimicking all other Birds in Singing, is a wonderful mettled Bird, bold and brisk, and yet seems to be of a very tender Constitution, neither singing in Winter, nor in the midst of Summer; and with much Difficulty are any of them brought to live in England.

The red Mocking-Bird is of a duskyish red, or rather brown; it sings very well, but has not so soft a Note as the grey Mocking-Bird.

Of the Virginia Nightingale, or red Bird, Nightingale. there are two sorts; the Cocks of both sorts are

Virginia.

are of a pure scarlet, the Hens of a duskyish red. I distinguish them into two sorts, for the one has a tufted Cops on the Head, the other is smooth-feather'd. The Boys catch them and sell them to the Merchants for about Six-pence a-piece, by whom they are brought to *England*. They are something less than a Thrush.

Starling.

There is a Bird very injurious to Corn they call a Blackbird. I look on it a sort of Starling, for they cry something like them, but do not sing, are much about the same Bigness, have Flesh blackish like theirs. They resort in great Flocks together. They are as black as a Crow all over to their Bills, only some of them have scarlet Feathers in the Pinions of their Wings. *Query*, whether a distinct Species.

Larks.

They have a Lark nothing differing from our common Lark. They have another Bird which they call a Lark, that is much larger, as big as a Starling; it has a soft Note, feeds on the Ground, and, as I remember, has the specifical Character of a long Heel. It is more inclined to yellow, and has a large half Moon on its Breast of yellow. If it have not a long Heel, *Query* whether a Species of the Yellowhammer.

Martin.

They have a Martin, very like, only larger than ours, that builds after the same manner. The Honourable Colonel *Bacon* has remarked for several Years, that they constantly come thither upon the 10th of *March*, one or two of them appearing before, being seen hovering in the Air for a Day or two, then go away, and, as he supposed, return'd with the great Flock. The Colonel delighted much in this Bird, and made Holes like Pigeon Holes at the End of his House with Boards purposely for them. Their

Their Swallow differs but little from ours. Virginia.

They have a Bird they call a blue Bird, of a curious azure Colour, about the Bigness of a Swallow. Bluebird. Chafinch.

There are other sorts of Finches, variegated Finches. with orange and yellow Feathers, very beautiful.

Sparrows, not much different from the Sparrows. *English*, but build not in the Eaves of Houses, that ever I saw.

The Snow-Bird, which I take to be much the same with our Hedge-Sparrow. This is so call'd because it seldom appears about Houses, but against Snow or very cold Weather.

The Humming-Bird, which feeds upon the Honey of Flowers. I have been told by some Persons that have kept of these Humming-Birds alive, and fed them with Water and Sugar, they are much the smallest of all Birds, have long Bills and curiously-colour'd Feathers, but differ much in Colour. Humming Bird.

Hérons, three or four several sorts, one larger than the *English*, feather'd much like a *Spanish* Goose. Hérons.

Another sort that only comes in Summer, Milk white, with red Legs, very lovely to behold.

The Bittern is there less than in *England*, and does not make that founding Noise, that ever I heard. Bittern.

Curlews, something less than our *English*, tho' bigger than a Wimbrel. Curlews.

The Sand-piper, much resembling the Sand-piper *English*.

The Snipe, two sorts, one resembling ours, Snipe. the other much less.

*Virginia.* The Tewits are smaller than the *English*, and have no long Toppins, but just like a young one that begins to fly.

*Wild Swans, Geese, and Ducks.* There are a great Number of wild Swans, wild Geese, and *Brent*-Geese all Winter in mighty Flocks, wild Ducks innumerable, Teal, Wigeon, Sheldrakes, *Virginia* Diders, the black Diver, &c.

*Cormorants. Gulls.* There are in *Virginia* a great many Cormorants, several sorts of Gulls, and in and about the Bay many Bannets.

*Fish.* There is no Place abounds with Sea and River Fish more than *Virginia*. In *February*, *March*, *April*, and *May*, there are Shoals of Herrings come up into their very Brooks, some of the Size of ours, but for the most part much larger.

*Cod fish, Stingrass, &c.* There are also Plenty of Cod-fish, and the Stingrass is said to be peculiar to this Country, being so called from having a Sting in its Tail. It is esteem'd good Food. In their Rivers there are the Old-wife, the Sheeps-head, an excellent Fish, Trouts, green Fish, Sturgeons in great Plenty, Place, Flounders, Carp, Whittings, Carp, Pikes, Mulletts and Perch: And for Shell-fish they have Oysters, Crabs, Cockles, and Shrimps: Of those that are not eaten they have in their Seas Whale, Dog-fish, Sharks, Porpus's, Gar-fish, and Sword-fish.

*Trouts, Sturgeons, Carp, Perch, &c. Oysters. Whales.* There is also a Fish they call the Toad-fish, from his swelling monstrously when he is taken out of the Water, and the Rock-fish, some Species whereof are poisonous, and have been fatal to those that have eaten them; tho' others, which are not easy to be distinguish'd from the former, are very wholesome Food.

*Toad-fish. Rock-fish.* The Skip-jack, so nam'd from his skipping out of the Water, is tolerably good Food. And

The

The Tobacco-pipe-fish, so call'd from its <sup>Virginia.</sup> being long and slender like a Tobacco-pipe.

Colonel *Beverley*, also, who has furnish'd <sup>Tobacco-</sup> us with the above-said Description of the Rattle-<sup>pipe fish.</sup> Snake, gives us the following Account of some of the rest of the *Virginian* Animals, and their Management of them, (*viz.*)

When I come to speak of their Cattle (*says* Cattle, that Gentleman) I can't forbear charging my Countrymen with exceeding ill Husbandry in not providing sufficiently for them all Winter, by which Means they starve all their young Cattle, or at least stint their Growth; so that they seldom or never grow so large as they would do if they were well manag'd; for the Humour is there, if People can but save the Lives of their Cattle, tho' they suffer them to be never so poor, in the Winter, yet they will presently grow fat again in the Spring, which they esteem sufficient for their Purpose. And this is the Occasion that their Beef and Mutton are seldom or never so large or so fat as in *England*; and yet with the least feeding imaginable they are put into as good Case as can be expected; and it is the same with their Hogs.

Their Fish is in vast Plenty and Variety, Fish. and extraordinary good in their Kind. Beef <sup>Price of</sup> and Pork are commonly sold there from one <sup>Flesh and</sup> Penny to Two-pence the Pound, or more, <sup>Fowl.</sup> according to the Time of Year; their fattest and largest Pullets at Six-pence a-piece, their Capons at Eight-pence or Nine-pence a-piece, their Chickens at three or four Shillings the Dozen, their Ducks at Eight-pence or Nine-pence a-piece, their Geese at Ten-pence or a Shilling, their Turkey-Hens at Fifteen or Eighteen-pence, and their Turkey-Cocks at two Shillings or half a Crown; but Oysters and



*Virginia.* wild Fowl are not so dear as the Things I have reckon'd before, being in their Season the cheapest Victuals they have. Their Deer are commonly sold from five to ten Shillings, according to the Scarcity and Goodness.

*Insects.* All the troublesome Vermine that ever I heard any body complain of are either Frogs, Snakes, Musqueto's, Chinchies, Seed-ticks, or Red-worms, by some call'd Potatoo-Lice; of all which I shall give an Account in their Order.

*Toads and Frogs.* Some People have been so ill inform'd as to say, that *Virginia* is full of Toads, tho' there never yet was seen one Toad in it. The Marshes, Fens, and watry Grounds are indeed full of harmless Frogs, which do no Hurt, except by the Noise of their croaking Notes; but in the upper Parts of the Country, where the Land is high and dry, they are very scarce. In their Swamps and running Streams they have Frogs of an incredible Bigness, which are call'd Bull-Frogs, from the Roaring they make. Last Year I found one of these near a Stream of fresh Water of so prodigious a Magnitude, that when I extended its Legs I found the Distance betwixt them to be seventeen Inches and a half. If any are good to eat these must be the Kind.

*Musquetos* Musqueto's are long-tail'd Gnats, such as are in all Fens and low Grounds in *England*, and I think have no other Difference from them than the Name. Neither are they in *Virginia* troubled with them any where but in their low Grounds and Marshes. These Insects, I believe, are stronger and continue longer there by Reason of the warm Sun than in *England*. Whoever is persecuted with them in his House, may get rid of them by this easy Remedy:

Remedy: Let him but set open his Windows at Sun-set and shut them again before the Twilight be quite shut in, all the Musquito's in the Room will go out at the Windows. Virginia.

Chinches are a sort of flat Bug, which lurks in the Bedsteads and Bedding, and disturbs People's Rest a-Nights. Every neat Housewife contrives there by several Devices to keep her Beds clear of them. But the best Way I ever heard effectually to destroy them is by a narrow Search among the Bedding early in the Spring, before these Vermine begin to nit and run about; for they lie snug all the Winter, and are in the Spring large and full of the Winter's Growth, having all their Seed within them, and so they become a fair Mark to find, and may with their whole Breed be destroy'd. They are the same as they have in London near the Shipping.

Seed-ticks and Red-worms are small Insects that annoy the People by Day as Musquito's and Chinches do by Night; but both these keep out of your Way if you keep out of theirs; for Seed-ticks are no where to be met with but in the Track of Cattle, upon which the great Ticks fasten and fill their Skins so full of Blood that they drop off, and wherever they happen to fall they produce a kind of Egg, which lies about a Fortnight before the Seedlings are hatch'd. These Seedlings run in Swarms up the next Blade of Grass that lies in their Way, and then the first thing that brushes that Blade of Grass gathers off most of these Vermine, which stick like Burs upon any thing that touches them. They void their Eggs at their Mouth.

Red-worms lie only in old dead Trees and rotten Logs, and without sitting down upon

Virginia. such a Man never meets with them, nor at any other Season but only in the midst of Summer. A little warm Water immediately brings off both Seed-ticks and Red-worms, tho' they lie ever so thick upon any Part of the Body. But without such Remedy they will be troublesome; for they are so small that nothing will lay hold of them but the Point of a Penknife, Needle, or such like; but if nothing be done to remove them, the Itching they occasion goes away after two Days.

Sheep. Their Sheep increase well and bear good Fleeces, but they generally are suffer'd to be torn off their Backs by Briars and Bushes instead of being shorn, or else are left rotting upon the Dunghil with their Skins.

Bees. Bees thrive there abundantly, and will very easily yield to the careful Housewife a full Hive of Honey, and besides lay up a Winter Store sufficient to preserve their Stocks.

Cattle and Pasture. The Beeves, when any Care is taken of them in the Winter, come to good Perfection. They have noble Marshes there, which, with the Charge of draining only, would make as fine Pastures as any in the World, and yet there is hardly an hundred Acres of Marsh drain'd throughout the whole Country.

Hogs. Hogs swarm like Vermine upon the Earth, and are often accounted such, insomuch that when an Inventory of any considerable Man's Estate is taken by the Executors the Hogs are left out, and not listed in the Appraisement. The Hogs run where they list, and find their own Support in the Woods without any Care of the Owner, and in many Plantations it is well if the Proprietor can find and catch the Pigs or any Part of a Farrow when they are young to mark them; for if there be any  
mark'd

mark'd in a Gang of Hogs they determine the Property of the rest, because they seldom miss their Gangs, but as they are bred in Company so they continue to the End, except sometimes the Boars ramble.

In the Month of *June* annually there rise up in the Salts vast Beds of Seedling-Worms, which enter the Ships, Sloops, or Boats wherever they find the Coat of Pitch, Tarr, or Lime worn off the Timber, and by degrees eat the Plank into Cells like those of an Honey-Comb. These Worms continue thus upon the Surface of the Water from their Rise in *June* until the first great Rains after the middle of *July*, but after that do no fresh Damage till the next Summer Season, and never penetrate farther than the Plank or Timber they first fix upon.

The Damage occasion'd by these Worms may be four several Ways avoided.

1<sup>st</sup>, By keeping the Coat (of Pitch, Lime, and Tallow, or whatever else it is) whole upon the Bottom of the Ship or Vessel; for these Worms never fasten nor enter but where the Timber is naked.

2<sup>dly</sup>, By anchoring the large Vessels in the Strength of the Tide during the Worm-Season, and haling the smaller a-shore, for in the Current of a strong Tide the Worms cannot fasten.

3<sup>dly</sup>, By burning and cleaning immediately after the Worm Season is over, for then they are but just stuck into the Plank, and have not bury'd themselves in it, so that the least Fire in the World destroys them entirely, and prevents all Damage that would otherwise ensue from them,

4<sup>thly</sup>,

Virginia.

4<sup>thly</sup>, By running up into the Freshes with the Ship or Vessel during the five or six Weeks that the Worm is thus above Water ; for they never enter or do any Damage in fresh Water, or where it is not very salt.





CHAP. V.

*Of the Virginian Soil and Vegetables, viz.  
of their Forest and Fruit Trees, Plants,  
Corn, Herbage, Roots, and Husbandry;  
and of their Stones, Earth, and Mi-  
nerals.*



HIS Country, upon the first <sup>Virginia.</sup> Discovery of it, was found to consist, like many others, either <sup>Soil and Vegetables.</sup> of Forests or Bogs. The Forests contain'd abundance of noble Timber of various Kinds, which grew to an unusual Height and Bulk, much beyond any thing we see in *Europe*; the Trees standing <sup>Forest Trees.</sup> at such a Distance from each other that a Coach and Six might drive through them with Pleasure. The chief of them were Oaks, Cedars, Firrs, Cypress, Elm, Ash, and Walnut, which had no Boughs to a very great Height; the Oaks being so large as to measure two Foot square, and sixty Foot high. There was no Underwood or Bushes among the Timber; but a great deal of this in their Bogs and Morasses, mix'd with long Grass, Flags, and Sedge. They had also Beech, Poplar, Hazel, Eldern, and Willow, with Trees which yield Gums and several sorts of sweet Wood, and Woods used in dying, with Sassafras, Sapparilla, &c.

Among

Virginia.

Fruits.  
Grapes.

Among their Fruits they had Grapes that grew wild, and the *European* Grape comes to great Perfection here, and yet they have never made any Quantities of Wine ; the Reason usually given for which is, that it will not keep.

Cherries.

Cherries are very plentiful, being of three sorts, one of which grows in Bunches like Grapes, another sort is black, and a third is call'd the *Indian* Cherry.

Plumbs.

They have several sorts of Plumbs of their own Growth from the Bigness of a Damson to that of a Pear, the largest much resembling the Taste of an Apricot ; and they have a wild Plumb like our white Plumb ; but *English* Plumbs do not ripen kindly here.

Peaches.

Peaches are very large, and so plentiful that they are given to the Hogs in some Places :

Apples.

And there is no Place where Apples and Pears abound more. They have also the Chinquamine, a Fruit that resembles a Chestnut ; the Macoquez, not unlike an Apple ; the Mattaquesumack, or Fig ; the Mattacocks, a sort of Strawberry ; and the common Figs grow very well here, tho' the Soil is not favourable to Oranges and Lemons. There are a sort of Acorns that yield a sweet Oil, and Quinces are so plentiful that they make a great deal of Liquor as well as Marmalade of them.

*Indian*  
Fruits.  
Figs.Oranges.  
Quinces.

Grass.

Their Grass is long coarse Stuff, of which they scarce ever make Hay ; but their Cattle brouse upon it both Winter and Summer, having very little Fodder besides, except the Leaves of the *Indian* Corn, which are given them very sparingly. Silk-Grass grows here spontaneously, and the Soil is extremely proper for Hemp and Flax ; and yet they have no Manufacture of Silk or Linnen.

Silk-Grass

Flax.

As to their Bread Corn it is of two sorts, *Virg. m.*  
 1. *English* Wheat; and 2. Maiz, or *Indian* Corn. The *English* Wheat, Mr. Clayton *Corn.* observes, generally yields between fifteen and thirty fold Increase, the Ground being only once ploughed, and that without any Dung or Manure; whereas it is esteem'd a good Crop that yields eight fold Increase in *England*, so much more fruitful is the *Virginian* Soil than ours.

The *Indian* Corn is not unlike our Peas in *Indian* Taste, but grows in a great Ear or Head as *Corn.* big as the Handle of a large Horfewhip, having from three hundred to seven hundred Grains in one Ear, and sometimes one Grain produces two or three such Ears or Heads. It is of various Colours, red, white, yellow, blue, green, and black, and some speckled and striped, but the white and yellow are most common. The Stalk is as thick as an ordinary walking Cane, and grows six or eight Foot high in Joints, having a sweet Juice in it, of which a Syrup is sometimes made, and from every Joint there grow long Leaves of the Shape of Sedge Leaves. The Manner of Husbandry planting it is in Holes or Trenches about five or six Feet distant from each other; the Earth is open'd with a Hough (and of late Years with a Plow) four Inches deep, and four or five Grains thrown into each Hole or Trench, about a Span distant from each other, and then cover'd with Earth; they keep it weeding from time to time, and as the Stalk grows high they keep the Mold about it like the Hillocks in a Hop Ground. They begin to plant in *April*, but the chief Plantation is in *May*, and they continue to plant till the middle of *June*. What is planted in *April* is reap'd in *August*, what is planted in *May* is reap'd in *September*,  
 Vol. XXX. B b b



Virginia.

*September*, and the last in *October*. They make both Bread and strong Liquor of it, and several sorts of Dishes, of which Hommony, already mention'd, is the chief.

Soil.

Mr. *Clayton* observ'd, that they had only cultivated their highest and barrenest Lands when he was there, leaving their richest Vales untouch'd, because they understood not any thing of draining; so that the richest Meadow Lands, which are one Third of the Country, are boggy Morasses and Swamps, whereof they make little Advantage, but lose in them abundance of their Cattle, especially at the first of the Spring, when the Cattle are weak and venture too far after young Grass. Whereas a vast Improvement might be made of these Morasses. The Generality of *Virginia* is a sandy Land, with a shallow Soil; so that after they have clear'd a fresh Piece of Ground out of the Woods it will not bear Tobacco past two or three Years, unless Cow-pen'd; for they manure their Ground by keeping their Cattle, as in the South you do your Sheep every Night, confining them in Hurdles, which they remove when they have sufficiently dung'd one Spot of Ground, but they cannot improve much thus: Besides, it produces a strong sort of Tobacco, in which the Smokers say they can plainly taste the Fulsomness of the Dung; therefore every three or four Years they must be for clearing a new Piece of Ground out of the Woods, which requires much Labour and Toil, it being so thick grown all over with massy Timber. Thus their Plantations run over vast Tracts of Ground, each being ambitious to engross as much as he can, that he may be sure to have enough to plant, and for their Stocks and Herds of Cattle to range and feed

Plantations too large and ill managed.

feed in. Plantations of a thousand, two thousand, or three thousand Acres are common, whereby the Country is thinly inhabited, their Living solitary and unsociable, Trading confus'd and dispers'd, besides other Inconveniences. Whereas they might improve two hundred or three hundred Acres to more Advantage, and would make the Country much more healthy; for those that have three thousand Acres have scarce clear'd six hundred Acres thereof, which is peculiarly term'd the Plantation, being surrounded with the two thousand four hundred Acres of Woods; so that there can be no free or even Motion of the Air, but the Air is kept either stagnant, or the lofty sulphureous Particles of the Air, that are higher than the Tops of the Trees, which are above as high again as the Generality of the Woods in *England*, descending when they pass over the clear'd Spots of Ground, must needs in the violent Heat of Summer raise a preternatural Ferment, and produce bad Effects. Nor is it any Advantage to their Stocks or Crops; for did they but drain their Swamps and low Lands, they have a very deep Soil, that would endure planting twenty or thirty Years, and some would scarce ever be worn out; for they might lay them all Winter, or when they pleas'd, in Water; and the Product of their Labour would be double or treble, whether Corn or Tobacco, tho' (when I have discours'd the same to several, and in part shewn them how their particular Grounds might be drain'd at a very easy Rate) they have either been so conceited of their old Way, and so sottish as not to apprehend, or so negligent as not to apply themselves thereto. But on the Plantation where I liv'd, I drain'd a good large

Virginia. Swamp, which fully answer'd Expectation. The Gentlewoman where I liv'd was a very ingenious Lady, who one Day discoursing the Overseer of her Servants about pitching the ensuing Year's Crop, the Overseer was naming one Place where he design'd to plant thirty thousand Plants, another Place for fifteen thousand, another for ten thousand, and so forth; the whole Crop design'd to be about an hundred thousand Plants: Having observ'd the Year before he had done the like, and scatter'd his Crop up and down the Plantation at Places a Mile and a half asunder, which was very inconvenient, and whereby they lost much Time, I interpos'd, and ask'd why they did not plant all their Crop together? The Fellow smil'd, as it were at my Ignorance, and said, There was very good Reason for it. I reply'd that was it I enquir'd after; he returned, The Plantation had been an old planted Plantation, and being but a small Plat of Ground, was almost worn out, so that they had not Ground all together that would bring forth Tobacco. I told him then, that they had better Ground than ever yet they had planted, and more than their Hands could manage. He smil'd again, and asked me where? I then nam'd such a Swamp. He then said scornfully, He thought what a Planter I was; that I understood better how to make a Sermon than manage Tobacco. I reply'd, with some Warmness, tho' I hoped so, that was Impertinence, and no Answer. He then said, That the Tobacco there would drown, and the Roots rot. I reply'd, That the whole Country would drown if the Rivers were stop'd, but it might be laid as dry as any Land on the Plantation. In short, we discoursed it very warmly,

warmly, till he told me, He understood his own Business well enough, and did not desire to learn of me. But the Gentlewoman attended somewhat better to my Reasoning, and got me one Day to go and shew her how I projected the Draining of the Swamp, and thought it so feasible, that she was resolv'd to have it done, and therefore desir'd me I would again discourse her Overseer; which I did several times, but he would by no means hearken thereto, and was so positive, that she was forced to turn him away, and to have her Servants set about the Work: And with three Men in thirteen Days I drain'd the whole Swamp, it being sandy Land, soaks and drains admirably well, and what I little expected, laid a Well dry at a considerable Distance. Now to teach her how she might make her Tobacco that grew in the Swamp less, for it produced so very large that it was suspected to be of the *Aranoko* kind, I told her tho' the Complaint was rare, yet there was an excellent Remedy for that in letting every Plant bear eight or nine Leaves instead of four or five, and she would have more Tobacco and less Leaves. Now you must know they top their Tobacco, that is, take away the little top Bud when the Plant has put forth as many Leaves as they think the Richness of the Ground will bring to a Substance; but generally when it has shot forth four or six Leaves, and when the top Bud is gone, it puts forth no more Leaves, but side Branches, which they call Suckers, which they are careful ever to take away that they may not impoverish the Leaves. I have been more tedious in the Particulars, the fuller to evince how resolute they are, and conceitedly bent

Virginia.

to

Virginia.

to follow their own Practice and Custom rather than to receive Directions from others, tho' plain, easy, and advantageous. There are many other Places as easy to drain as this, tho' of larger Extent, and richer Soil, for some of which I have given Directions, and have only had the Return perhaps of a Flout afterwards. Even in *James Town Island*, which is much of an oval Figure, there is a Swamp runs diagonal-wise over the Island, whereby are lost at least one hundred and fifty Acres of Land, which would be Meadow, and turn to as good Account as if it were in *England*: Besides, it is the great Annoyance of the Town, and no doubt but makes it much more unhealthy. If therefore they but scour'd the Channel, made a pretty ordinary Trench all along the middle of the Swamp, and placed a Sluce at the Mouth where it opens into the back Creek, for the Mouth of the Channel there is narrow, has a good hard Bottom, and is not past two Yards deep when the Flood is out, as if Nature had design'd it before-hand, they might thus drain all the Swamp absolutely dry, or lay it under Water at their pleasure.

But now to turn to the Reflections of improving and manuring of Land in *Virginia*. Hitherto, as I have said, they have used none but that of Cow-penning, yet I suppose they might find very good Marle in many Places. I have seen both the red and blue Marle at some Breaks of Hills. This would be the properest Manure for their sandy Land, if they spread it not too thick, theirs being, as I have said, a shallow sandy Soil, which was the Reason I never advis'd any to use Lime, tho' they have very good Lime of Oyster-Shells,

Shells, but that's the properest Manure for cold Clay Land, and not for a sandy Soil. But as most Lands have one Swamp or another bordering on them, they may certainly get admirable Slitch wherewith to manure all their Up-lands: But this, say they, will not improve Ground, but clods and grows hard. 'Tis true it will do so for some time, a Year or two at the first; but did they cast it in Heaps, and let it lie for two or three Years, after a Frost or two had seiz'd it, and it had been well pierced therewith, I doubt not but it would turn to good Account.

They neither house nor milk any of their Cows in Winter, having a Notion that it would kill them; yet I persuaded the aforementioned Lady where I liv'd, to milk four Cows the last Winter that I staid in the Country, whereof she found so good Effect, that she assur'd me she would keep to my Advice for the future; and also, as I had further urged, house them too, for which they have mighty Conveniences, their Tobacco-Houses being empty ever at that Time of the Year, and may easily be fitted in two or three Days time, without any Prejudice, whereby their Cattle would be much shelter'd from those pinching sharp Frosts that some Nights on a sudden become very severe. I had another Project (for the Preservation of their Cattle prov'd very successful) I urged the Lady to sow her Wheat as early as possible she could, so that before Winter it might be well rooted, to be early and flourishing at the first of the Spring; so that she might turn thereon her weak Cattle, and such as should at any time be swamp'd, whereby they might be recruited and sav'd, and it would do the Wheat good also.

Virginia.

also. I advis'd her likewise to save and carefully gather her *Indian* Corn Tops and Blades, and all her Straw, and whatever else could be made Fodder for her Cattle ; for they get no Hay, tho' I was urging that too, and to sow Saint-foin ; for being a sandy Soil, I am confident it would turn to very good Account. They have little or no Grass in Winter, so that their Cattle are pin'd and starv'd, and many that are brought low and weak when the Spring begins venture too far into the Swamps after the fresh Grass, where they perish ; so that some Persons lose ten, twenty, or thirty Head of Cattle in a Year.

Husbandry of Tobacco.

But as it is the Excellence of the *Virginian* Tobacco which distinguishes this from all Countries, it is fit I should give some further Account of their Management in the Husbandry and Curing of this Plant, which they have brought to that Perfection.


The Tobacco Seeds are first sown in Beds, where having remain'd a Month, the Plants are transplanted into little Hillocks, like those in our Hop Grounds, the first rainy Weather : And being grown a Foot high there, within the Space of another Month they top them and prune off all the bottom Leaves, leaving only seven or eight on the Stalks, that they may be the better fed, and these Leaves in six Weeks time will be in their full Growth. The Planters prune off the Suckers, and clear them of the Horn-Worm twice a Week, which is call'd Worming and Suckering, and this Work lasts three Weeks or a Month, by which time the Leaf from green begins to turn brownish, and to spot and thicken, which is a Sign of its ripening. As fast as the Plants ripen they cut them down, and leave them in the

the Field for half a Day, then heap them up <sup>Virginia.</sup> and let them lie and sweat a Night, and the next Day carry them to the Tobacco-House, where every Plant is hang'd up at a convenient Distance from each other, for about a Month or five Weeks; at the End of which Time, they strike or take them down in moist Weather when the Leaf gives, or else it will crumble to Dust; after which they are laid upon Sticks, and cover'd up close in the Tobacco-House for a Week or a Fortnight to sweat, and then opening the Bulk in a wet Day the Servants strip them and sort them, the top Leaves being the best, and the bottom the worst Tobacco. The last Work is to pack it in Hogheads, or bundle it up, which is also done in a wet Season; for in the Curing Tobacco, wet Seasons are as necessary as dry to make the Leaf pliant.

To this Account of the *Virginia* Soil and <sup>Colonel</sup> Vegetables, I shall here add <sup>Beverley's</sup> Colonel *Beverley's* <sup>Account</sup> Observations on the same Subject. <sup>of the</sup>

The Soil (says this Gentleman) is of such <sup>Soil and</sup> Variety, according to the Difference of Situation, that one Part or other of it seems fitted <sup>Vegeta-</sup> to every sort of Plant that is requisite either for the Benefit or Pleasure of Mankind. And were it not for the high Mountains on the North-West, which are suppos'd to retain vast Magazines of Snow, and by that Means cause the Wind from that Quarter to descend a little too cold upon them, 'tis believ'd that many of those delicious Summer Fruits, growing in the hotter Climates, might be kept there green all the Winter without the Charge of Housing, or any other Care than what is due to the natural Plants of the Country when transplanted into a Garden: But as that would be no con-



Virginia.  siderable Charge, any Man that is curious might-with all the Ease imaginable preserve as many of them as would gratify a moderate Luxury ; and the Summer affords genial Heat enough to ripen them to Perfection.

Various  
Soils.

There are three different kinds of Land, according to the Difference of Situation, either in the lower Parts of the Country, the Middle, or that on the Heads of the Rivers.

I. The Lands towards the Mouths of the Rivers are generally of a low, moist, and fat Mold, such as the heavier sort of Grain delights in, as Rice, Hemp, *Indian Corn*, &c. This also is varied here and there with Veins of a cold, hungry, sandy Soil of the same Moisture, and very often lying under Water. But this also has its Advantages, for on such Land generally grow the Huckle-berries, Cran-berries, Chinkapins, &c. These low Lands are for the most part well stor'd with Oaks, Poplars, Pines, Cedars, Cypress, and sweet Gums, the Trunks of which are often thirty, forty, fifty, some sixty or seventy Foot high, without a Branch or Limb. They likewise produce a great Variety of Ever-greens, unknown to me by Name, besides the beauteous Holly, sweet Mirtle, Cedar, and the live Oak, which for three quarters of a Year is continually dropping its Acorns, and at the same time budding and bearing others in their stead.

Springs,  
&c.

The Land higher up the Rivers throughout the whole Country is generally a level Ground, with shallow Vallies full of Streams and pleasant Springs of clear Water, having interspers'd here and there among the large Levels some small Hills and extensive Vales. The Mold, in some Places, is black, fat, and thick laid, in others looser, lighter and thin. The Foundation

dation of the Mold is also various, sometimes <sup>Virginia.</sup> Clay, then Gravel and rocky Stone, and sometimes Marle. The Middle of the Necks or Ridges between the Rivers is generally poor, being either a light Sand, or a white or red Clay with a thin Mold; yet even these Places are stor'd with Chesnuts, Chinkapins, Acorns of the shrub Oak, and a reedy Grass in Summer, very good for Cattle. The rich Lands lie next the Rivers and Branches, and are stor'd with large Oaks, Walnuts, Hickories, Ash, Beech, Poplar, and many other sorts of Timber of surprising Bigness.

The Heads of the Rivers afford a Mixture <sup>The Up-</sup> of Hills, Vallies, and Plains, and some richer <sup>lands.</sup> than other, whereof the Fruits and Timber Trees are also various. In some Places lie great Plats of low and very rich Ground, in others large Spots of Meadows and Savanna's, wherein are hundreds of Acres without any Tree at all, but yield Reeds and Grass of incredible Height: And in the Swamps and funken Grounds grow Trees as vastly big as I believe the World affords, and stand so close together, that the Branches or Boughs of many of them lock into one another; but what lessens their Value is that the greatest Bulk of them are at some Distance from Water Carriage. The Land of these upper Parts affords greater Variety of Soil than any other, and as great Variety in the Foundations of the Soil or Mold, of which good Judgment may be made by the Plants and Herbs that grow upon it. The Rivers and Creeks do in many Places form very fine large Marshes, which are convenient Supports for their Flocks and Herds.

Of spontaneous Flowers they have an un- <sup>known</sup> known Variety; the finest Crown Imperial in

*Virginia.* the World; the Cardinal Flower, so much extoll'd for its scarlet Colour, is almost in every Branch; the Moccasin Flower, and a thousand others not yet known to *English* Herbalists. Almost all the Year round the Levels and Vales are beautify'd with Flowers of one kind or other, which make their Woods as fragrant as a Garden.

There is also found the fine Tulip-bearing Laurel-Tree, which has the pleasantest Smell in the World, and keeps blossoming and seeding several Months together; it delights much in gravelly Branches of Chrystal Streams, and perfumes the very Woods with its Odour. So also do the large Tulip-Tree, which we call a Poplar; the Locust, which resembles much the Jessamine, and the Perfuming Crab-Tree, during their Season.

*Kitchen Gardens.*

A Kitchen Garden don't thrive better or faster in any Part of the Universe than there. They have all the culinary Plants that grow in *England*, and in greater Perfection than in *England*. Besides these, they have several Roots, Herbs, Vine-fruits, and Salad-flowers peculiar to themselves, most of which will neither increase nor grow to Perfection in *England*: These they dress up various Ways, and find them very delicious Sauce to their Meats both roast and boil'd, fresh and salt; such are the *Indian* Cresses, Red-buds, Saffras-flowers, Cymnells, Melons, and Potatoes.

*Apples.*

You may raise Apples from the Seed, which never degenerate into Crabs there, but produce as good, or perhaps better Fruit than the Mother Tree (which is not so in *England*) and are wonderfully improv'd by grafting and managing; yet there are very few Planters that

that graft at all, and much fewer that take <sup>Virginia.</sup> any care to get choice Fruits.

The Fruit-Trees are wonderfully quick of Cyder. Growth, so that in six or seven Years time from the Planting a Man may bring an Orchard to bear in great Plenty, from which he may make store of good Cyder, or distill great Quantities of Brandy, for the Cyder is very strong and yields abundance of Spirit; yet they have very few that take any care at all for an Orchard; nay, many that have good Orchards are so negligent of them as to let them go to ruin, and expose the Trees to be torn and bark'd by the Cattle.

Peaches, Nectarines, and Apricots, as well <sup>Peaches,</sup> as Plums and Cherries, grow there upon <sup>&c.</sup> standard Trees. They commonly bear in three Years from the Stone, and thrive so exceedingly that they seem to have no need of grafting or inoculating, if any body would be so good a Husband. And truly I never heard of any that did graft either Plum, Nectarine, Peach, or Apricot in that Country till very lately.

Peaches and Nectarines I believe to be spontaneous somewhere or other on that Continent, for the *Indians* have and ever had greater Variety and finer sorts of them than the *English*. The best sort of these cling to the Stone, and will not come off clear, which they call Plum-Nectarines and Plum-Peaches, or Cling-stones. Some of these are twelve or thirteen Inches in the Girt. These sorts of Fruits are raised so easily there that some good Husbands plant great Orchards of them purposely for their Hogs, and others make a Drink of them, which they call Mobby, and either drink it as Cyder, or Mobby.  
distill

Virginia. distill it off for Brandy. This makes the best Spirit next to Grapes.

Grapes. Grape Vines of the *English* Stock as well as those of their own Production bear most abundantly if they are suffer'd to run near the Ground, and increase very kindly by Slipping, yet very few have them at all in their Gardens, much less endeavour to improve them by Cutting and Laying. But lately some Vineyards have been attempted, and one is brought to Perfection, yielding seven hundred and fifty Gallons a Year. The Wine drinks at present greenish, but the Owner doubts not of good Wine in a Year or two more, and takes great Delight that way.

When a single Tree happens in clearing the Ground to be left standing with a Vine upon it, open to the Sun and Air, that Vine generally produces as much as four or five others that remain in the Woods. I have seen in this Case more Grapes upon one single Vine than would load a *London* Cart. And for all this the People, till of late, never remov'd any of them into their Gardens, but contented themselves, throughout the whole Country, with the Grapes they found thus wild.

Flowers. A Garden is no where sooner made than there, either for Fruits or Flowers. Tulips from the Seed flower the second Year. All sorts of Herbs have there a Perfection in their Flavour beyond what I ever tasted in a more Northern Climate: And yet they have not many Gardens in that Country fit to bear the Name of Gardens.

Corn. All sorts of *English* Grain thrive and increase there as well as in any other Part of the World; as for Example, Wheat, Barley, Oates, Rye, Peas, Rape, &c. And yet they

## of VIRGINIA.

391

they don't make a Trade of any of them. <sup>Virginia.</sup> Their Peas indeed are troubled with Wivels, which eat a Hole in them; but this Hole does neither damage the Seed nor make the Peas unfit for Boiling: And such as are sow'd late, and gather'd after *August*, are clear of that Inconvenience.

Rice has been try'd there, and is found to Rice. grow as well as in *Carolina*; but it labours under the same Inconvenience, the Want of a Community to husk and clean it, and after all to take it off the Planters Hands.

Flax, Hemp, Cotton, and Silk-worms <sup>Flax.</sup> have thriven there formerly, when Encouragement was given for making Linnen, Silk, &c. But now all Encouragement of such Things is taken away, or entirely dropt by the Assemblies; and such Manufactures are always neglected when Tobacco bears any thing of a Price.

Silk-grafs is there spontaneous in many <sup>Silk-grafs.</sup> Places. I need not mention what Advantage may be made of so useful a Plant, whose Fibres are as fine as Flax, and much stronger than Hemp.

The Woods produce great Variety of In- <sup>Gums.</sup> cense and sweet Gums which distill from several Trees; as also Trees bearing Honey <sup>Sugar-</sup> and Sugar; but there is no Use made of any <sup>Trees.</sup> of them, either for Profit or Refreshment.

All sorts of naval Stores may be produced <sup>Naval</sup> there, as Pitch, Tarr, Rosin, Turpentine, <sup>Stores.</sup> Plank-timber, and all sorts of Mafts and Yards, besides Sails, Cordage, and Iron; and all these may be transported by an easy Water Carriage.



## C H A P. VI.

*The History of Virginia.*

Virginia.

History.

Virginia  
discover'd  
by Cabot.

THE North-East Part of the Continent of *America* was first discover'd, as has been observ'd already, by *Sebastian Cabot*, a Native of *Bristol*. He was the Son of *John Cabot*, a *Genese* or *Venetian* Pilot, who resided in that City, and had made a great many Voyages in the Service of the Court of *England*, or of *English* Merchants, and gain'd a mighty Reputation for his Skill in maritime Affairs, which induc'd King *Henry VII.* to employ him, in the Year 1497, to find out a North-West Passage to *China*; which tho' *Cabot* was not so fortunate to accomplish, yet he discover'd all the North-East Coast of *America*, from Cape *Florida* in 25 Degrees North Latitude to 67 and an half, from whence *England* claim'd a Right to that Country prior to the *Spaniards* or any other *European* Power: And the Reason no Attempt was made to plant or send Colonies to *North-America* for a considerable time, *Cabot* himself informs us, was the Wars that happen'd immediately after. See *Hackluit's Collection of Voyages*, Vol. III. p. 6 and 7.

It seems strange, however, that neither in the Reign of *Henry VII.* or in that of his Son, *Henry VIII.* or in the Reign of *Edward VI.*

or

or Queen *Mary*, nor till the latter End of the Reign of Queen *Elizabeth*, which was near an hundred Years after this Discovery of *Cabot's*, the *English* should endeavour to make any Settlements in this Country ; but I presume we were diverted from it for some time by our Wars with *Scotland* or *France*, as *Cabot* intimates, and afterwards by the various Changes that were made in Religion, which engag'd our whole Attention at home, till the Protestant Religion was establish'd here by Queen *Elizabeth*: And when this was effected, she was engag'd in supporting the Protestants of *France*, the *Low-Countries*, and *Scotland*, against the Popish Powers ; so that it was late in her Reign before she was at leisure to cast her Eyes upon *North-America*.

Virginia.  
No Colonies sent thither till 100 Years afterwards

In the meantime the *Spaniards* from *Mexico* invaded *Florida*, and made themselves Masters of that Part of it which lies upon the Gulph of *Mexico*, as far as the *Atlantick Ocean*. The *French* also made some Attempts to settle themselves near Cape *Florida*, but were driven from thence by the *Spaniards*, who notwithstanding abandon'd this Country themselves for many Years, except the South-West Part of it, which they retain'd on account of its Silver Mines, giving it the Name of *New-Mexico*: For the *Spaniards* seem'd to slight every Country in *America* how fruitful soever, that did not produce Gold or Silver ; and this I presume was the Reason that it remain'd in a manner deserted for so many Years, and might have remain'd so much longer if Queen *Elizabeth* had not at length observ'd, that the most effectual Way to distress the *Spaniards* was to interrupt their Trade with *America*, and in-



Virginia. tercept the Galleons that annually brought  
 their Plate from thence.

Mr. Raleigh first attempted to fix Colonies there. This induced her to fit out several Squadrons of Men of War under the Command of *Drake*, *Hawkins*, *Raleigh*, and other brave Sea Commanders, to cruize on the Coast of *North-America*, and surprize their Ports and Shipping there; in which Expeditions the *English* became well acquainted with this fruitful and beautiful Country of *Florida*: And Mr. *Raleigh* being inform'd there were Gold Mines in it, obtain'd a Patent or Grant from Queen *Elizabeth*, in the Year 1584, of all such Parts of it as he should discover and plant from 33 to 40 Degrees North Latitude: And because this was the first Patent that ever was granted to any *Englishman*, authorizing him to send Colonies to the Continent of *America*, and will furnish us with abundant Matter for our Reflections as to the Justice and Expedience of possessing ourselves of that Country, I shall here give an Abstract of it.

Mr. Raleigh's Patent to send Colonies to America. " *ELIZABETH*, by the Grace of  
 " GOD, of *England*, *France*, and *Ireland*,  
 " Queen, Defender of the Faith, &c. To  
 " all People to whom these Presents shall  
 " come, greeting. Know ye, that of our  
 " special Grace and mere Motion, we have  
 " given and granted, and by these Presents,  
 " for us, our Heirs and Successors, do give  
 " and grant to our trusty and well-beloved  
 " *Walter Raleigh*, Esq; and to his Heirs and  
 " Assignes for ever, free Liberty at all times,  
 " for ever hereafter, to discover and view  
 " such remote *beathen and barbarous Lands*  
 " *and Territories not actually possess'd of any*  
 " *Christian Prince, or inhabited by Christian*  
 " *People*, as to him or them shall seem good:  
 " And

“ And the same to have, hold, occupy and enjoy to him, his Heirs and Assignes, for ever, with all Prerogatives, Jurisdicktions, Royalties, Privileges, and Franchises thereunto belonging by Sea or Land : And the said *Walter Ralegh*, his Heirs and Assignes, are hereby impower’d to build and fortify on such Lands, &c. at their Discretion, any Statute against the departing or remaining out of the Realm, or any other Statutes to the contrary notwithstanding.

Virginia.  
The Dominion of all heathen Countries granted him, not posses’d by Christians.

“ And we do likewise impower the said *Walter Ralegh*, his Heirs and Assignes, to take and lead in the said Voyage, or to inhabit there as many of our Subjects as shall willingly accompany him or them, with sufficient Shipping and Necessaries for their Transportation. So that they be not restrain’d by us, or our Successors.

“ And further, the said *Walter Ralegh*, his Heirs and Assignes, shall hold, occupy, and enjoy all such Lands and Countries so to be discover’d and posses’d, and the Cities, Towns, Castles, and Villages in the same, with the Royalties, Franchises, and Jurisdicktions thereof, with full Power to dispose of them in Fee simple, or otherwise, to any of our Subjects, *reserving to us, our Heirs and Successors, the fifth Part of all the Gold and Silver Ore that shall be acquir’d or gotten in such Countries* : And the same shall be holden of us, our Heirs and Successors by Homage, and the Payment of the said fifth Part in lieu of all Services.

Rendering a Fifth of the Gold in lieu of all Services to the Crown.

“ And moreover, We do by these Presents grant, that the said *Walter Ralegh*, his Heirs and Assignes, may encounter,  
D d d 2 “ expulse,

Virginia.

“ expulse, and resist all such Persons as shall,  
 “ without his or their Licence, attempt to  
 “ inhabit in the said Countries, or within two  
 “ hundred Leagues of the Places where they  
 “ shall abide or fix themselves, *within the*  
 “ *Space of six Years next ensuing*; or who  
 “ shall attempt to annoy him or them by Sea  
 “ or Land, empowering the said *Walter*  
 “ *Raleigh*, his Heirs and Assignes, to take  
 “ and surprize all such Persons, with their  
 “ Ships, Vessels, Goods, and Furniture, as  
 “ without their Licence shall be found traf-  
 “ ficking in any Harbour, within the Limits  
 “ aforesaid, and to detain and possess them  
 “ as lawful Prize.

“ And we do further grant to the said *Wal-*  
 “ *ter Raleigh*, his Heirs and Assignes, full  
 “ Power and Authority to correct, punish,  
 “ pardon, and govern, as well in Cases capital  
 “ as criminal and civil, all such of our Sub-  
 “ jects as shall adventure themselves in the  
 “ said Voyages, or inhabit such Lands or  
 “ Countries, according to such Laws and  
 “ Statutes as shall be establish’d by him and  
 “ them for the better Government of the said  
 “ People, so as such Laws be as agreeable to  
 “ the Laws of *England* as may be, and be  
 “ not contrary to the Christian Faith profess’d  
 “ in the Church of *England*, and so as the  
 “ said People remain subject to the Crown  
 “ of *England*.

“ Witness Ourself at *Westminster*, 25 March  
 “ in the twenty-sixth Year of the Queen,  
 “ Anno 1584.

While this Commission was preparing, Mr.  
*Raleigh* formed a Society among his Friends  
 and Acquaintance, who contributed large Sums,  
 and provided two Ships to go upon this  
 Discovery,

Discovery, with all manner of Neecessaries for such an Enterprize: The Command of which being given to Captain *Philip Amidas* and Captain *Arthur Barlow*, they set sail from the West of *England* on the 27th of *April* 1584, and the 10th of *May* arriv'd at the *Canaries*, from whence they bent their Course to the *Caribbee Islands*, which they made on the 10th of *June*, keeping a more Southerly Course than they need to have done, as they themselves observ'd afterwards, apprehending that the Current sat so strong to the Northward on the Coast of *Florida* or *Virginia*, that there was no stemming it; and that Mistake made them go two or three thousand Miles out of their Way: However, they arriv'd at the Island of *Wokokon*, near the Coast of *Virginia*, or rather of *North-Carolina* (of which this Country is now reckon'd a Part) and took possession thereof in the Name of Queen *Elizabeth*, whom they proclaim'd rightful Queen and Sovereign of the same, to the Use of Mr. *Raleigh*, according to her Majesty's Grant. But they soon discover'd it to be but an Island of twenty Miles in Length, and six in Breadth, and lying in 34 Degrees odd Minutes North Latitude; the Land producing Cedars, Cypress, Pines, and vast Quantities of Grapes; nor was there any Want of Deer, Hares, Rabbets, and wild Fowl.

After they had continu'd here three Days, an *Indian* came on Board them, and was entertain'd in the Ship, after which he catch'd some Fish and presented to the *English*; and the next Day *Granganimo*, the Brother of *Wingina*, King of *Wingandacoe* (as the neighbouring Continent was call'd) came down with forty or fifty of his People to the Sea-side.

Whereupon

Virginia.  
Two Ships  
sent to  
Virginia.

They arrive at  
the Island  
of Wokokon

Virginia.



Whereupon several *English* Officers went over to him, and were invited to sit down with him on the Mats that were spread for that Purpose, the Prince striking his Head and his Breast, and making a great many Signs to signify they were heartily welcome, as they apprehended. Whereupon they made him some small Presents, as they did to four of his People, who sat on the lower End of the same Mat ; but the Prince took away the Things from his Men, intimating that they were his Servants, and that all Presents were to be made to him: And having taken Leave of the *English*, he return'd with more of his People two Days after, bringing Deer-Skins, Buff, and other Peltry to trade with them. Whereupon they shew'd *Granganimo* all their Merchandize, of which nothing pleas'd him so much as a bright Pewter Dish: He took it up, clap'd it upon his Breast, and having made a Hole in the Brim, hung it about his Neck, intimating it would be a good Shield against his Enemies Arrows. This Pewter Dish they exchange'd for twenty Skins, worth twenty Nobles, and a Copper Kettle for fifty Skins, worth as many Crowns. They offer'd also a very advantageous Exchange for their Axes, Hatchets, and Knives, and would have given any thing for their Swords, but the *English* would not part with them.

They traf-  
fick with  
the *Indians*

Mutual  
Civilities.

Two or three Days after, the King's Brother came on Board their Ships, and eat and drank with them, and seem'd to relish their Wine and Food very well; and some few Days after he brought his Wife and Daughter and several more of his Children with him. His Wife had good Features, but was not tall; she appear'd exceeding modest, and had a Cloak or Mantle of a Skin with the Furr next to  
Boys,

Body, and another Piece of a Skin before her. *Virginia.*  
 About her Head she had a Coronet of white Coral, and in her Ears Pendants of Pearls about as big as Peas, hanging down to her Middle, and she had Bracelets on her Arms. Her Husband also wore a Coronet or Band of white Coral about his Head sometimes, but usually a Coronet of Copper, or some other shining Metal; which at first our Adventurers imagin'd to be Gold, but were mistaken. His Hair was cut short, but his Wife's was long. The rest of his Habit was like his Wife's. The other Women of the better Sort, and the Prince's Children, had several Pendants of shining Copper in their Ears. The Complexion of the People in general being tawny and their Hair black. The Prince's Wife was usually attended by forty or fifty Women to the Sea-side; but when she came on Board (as she did often) she left them on Shore, and brought only two or three with her.

The King's Brother, they observ'd, was very just to his Engagements; for they frequently deliver'd him Merchandize upon his Word, and he ever came within the Day and deliver'd what he had promis'd for them. He sent them also every Day, as a Present, a Brace of Bucks, with Hares, Rabbits, and Fish the best in the World, together with several sorts of Fruits, such as Melons, Walnuts, Cucumbers, Gourds, Peas, and several kinds of Roots, as also Maiz, or *Indian Corn*.

Afterwards seven or eight of the *English* Officers went in their Boat up the River *Occam*, twenty Miles to the Northward, and came to an Island call'd *Roanoak*, where they were hospitably entertain'd by *Granganimo's* Wife

Virginia.

Wife in his Absence. She press'd them to stay on Shore all Night, and when they refus'd she was much concern'd they should be apprehensive of any Danger, and sent the Provision on Board their Boat which she had provided for their Supper, with Mats for them to lie upon: And the Captain who wrote this Relation, it seems, was of opinion they might safely have continu'd on Shore; *for a more kind and loving People he thought there could not be in the World*, as he express'd himself.

The Virginians an inoffensive hospitable People.

These *Indians* having never seen any *Europeans* before, were mightily taken with the Whiteness of their Skins, and took it as a great Favour if an *Englishman* would permit any of them to touch his Breast. They were amaz'd also at the Magnitude and Structure of their Ships, and at the Firing of a Musket they trembled, having never seen any Fire-Arms before.

The English return home.

The *English* continu'd to trade with the *Indians* till they had disposed of all the Goods they had brought, and loaded their Ships with Skins, Sassafras and Cedar. They procur'd also some Pearls from them, and a little Tobacco, which they found the *Indians* very fond of. After which they parted with this People in a very friendly Manner, and return'd home to *England*, taking with them *Manréo* and *Wanchese*, two *Indians*, who appear'd desirous to embark for *England* with them; and having made a very profitable Voyage, they gave Mr. *Raleigh* and the rest of their Employers such a glorious Account of the Country as made them impatient till they had provided Ships for another Voyage. The Tobacco the Captains *Amidas* and *Barlow* brought home with them in this Voyage was the

the first that had been seen in *England*, and was soon cry'd up as a most valuable Plant, and a soveraign Remedy for almost every Malady. But to proceed.

Mr. *Ralegh* and his Friends having fitted out a Fleet consisting of seven Ships, and given the Command of it to Sir *Edward Greene-vile*, they set sail from *Plymouth*, on the 9th of *April* 1585, and made the *Canary Islands* on the 14th of the same Month, from whence they steer'd to the *Antilles*, which they made the 7th of *May*, and on the 12th came to an Anchor at the Island of *Porto Rico*, where they put their Men on Shore and took in fresh Water and Provisions ; and setting sail again on the 29th of *May* they arriv'd at the Island of *Wokokon* on the 26th of *June*, where the Admiral's Ship was cast away going into the Harbour, but himself and the Crew saved.

Virginia.

A second Voyage by Sir Edward Greenville.

They arrive at Wokokon.


The Admiral with several of his Officers, attended with a good Guard, went over to the Continent on the 11th of *July*, and came to the Town of *Secotan*, where they were hospitably entertain'd by the Natives ; but some pilfering *Indian* having stol'n a Silver Cup from the *English*, which the Natives promis'd to restore and neglected to do it, the Admiral, in his Return, plunder'd one of their Towns and burnt it, with all the Corn growing in their Fields ; at which the Country being incens'd, the Admiral set sail from the Island of *Wokokon* on the 21st of *July*, and arriv'd at Cape *Hatteras*, where *Granganimo*, Brother to King *Wingina*, came on Board the Fleet, and had a friendly Conference with the Admiral ; after which the *English* landed on the Island of *Roanoak*, in the Mouth of *Albermarle* River. Here the Fleet remained about six

Make Discoveries on the Continent.

Burn an Indian Town.

Sail to the Island of Roanoak.



Virginia.  Weeks, during which Time Sir *Richard Greenville* took a View of the neighbouring Continent again, and made Experiments of the Goodness of the Soil by several sorts of Grain he sow'd, which came up very kindly during his Stay there: And on the 25th of *August* he set sail for *England*, leaving one hundred and eight Men upon the Island of *Roanoak*, under the Command of Captain *Ralph Lane*, with Directions to make further Discoveries, promising them such Supplies and Re-inforcements as might enable them to subdue the neighbouring Continent.

A Colony of an hundred and eight Men left there.

Sir *Edward Greenville* returns to *England*. The *English* make Discoveries to the Northward.

Propose the doing the same to the Westward, which alarms the *Indians*.

Sir *Edward Greenville* was no sooner sail'd for *England* but Mr. *Lane* made Preparations with his Boats (for I don't perceive one Ship was left him) to discover the Continent to the North and West; and to the North he view'd the Coast from the Island of *Roanoak* almost to *Cape Henry*, at the Entrance of the Bay of *Chesapeake*, being about an hundred and forty Miles, in which he met with no Opposition from the Natives; but afterwards communicating his Design of making a Discovery as far to the Westward up the River *Morotock*, or *Albermarle*, to his Friend King *Wingina*, the Sovereign of the opposite Continent, that Prince was alarmed and gave notice to the neighbouring Princes, his Allies, to be upon their guard; for the *English* intended nothing less, as he conceiv'd, than to make an entire Conquest of their Country, and to extirpate the Inhabitants, or to make them Slaves; and Orders were immediately dispatch'd through the whole Country to carry off or destroy all their Corn and Provisions, and to retire from the Banks of the River *Morotock* with their

their Wives and Families, that the *English* <sup>Virginia.</sup> might find no Subsistence.

However, King *Wingina*, or *Pamispán*, as <sup>A Con-</sup> he is sometimes call'd, still pretended great <sup>federacy</sup> Friendship for the *English*, and promis'd Mr. <sup>form'd</sup> *Lane* to furnish him with Guides in this Expe- <sup>against the</sup> dition; and to incite him to undertake it told <sup>Colony.</sup> him, there were great Quantities of Gold to be found towards the Head of the River *Morotock*, about thirty or forty Days Journey to the Westward, and that some few Days March beyond the Head of that River, they would arrive at a great Ocean; for as the *English* had made *Wingina* acquainted with their intended Expedition, weakly imagining they should be supported in the Enterprize by his Advice and Assistance, the penetrating *Indian* discerning that the principal Views of the *English* were to rob them of their Treasures, to make a Conquest of the Country, and find a Passage to some Ocean they apprehended lay West of *Virginia*, encourag'd Captain *Lane* to believe that their Expectations would not be disappointed, but that they would find Gold or some Mineral like it in their Mountains, and arrive at the Ocean they mentioned within the Space of forty Days, where they would meet with Pearls of an uncommon Size; for he propos'd by such Representations to draw the *English* far up the River into the inland Country, where they would run a great Hazard of being famish'd before they could get back to *Roanoak*; their Fire-Arms being such a Terror to the *Indian* Princes, that they despaired of overcoming these Invaders but by some such Stratagem.

Mr. *Lane* not imagining King *Wingina*, his *Indian* Friend, had Sagacity enough to

Virginia.

discover the Bottom of his Designs, but still had the same Friendship for the *English* he had hitherto profess'd, enter'd upon the Expedition to the Westward with the Guides *Wingina* had lent him ; and not doubting but he should be able to purchase Corn and Flesh of the Natives who inhabited the Banks of the River *Morotock*, he took little Provision with him ; but to his great Surprize he found the whole Country abandon'd, and that there was no Food to be met with : And as he advanced he observed the Natives made Fires to give Notice of his Approach, and fled with all their Effects. So that our Adventurers, after they had rowed four Days up the River, were reduc'd to great

The Country destroy'd and abandon'd by the Natives.

The Party sent on the Discovery in danger of being starved.

A second Conspiracy against them.

Straits, having nothing left to subsist on but the Flesh of two Mastiff Dogs they kill'd. Whereupon they hastened to the Mouth of the River again, to which they were by good Fortune carry'd down in much less Time than they went up, and arriv'd at the Island of *Roanoak* on *Easter-day*, 1586, where they found *Wingina* and his *Indians*, who still made great Professions of Friendship for the *English*, but immediately entered into another Conspiracy with their Allies to destroy them : And the first Step *Wingina* took towards it was to prohibit the Natives to furnish the *English* with Provisions ; for Want of which he was sensible they must divide themselves into several Parties to procure Food by Hunting and Fishing. Then he appointed a general Rendezvous of the *Indians* near the Coast, ordering them on the 10th of *June*, in the Night-time, to embark in their Canoes and make a Descent on the Island of *Roanoak* ; at which Instant he promised them to set fire to the Huts of the *English*, and as they would be reduc'd to a small

small Number by their sending Detachments <sup>Virginia.</sup> to the neighbouring Islands in search of Food, he did not doubt but the Natives would be able to knock those on the Head who remain'd at *Roanoak*, when they should run out of their Houses naked and unarm'd to avoid the Flames. But this Conspiracy being discover'd to Captain *Lane* by *Skyco*, the Son of *Menatonon*, an Indian Prince, with whom Captain *Lane* had contracted an intimate Friendship, the Captain resolv'd to be before-hand with *Wingina*, and on the last of *May* surpris'd him with several more of the *Indian* Chiefs and cut them in Pieces. And on the 8th of *June* following, Sir *Francis Drake* arriv'd on the Coast with a <sup>Admiral</sup> Fleet of Men of War under his Command, <sup>Drake arrives at</sup> which had been employ'd in attacking and <sup>Roanoak.</sup> plundering the *Spanish* Towns and Harbours in *North-America*.

The Admiral being directed to give the Colony at *Roanoak* all the Assistance he could, agreed to leave with them a Ship and some Men and Provisions, to enable them to make further Discoveries on the Continent ; but understanding in what ill Terms they were with the Natives, and that it would be impossible to establish a Colony there without a much greater Force now the *Indians* were become their Enemies, he order'd them to return to *England* the following *August*, which was no sooner agreed on than there arose a Storm, in which the whole Fleet was in danger of Shipwreck, and the Ship and Provisions the Admiral had given them was driven out to Sea and lost. Whereupon he thought fit to take Mr. <sup>Takes</sup> *Lane* and his Company to *England* with him ; <sup>up the</sup> and thus ended the first Attempt of Mr. <sup>Colony</sup> *Ra-* <sup>and carries</sup> *legb* to settle a Colony on the *American* Coast. <sup>them</sup> It home.

Virginia.

A Ship  
with Pro-  
visions  
arrives.

It was but a very few Days after Sir *Francis Drake* had carry'd away Captain *Lane* and his Company from the Island of *Roanoak*, before a Ship arriv'd with Men, Ammunition, and Provisions for the Colony ; but not finding any *European* there or in the adjacent Islands or Continent, they concluded the Colony had been destroy'd, and return'd to *England*.

Sir *Ed-  
ward  
Green-  
vile*  
arrives  
with three  
Ships.

Leaves  
fifteen Men  
at *Roanoak*.

About a Fortnight after the last Ship had left the Island of *Roanoak*, Sir *Edward Greenville* arriv'd there with three Ships, and a much more ample Supply of Ammunition and Provisions, and made all the Enquiry he was able after the Colony, but could hear nothing of them ; however, he left fifteen Men, with Ammunition and Provision for two Years, and return'd to *England*.

Another  
Colony of  
150 Men  
sent to  
*Roanoak*  
under  
Captain  
*White*.

In the Beginning of the Year 1587, Sir *Walter Raleigh* fitted out three Ships more, on Board of which he put one hundred and fifty Men, besides Mariners, giving the Command of them to Captain *John White*, whom he appointed Governor, but added twelve Assistants, incorporating them by the Name of *The Governor and Assistants of the City of Raleigh in Virginia*. This little Squadron set sail from *Pertsmouth* on the 28th of *April*, 1587, and the 19th of *June* following made the *Caribbee Islands*, landing the Planters at the Island of *Santa Cruz* to refresh them and take in fresh Water: And re-imbarking their People three Days after, they set sail again and arriv'd at *Cape Fear* (in *Carolina*) on the 16th of *July*, where they were in great danger of being cast away ; for they did not see the Cape till they were within a Cable's Length of it. From *Cape Fear* they stood to the Northward, and arriv'd at *Cape Hatteras*, near the  
Island

## of VIRGINIA.

407

Island of *Roanoak*, on the 22d of *July*; where-  
upon they sent a Party of Men to search the  
Island of *Roanoak* for the fifteen Men Sir  
*Richard Greenville* had left there the Year be-  
fore, but could find none of them, nor any  
Signs of their having been there, unless the  
Bones of one Man they supposed had been kill'd.  
But at the North End of the Island they found  
the Fort which had been erected by Captain  
*Lane*, and the first Colony with several of  
their Houses undemolish'd; the lower Rooms  
however were over-run with Melons, and  
Deer feeding on them.

Virginia.

None of  
the fifteen  
Men to  
be found.

Sir *Walter Raleigh* had order'd Captain  
*White* and the Colony not to fix themselves  
at *Roanoak*, but to sail Northward as far as  
the Bay of *Chesapeake*, and erect a Town there;  
but this was oppos'd by *Ferdinando* the *Spanish*  
Pilot, to whose Care the Fleet was committed,  
under Pretence that it was too late in the Year  
to look out for another Port. Whereupon  
Governor *White* and the rest of the Planters  
determin'd to stay at *Roanoak*, and to repair  
the Fort and Houses they found there. They  
had not been on Shore a Week before Mr.  
*George How*, one of the Court of Assistants, An Eng-  
straggling a Mile or two from the Fort, was  
desperately wounded with sixteen Arrows by  
a Party of *Indians*, who had conceal'd them-  
selves in the Reeds and Flags by the Sea-side, *Indians*.  
and seeing him disabled, they beat out his  
Brains with their wooden Swords and Clubs.

On the 30th of *July*, twenty Men, under  
the Command of Captain *Stafford*, were de-  
tach'd to the Island of *Groatan*, with *Manteo*  
the *Indian*, whose Mother and Relations dwelt  
in that Island, to enquire after the fifteen  
Men, and to renew their ancient Friendship  
with

A De-  
tachment  
sent to  
*Groatan*.

Virginia.



with the People of that Island. The Natives seem'd at first prepared to oppose Captain *Stafford's* Landing; but upon his marching towards them with his Musketeers they fled. Whereupon *Manteo* call'd to his Countrymen, telling them the *English* came as Friends; and the *Indians* knowing his Voice return'd; and throwing away their Bows and Arrows, bid the Captain welcome, and afterwards conducted him to their Town, entertaining him and his People in the best manner they could; but they desir'd the *English* would give them some Badge or Mark whereby they might be distinguish'd from their *Indian* Enemies when they met with them out of the Island; for Want of which several of their Friends had been hurt and wounded the Year before by Captain *Lane* and his People. This Captain *Stafford* agreed to, and afterwards directed the *Croatan*s to go over to the Continent and acquaint the Inhabitants of *Secotan*, *Pomeiok*, &c. that if they would accept of the Friendship of the *English*, and enter into an Alliance with them, all past Injuries should be forgot, which the Chiefs of the *Croatan*s promis'd to do, and to return within seven Days with the Answer of the *Weroances*, or Heads of those Tribes (to which our Adventurers were pleas'd to give the Titles of *Kings*.)

Some Account of the fifteen *English* that were lost.

They understood also from the Inhabitants of *Croatan*, that the fifteen Men Sir *Edward Greenville* had left at *Roanoak* the Year before, had been surpris'd by the People of *Secotan* and some other *Indian* Powers, who coming over to the Island as Friends, took an Opportunity to set fire to their Houses, and murder'd some of them as they run out unarm'd to avoid the Flames: However, eight or nine of

of the *English* escap'd to the Water-side, and went over in their Boat to a little Island on the Right-hand of Cape *Hatteras*; that the *English* some time after remov'd from the said Island, but whither they went or what became of them they could not tell.

Virginia.

Captain *Stafford* afterwards return'd, and acquainting Governor *White* with what he had done, it was resolv'd to wait seven Days for the Answer of the *Weroances* of *Secotan*, &c. before they enter'd upon further Action. But the seven Days being expir'd, and none of the *Weroances* of *Secotan*, &c. appearing, nor any Answer to their Message being brought by the Men of *Croatan*, as they had promis'd, the Governor took four and twenty Men with him, well arm'd, and went over to the Continent on the 8th of *August*, in the Evening, determining to be reveng'd on the People of *Secotan* and their Allies for driving the fifteen *English* from *Roanoak*, and murdering Mr. *Howe*: and having been inform'd where one of their principal Towns was, he attack'd it in the Night-time, with an Intent to destroy all the Men in it; but instead of his Enemies he found his Friends of *Croatan* possess'd of the Place, and hurt and wounded several of them before he discover'd his Mistake; for the People of *Secotan*, after they had murder'd *Howe*, expecting this Visit, had retir'd to the in-land Country with Precipitation, and left their Corn, Tobacco, and Fruits behind them, which the People of *Croatan* had been gathering in: And this was the Reason they did not return within the seven Days, as they had promised. They readily acknowledg'd therefore, that the Mischief they had receiv'd was by Mistake, and that they themselves were

An Expedition  
against  
*Secotan*.

The Indians  
on the Sea-  
coast run  
away.



Virginia. the Occasion of it by not keeping their Words.  
 Governor *White* being return'd to *Roanoak*  
 on the 13th of *August*, *Manteo* the Indian was  
 baptiz'd, and constituted Lord of the Island of  
*Roanoak*, and of the opposite Continent of  
*Desamongapeak*, as Sir *Walter Raleigh* had  
 order'd; and on the 18th of the same Month,  
 Mrs. *Eleanor Dare*, Wife of Mr. *Ananias*  
*Dare*, one of the Court of Assistants, and  
 Daughter of Governor *White*, was deliver'd  
 of a Daughter, afterwards baptiz'd by the  
 Name of *Virginia*. And now all the Planters  
 Stores and Provisions being landed, and the  
 Ships ready to sail, the Colony determin'd to  
 send back two of the Court of Assistants to  
*England* to solicit for further Re-inforcements  
 and Supplies, those they had with them not  
 being thought sufficient to establish a Colony  
 on the Continent, as the *Indians* were most  
 of them their profess'd Enemies. But at length  
 it was thought most proper to depute Governor  
*White* himself, who had the greatest Interest at  
 the Court of *England*, and on whose Diligence  
 and Application they could most rely: And  
 with great Reluctancy he was prevail'd on to  
 undertake this Office, apprehending his Re-  
 putation might suffer if he left the Colony and  
 return'd to *England* before he had effected  
 any thing.

Captain *White* setting sail for *England* ar-  
 riv'd there at a time when the Nation was  
 alarm'd with the Rumour of the intended *Spa-*  
*nish* Invasion, which was attempted the fol-  
 lowing Summer, 1588, to oppose which the  
 Queen and the whole Kingdom were employ'd,  
 especially *Drake*, *Raleigh*, and the rest of the  
 Sea Commanders. And as the State seem'd  
 to be in imminent Danger, all lesser Enterprizes  
 were

were neglected or postpon'd, and consequently Governor *White's* Application in Behalf of the unhappy Colony he had left in *America* was very little attended to, insomuch that he was not able to obtain Leave for any Ships to be sent thither till the Beginning of the Year 1590:

And then all that he could procure was an Order that three small Men of War, which were going to cruize against the *Spaniards* in the *West-Indies*, should take some Re-inforcements and Provisions on Board for the Colony at *Roanoak*; which Order they were far from obeying as they ought to have done, for they only took Governor *White* on Board, refusing to carry either Planters or Provisions thither. Sir *Walter Raleigh* either had not Interest enough at this time to cause his Orders to be obey'd, or was employ'd in Enterprizes wherein he expected to acquire more Wealth or Glory than in supporting his *Virginian* Colony, which occasion'd his neglecting those unfortunate People who had been induc'd to hazard their Lives and all that was dear to them in his Service.

Mr. *White* relates, that the Commanders of the Men of War with whom he went to *America*, having spent most of the Summer in cruizing among the *Spanish* Islands, did not arrive at *Roanoak* till the middle of *August*, 1590; and that searching the Island of *Roanoak* they found, by some Inscriptions cut on the Trees and Beams of the Houses, that the Colony was remov'd to the Island of *Croatan*. But before they remov'd they had buried their Chests, and great Part of their Effects, which the *Indians* afterwards dug up and spoil'd. Governor *White*, with much Importunity, procur'd the Consent of the Captains of the

Virginia.  
Above  
two Years  
before he  
could get  
any Ships  
sent to  
*Roanoak*.

The  
Colony re-  
mov'd to  
*Croatan*.

Virginia.



Where  
they pe-  
rish'd, be-  
ing aban-  
don'd by  
Sir *Walter*  
*Ralegh*.

Men of War to follow the Colony to *Croatan*. But the Weather growing tempestuous they were in great danger of Shipwreck, and lost most of their Anchors and Cables. Whereupon they sail'd directly to *England*, and left the Colony to shift for themselves; and whether they were famish'd, or cut in Pieces by the *Indians*, or perish'd in attempting to get home by Sea, I could never learn, for they have not been heard of from that Day to this. This must render People exceeding cautious how they engage in such Enterprizes on the Faith and Promises of Courtiers to support them. The Safety of the State, a Project of more Importance, or the Prospect of gaining greater Treasures another way, are too often thought sufficient Reasons for abandoning our distressed Friends: And indeed, during the Year 1588, when the whole Kingdom was at stake, there might be some Colour for Sir *Walter's* not sending Re-inforcements to his Colony; but when that was over, and an Invasion no longer fear'd, he might, one would have thought, have cast an Eye towards a Company of Men who had run the greatest Hazards, relying upon his Word and Honour to sustain them. He might, surely, have re-inforc'd his Colony, or brought them back, considering the Figure he then made in the Court of *England* and the royal Navy: But I doubt, the Capture of the Galleons, the Plunder of *Cades*, and the Gold Mines of *Guiana*, which he went in search of soon after, put the *Virginian* Colony too much out of his Head, after he found himself disappointed in his principal View of possessing Mountains of Gold in *Virginia*.

Sir

Sir *Walter* also seems chargeable with *Virginia*.  
 Levity as well as Avarice, since after he had obtain'd the Property of *Virginia* by Letters Patents from Queen *Elizabeth*, and had sent several Colonies thither, he became in a short time so regardless of that Country, or the Fate of those who had embark'd in that Enterprize in Confidence of being supported by him, that he went in search of other Gold Mines in *Guiana*, *the Magazine of all rich Metals* (as he terms it) and made some Voyages in Person thither, in which he was however miserably disappointed, and discover'd great Weakness and Credulity in the Accounts he has left behind him of that Country; for he was made to believe there was more Gold and precious Stones in *Guiana* than in *Mexico* and *Peru*, tho' it appears there is less of either there than in any Part of *Spanish America*. He was made to believe also, that one of the Nations of *Guiana* were a headless People, and that their Mouths were in the middle of their Breasts, and their Eyes in their Shoulders; of which he tells us, there was no doubt to be made, he having been assur'd of it from a Cloud of Witnesses. Whatever Prudence and Conduct Sir *Walter* may have discover'd on other Occasions, the Prospect of Gold Mines and Mountains of precious Stones he expected to find in *Guiana* seem to have disorder'd his Brain to a very great degree; for after repeated Disappointments, he never desisted his Search till at length it prov'd fatal to him. See *Hackluit*, Vol. II. p. 631, 634, 672, 692.

*Purchase* indeed relates, that while he was endeavouring in Person to discover the Gold Mines of *Guiana*, he did order some Vessels to enquire after his Colony at *Roanok*, but

*Sir Walter* charg'd with Levity as well as Avarice.  
 Goes in search of Gold Mines at *Guiana*.

Virginia. was deceiv'd by those he employ'd, who never went the Voyage, except one *Mace*, who undertook it in the Year 1602, and was kill'd by the Natives on his going on Shore with several of his Crew, the rest escaping with Difficulty.

Thus it appears but too evident, that Sir *Walter Raleigh's* Expectations of discovering immense Treasures in *Guiana* were in a great measure the Ruin of our first Attempts to settle Colonies in *Virginia*.

He seems in Raptures when he first visited those Shores, which he endeavours to make his Friends believe were all Gold and precious Stones.

I am assur'd, says Sir *Walter*, by such *Spaniards* as have seen *Manoa*, the imperial City of *Guiana*, and which they (the *Spaniards*) call *El Dorado*, or the Golden City, that for the Greatness, the Riches, and excellent Situation, it exceeds all the World. All the Vessels and Utensils of the Emperor's House are of Gold and Silver, with Statues of Gold, resembling Giants. There are also the Figures of all Animals, Beasts, Birds, and Fishes, as big as the Life. There is not any Vegetable but they have the Figure of it in Gold; and golden Billets lie pil'd up on Heaps, in Imitation of Fire-wood. And in another Place he relates, that there were Mountains of Diamonds in *Guiana*; which it is evident he believ'd himself, tho' in fact there was never any such City as *Manoa*, or such an Emperor as he mentions, and very little Gold to be met with in *Guiana*, as the *French* and *Dutch* will inform us, who have Settlements in that very Country, which he places between the Equator and 5 Degrees of North Latitude, or between  
the

the Rivers *Oronoque* and *Amazon*. However, <sup>Virginia.</sup> his Expectations of finding it what he describes was no doubt the Reason of his neglecting those Colonies which he had sent to *Virginia*: That he was conscious of the Distress they must be reduc'd to appears by his telling the *Spaniards*, in one of the Voyages he made to *Guiana*, that he was bound for *Virginia*, to relieve the People he left there: And he informs us, that he had an Intention to have visited them in his Return from *Guiana*, if the Winds had favour'd him.

And it is not the most improbable Conjecture, that the Reason Queen *Elizabeth* did not assist him with her Ships and Forces to subdue this golden Country, as he had represented it to be, was, that he had deceiv'd her once before, by representing *Virginia* as such, which he now neglected. She had found his weak Side. She discerned his Avarice and Credulity, and did not think fit to hazard her Ships or Subjects till she had better Proofs of the Reality of those Treasures. These are some of the Reasons that this Princess made no further Attempts to settle Colonies in *America* in her Reign, tho' she liv'd a dozen Years or more after *White's* last Expedition to *Virginia*. She was too wise a Princess to be deceiv'd twice by one Person in the same Case, and no private Adventurers would undertake to send Colonies thither after they saw such a Body of Men abandon'd by their Employers.

As Sir *Walter* himself observes, it was the Hopes of Gold that was the principal and almost only Motive to these Undertakings. Our People had observ'd the Success of the *Spaniards*, and imagin'd that Gold and Silver Mines were as common in *America* as Lead  
Mines

Virginia.



Mines are in *Europe*. The first Adventurers, whether *English* or *Spanish*, had no View or Thought of finding any thing else in that new World but Gold and Silver, that would answer the Expence and Hazard of such Voyages. They did not dream at that Time, that the *Virginian* Tobacco would be as profitable as a Gold Mine, as we found it afterwards to be, when we purchased with it most of the Merchandize of *Europe*, as with ready Money. Nor did they foresee that extensive and profitable Traffick that is now carry'd on between *Europe* and the Plantations; which is, in Reality, of greater Advantage to some Powers than the Mines of *Peru* and *Mexico* are to the *Spaniards*.

I have been the more particular in this Part of the History relating to the first Attempts of the *English* to settle Colonies on the Coast of *Virginia*, because I find Colonel *Beverley* and Mr. *Oldmixon*, who have written the History of it, have omitted many material Facts, and do not seem to have enter'd into the real Motives of deserting that Enterprize in the Reign of Queen *Elizabeth*.

Some  
Errors in  
Mr. *Old-  
mixon's*  
History.

Mr. *Oldmixon* also has committed some Mistakes in the short Relation he gives us; for first he tells us, that several of the Colony left at *Roanoak*, under the Command of Captain *Lane*, were cut off by the Natives, whereas there was not one of Captain *Lane's* Men kill'd by them. He adds also, that they remain'd at *Roanoak* till *August*, 1586, when it appears Sir *Francis Drake* took them on Board in *June*, 1586, and carry'd them to *England*.

He makes Captain *White* to constitute a Government, consisting of a Governor and  
twelve

## of VIRGINIA.

417

twelve Counsellors, whereas *White* himself was appointed Governor by Sir *Walter Raleigh*, and twelve Assistants given him before he left *England*, who were incorporated by the Name of *The Governor and Assistants of the City of Raleigh in Virginia*.

Virginia.

He relates, that Mrs. *Dare*, who was deliver'd of the first Child on the Coast of *Virginia*, was the Daughter of Mr. *Ananias Dare*; but it seems she was the Daughter of Governor *White*, and Wife of Mr. *Dare*, one of the Court of Assistants.

The Colony is likewise represented to be in great Distress before Governor *White* return'd to *England*, whereas he did not remain at *Roanoke* above two or three Months at most, returning to *England* the latter End of the Year 1587, in which time the Provisions they carry'd with them could not be spent; and it appears to have been Autumn, when the Corn and Fruits were ripe, of which they receiv'd large Supplies from the Continent while Governor *White* was there, and had then Plenty of Fish upon the Coast. The Reason of sending Governor *White* to *England* was to procure a Re-inforcement of Troops, and Supplies of Ammunition and Provisions, without which it was foreseen they could not establish themselves on the Continent, as they were then in a State of Hostility with the *Indians*, who would neither treat or traffick with them after they found the *English* intended to usurp the Dominion of their Country, and had taken upon them to put to death some of their *Weroances*, or great Men.

Mr. *Oldmixon* relates also, that after two Years, Governor *White* procur'd three Ships to be fitted out with Men and Provisions for



Virginia  


the Colony at *Roanoak*; whereas according to Mr. *White's* own Account of that Matter, all that he could procure of the Government was, to permit three Men of War, which were going to cruize in the *Spanish West-Indies*, to call at *Roanoak*, and complains that they refus'd to take either Men or Provisions on Board, and would not so much as let him carry a Servant with him.

Mr. *Oldmixon* adds, that the Misfortunes of this Colony were the Occasion that no further Attempts were made to plant *Virginia* in this Reign; whereas it is agreed on all hands, that no-body knew what their Fate was till a great while afterwards. Sir *Walter* did not suppose the *Virginian* Colony was lost in the Year 1594, for in that very Year he tells us, he had some Thoughts of calling on them in his Return from *Guiana*; and *Purchase* observes he sent a Bark to enquire after them so late as the Year 1602.

An En-  
 quiry by  
 what  
 Right  
 Christian  
 Princes  
 invade  
 Pagan  
 Countries.

Give me Leave, before I proceed further in this History, to make some Reflections on that Authority Christian Princes and States have heretofore assum'd and exercis'd (and which some still claim) of invading and usurping the Dominion of all infidel Nations, and treating the Natives as their Slaves and Vassals, and to consider the Right they pretend to of excluding both Christians and Pagans from all Countries whither they have sent any Colonies.

The Pope seems first to have assum'd an Authority of disposing of such Countries as were in the Possession of Infidels or Hereticks by Virtue of the Powers he pretends to derive from JESUS CHRIST: And in this all Christian Princes appear to have acquiesced when he granted the East to the *Portuguese* and

and the West to the *Spaniards*. No *European* <sup>Virginia.</sup> Power pretended to disturb either of those Crowns in the Enjoyment of what they possess'd themselves of in the heathen World for many Years. But the Pope's Power of transferring infidel Kingdoms to whom he pleased was no sooner call'd in question than every sovereign Prince in *Europe* assum'd the like Authority, and in all their Patents for Discovery granted their Subjects the Dominion and Property of every Pagan Country they should invade, being induc'd to it, I presume, by that *Turkish* Maxim, *That Dominion is founded in Grace*, or in other Words, *that Unbelievers could have no Right to this World any more than the next*. This seems to have been the universal Opinion both of Protestants and Papists when Queen *Elizabeth* granted Sir *Walter Raleigh* a Patent to subdue and govern those Pagan Countries he should discover; the Tenour of that Patent implying as much: Tho' at this Day we are as generally agreed, that Christian Princes have nothing to do to invade or enslave heathen Nations, but that Pagan Princes and States have as good a Right to their Countries, their Liberties and Possessions as the best and most powerful Christian Monarchs have to their Dominions in this Part of the World; and consequently all the Invasions and Usurpations that have been made upon the heathen World by Christians were unjust, and the Conquest of them upon such unjust Grounds could give none of them a Right to the Territories of those Pagan Powers, or to the Properties of their Subjects, so long as there were any Heirs remaining to claim their respective Rights; which the *Spaniards*, *Portuguese*, and *Dutch*,

Virginia.

seem to have been so conscious of, that they in a manner extirpated the Nations they conquer'd to defeat all prior Claims, and thus by an Excess of Villany have, as they imagine, deriv'd a Right to themselves by way of Occupancy: The Possessor being deem'd by some to have the best Right where none can shew a better, especially after a long and uninterrupted Possession. But this can never be sound Doctrine surely in regard to Kingdoms, inasmuch as it encourages wicked Usurpers to be still greater Villains in order to establish themselves. One would rather be inclined to believe that any neighbouring Nation had a Right to such ruined and abdicated Kingdoms, and that it was incumbent on all other Powers to unite in driving the Usurper from a Country he had thus barbarously invaded and destroy'd.

On the other hand it is said, that *America* was but thinly inhabited in comparison of this Part of the World, and there was Room enough both for them and us: That no Prince or private Man can have a Right to exclude all others from a Country too large for the present Possessors to enjoy or cultivate: And that by teaching the Natives Husbandry and other Arts, we shew'd them the Way to live elegantly, and to make five hundred Acres of Land of more Value than twenty thousand, which were before nothing but Bogs or Forests, and inhabited by wild Beasts more than Men. It could never be the Design of the Creation that the Earth should remain the Property of a few Huntsmen, unimprov'd and uncultivated, as *America* must have done if the *Europeans* had been excluded from sending Colonies thither.

To this it is reply'd, that we ought not however to have intruded ourselves by Force to the Prejudice of the original Inhabitants, but to have proceeded in the Method some of the Ancients did. We ought to have insinuated ourselves into their good Opinion, to have shewn them the Beauty and Excellence of the Christian Religion, and the benevolent Principles it taught: We ought to have convinc'd them how beneficial the *European* Arts and Sciences would be to them and their Country, and then we should not have fail'd of being receiv'd with Kindness, and even Veneration, as *Ceres* and *Bacchus* anciently were: We should have been look'd upon as good Angels, or at least as the great Benefactors of Mankind; and admitted and even invited to share their Country with them for the sake of the Improvements we might make in it. But admitting we had a Right to fix ourselves in any vacant Parts of *America*, we certainly could have none to drive the Natives from the rest, and insult and tyrannize over them: And I have not observ'd any Instance from our first Attempts to settle Colonies there to this Day, where we have treated the Natives with Humanity and Benevolence, but they have been ready to resign to us as much of their respective Countries as we could plant and cultivate, upon very moderate Considerations.

And as for that other piece of Tyranny so generally practis'd by the *Spaniards*, *Dutch*, and *Portuguese*, namely, the excluding the Natives from conversing or trafficking with any other People but their own, and the debarring all other Nations from entering their Ports, I cannot see the Justice of it. Every free People in this Part of the World have certainly the

Virginia. the Liberty of trading with those of another without asking Leave of the *Spaniards* or the *Dutch*, notwithstanding those Powers may have Colonies in some Part of the same Continent or Islands. How their possessing a Town or two upon the *Indian* Coast can give them a Right of excluding all other *European* Nations from resorting thither and trafficking with the Natives, or what Right any *European* Powers can have to lie with their Ships before the *Indian* Harbours, and to oppose and even murder the Natives for attempting to sell the Produce of their Country to Foreigners, as the *Dutch* do in the *East-Indies*, and the *Spaniards* in *America*, is not easy to conceive.

Such Reflections as these are not only natural but unavoidable upon enquiring into the Original of our *American* Colonies.

I proceed now to the remaining Part of the *Virginian* History; and tho' I cannot approve the Conduct of our own Nation in all Places, yet it will appear that we have used less Violence and Oppression in the Settlements we have made than any other Nation, and in many Places have fairly contracted with the Inhabitants for what we have obtain'd, and given them what they esteem'd a valuable Consideration for the Lands they transfer'd to us.

The  
*Virginian*  
History  
continu'd.

In the Year 1602, on the 26th of *March*, Captain *Gilbert* also set sail from *Plymouth* with thirty-two Mariners and Landmen; the Landmen being commanded by Captain *Gosnold*, and design'd for a Colony. They arriv'd in that Part of *Virginia* now call'd *New-England*, being in 42 Degrees North Latitude, on the 14th of *May* following, where there came on Board them several of the Natives in a *European* Boat,

Boat, some of them also being cloathed like <sup>Virginia.</sup> *Europeans*, the Boat and Cloaths having been given them by some Fishermen who frequented *Newfoundland*; but most of them had Mantles of Deer-skins. They afterwards sail'd to the Southward, and came to a Promontory call'd Cape *Cod*, from the Shoals of Cod fish they met with there, and that Name it retains to this Day. Here Captain *Gosnold* went on Shore, and found Peas, Strawberries, and other Fruits growing, and saw a great deal of good Timber. They sail'd from this Point to the Southward, and arriv'd at another Promontory, which they call'd *Gilbert's Point*, the Name of the Captain of the Ship, the Shores appearing full of People. Some of them came on Board, and tho' they were peaceable enough, they were observ'd to be thievish. The *English* afterwards bending their Course to the South-West, they came to an uninhabited Island in 41 Degrees, to which they gave the Name of *Martba's Vineyard*; and to another Island, a little further to the Southward, they gave the Name of *Elizabeth Island*, and these Islands are still call'd by those Names.

Upon *Elizabeth Island*, lying about four Miles from the Continent, Captain *Gosnold* propos'd to settle with his little Colony, and to that End went on Shore there on the 28th of *May*. He found the Island cover'd with Timber and Underwood, among which were Oak, Ash, Beech, Walnut, Hazel, Cedars, Cypress, and Sassafras. And as to Fruits, here were Cherries, Vines, Gooseberries, Strawberries, Raspberries, Ground-nuts, and Peas, and also Variety of Roots and Sallad-Herbs. Here, in the middle of a fresh Water Lake, which surrounded a little rocky Island, containing

Virginia. taining an Acre of Ground, they began to  
 erect a House and Fort capable of receiving  
 twenty Men.

A Fort While this was doing, Captain *Gosnold* sail'd  
 erected by the *English* over to the Continent, where he found a great  
 many People, and was treated very courteously  
 by them, every one making a Present of what  
 he had about him, such as Skins, Furrs, To-  
 bacco, Chains and Necklaces of Copper,  
 Shells, and the like, for which the *English*  
 gave them some Toys, and return'd to their  
 Fort.

Two or three Days afterwards, one of the  
*Indian* Chiefs, with fifty stout Men arm'd with  
 Bows and Arrows, came over from the Continent  
 to the Island in their Country Boats, and there  
 being then but eight *Englishmen* on Shore, they  
 stood upon their guard till the Natives gave  
 them to understand they came in a friendly  
 manner to visit them. Whereupon they were  
 invited to eat and drink, and sat down to  
 Dinner with the *English* on their Heels, ex-  
 pressing a great deal of Good-humour. The  
*Indians* made them another Visit two or three  
 Days after, when they behav'd themselves very  
 peaceably also; but one of the Natives having  
 stoln a Shield, was made to return it, and  
 they seem'd apprehensive the *English* would  
 revenge it; but finding them still easy and  
 sociable, they were merry together, and parted  
 again in a friendly manner. But as two of the  
*English* were straggling by the Sea-side two  
 Days after, to get Crabs, four *Indians* attack'd  
 them, and wounded one of the *English* with  
 an Arrow; whereupon the other *Englishman*  
 disarm'd the Aggressor, and the rest run away.  
 This seems to have been the only Quarrel  
 there was between the *English* and the *Indians*

in

in this Voyage; however, the Colony which <sup>Virginia.</sup> was design'd to be left there, who were twenty in Number, being apprehensive it would be difficult for them to subsist till Supplies and Re-inforcements came from *England*, if the Natives should prove their Enemies, especially as their Provisions, upon Examination, appear'd much shorter than was expected, it was resolv'd to abandon their little Fort in the <sup>The</sup> Island, and return (all of them) to *England*. <sup>English</sup> Having therefore taken on Board some Cedar <sup>abandon</sup> and Sassafras, Beaver-skins, Deer-skins, black <sup>their Fort</sup> Fox-skins, and other Peltry they had receiv'd <sup>and return</sup> of the Natives for the Goods they carry'd <sup>to England.</sup> thither, they set sail from the Island of *Elizabeth* on the 18th of *June*, arriving at *Exmouth* in *Devon*, on the 23d of *July* following, without having lost one Man: But they made no Attempt to find their unhappy Countrymen, who had been left at *Roanoak*, in the Year 1587.

The next Year (1603) the Reverend Mr. <sup>Mr. Hack-</sup> *Hackluit*, Prebend of the Cathedral of *Bristol*, <sup>luit and</sup> a Gentleman of an enterprizing Genius, who <sup>others</sup> compiled the first Collection of Voyages that <sup>licens'd</sup> ever was publish'd in *English*, having convers'd <sup>to trade to</sup> with some of the last Adventurers, propos'd to <sup>Virginia</sup> the Merchants of *Bristol* the sending some Ships <sup>by Sir</sup> on the same Voyage; which they consented to, <sup>Walter</sup> and he agreed to become an Adventurer with <sup>Raleigh.</sup> them: But as Sir *Walter Raleigh* had a Patent for the planting *Virginia*, it was thought proper to send Mr. *Hackluit* and some others to him to obtain his Leave for making the Voyage; which he readily granted under his Hand and Seal, together with all the Profits they should make by it, having no longer any Thoughts of planting that Country himself.



Virginia.



Captain  
Pringe's  
Voyage.

Queen  
Elizabeth  
dies.

Being thus authoris'd to traffick to *Virginia*, our Adventurers fitted out a small Vessel, call'd the *Speedwell*, Burthen fifty Ton, and man'd with thirty Hands, of which *Martin Pringe*, an expert Mariner, was appointed Commander. They also sent another small Bark with him of twenty-six Ton, and carrying fourteen Hands; both which Vessels being victual'd for eight Months, they put on Board a Cargo consisting of Cloathing both Linnen and Woollen, Hats, Shoes, Stockings, Carpenters Tools, Implements of Husbandry and Gardening, Looking-glasses, Pins, Needles, Thread, and other Haberdashers Wares; Knives, Scissars, Fish-hooks, Bells, Beads, and other glittering Toys, which they apprehended most acceptable to the *Indians*; with which they set sail from *King's-road*, near *Bristol*, on the 20th of *March*, 1603-4; but being put back by contrary Winds, they run into *Milford-Haven*, where they lay till the 10th of *April* (in which Interval they heard of the Death of Queen *Elizabeth*, that happen'd on the 24th of *March* 1603-4) when setting sail again, they arriv'd on the Coast of *Virginia* (now *New-England*) in 43 Degrees North Latitude; from whence they bent their Course South-West till they came into 41 Degrees, and going on Shore there, cut a good Quantity of Sassafras and carry'd it on Board; but least they should be surpris'd in the Woods by the Natives while they were at work, they erected a little Fort or Redoubt, wherein they left their Effects and four or five Men to guard them while the rest were at work. The Natives came and traffick'd with the *English*, forty or fifty in a Company, and sometimes upwards of an hundred, who eat and drank and were very merry with

with our Adventurers, especially when they observ'd a Lad in their Company playing upon a Gittar. They would get round about him, and taking Hands, dance twenty or thirty in a Ring, after the *American* Manner. Our Adventurers observ'd, that the Natives were more afraid of two Mastiff Dogs they carry'd with them than of twenty Men; and when they design'd to get rid of their Company they let loose one of these Mastiffs; whereupon the Natives would shriek out and run away to the Woods; but 'tis probable this Usage, and the erecting a Fortification in their Country, made the *Indians* at length look upon the *English* as their Enemies; for our Adventurers inform us, that a Party of *Indians* came and surrounded their Fort a few Days after, when most of them were absent, and would probably have surpris'd it, if the Captain of the Ship had not fir'd two Guns and alarm'd the Workmen in the Woods, who thereupon return'd to the Relief of the Fort. The *Indians* pretended indeed they had no hostile Intentions. But our People never car'd to trust them afterwards. And the Day before the *English* embark'd, the Natives came down again in great Numbers and set fire to the Woods where they had cut the Sassafras; which, 'tis probable, was design'd to let the *English* know, they would preserve nothing in their Country which should invite such Guests to visit them again; for no doubt the great Guns and Fire-Arms had render'd the *English* very terrible to them as well as their Dogs.

As to the Produce of the Soil, Captain *Pringe* made the same Observations as Captain *Gosnold* had done in the former Voyage, adding, that the Natives wore their Hair ty'd up and adorn'd

Virginia. with a great many Feathers, Flowers, and glittering Toys; and that the Men had nothing before their Nudities but a Piece of Skin of a Hand-breadth, which was fasten'd to their Girdles before and behind and brought between their Legs, and to these Girdles, which were made of Snake-skins, they also hung their Tobacco-Pouches. They saw but two of their Women, who wore Aprons made of Skins that reach'd down to their Knees, and had Mantles of Bear-skins, which they hung on one Shoulder. Their Boats were made of the Bark of the Birch-Tree, much of the Form of ours, but larger, and sew'd together with Osier-Twigs, the Seams being cover'd with a kind of Rosin or Turpentine of a very fragrant Smell: And these Vessels were so exceeding light, that one of them, which would carry nine Men, did not weigh sixty Pounds.

The latter End of *July*, our Adventurers loaded their least Bark with Sassafras, and sent her home to *England*; and on the 9th of *August* they set sail with their other Ship, having gotten a Cargo of Skins and Furrs, for which they truck'd away the Cloathing and Hardware they carry'd thither. They arriv'd at the *Soundings*, in the Chaps of the Channel, within five Weeks after they left the Coast of *Virginia*, where they met with contrary Winds, so that they did not come to *King's-road* till the 2d of *October*, 1603; the *Speedwell*, the biggest Ship, having been out six Months in this Voyage, and the least Ship, call'd the *Discoverer*, five Months and an half.

Prince  
returns to  
*England*.

The Lords  
*Southamp-*  
*ton* and  
*Arundel*  
send a  
Ship to  
*Virginia*.

In the Year 1605, two enterprizing Noblemen (*viz.*) *Henry* Earl of *Southampton*, and *Thomas* Lord *Arundel*, equip'd a Ship call'd the *Archangel*, and gave the Command of it to

to Captain *George Weymouth*, who set sail <sup>Virginia.</sup> from the *Downs* on the 31<sup>st</sup> of *March*, and came upon the Coast of *Virginia*, or rather <sup>Capt. Weymouth's Voyage.</sup> *New-England*, on the 14<sup>th</sup> of *May* following, being then, as he found by Observation, in 43 Degrees of North Latitude. From whence he stood to the Southward, and arriv'd at a good Harbour, not far from the Mouth of *Hudson's River*, in 41 Degrees odd Minutes; and because they discover'd this Harbour on *Whitsunday*, they gave it the Name of *Pentecost Harbour*.

Here they traded with the Natives to great Advantage, getting forty Beaver-skins for the Value of five Shillings in Knives and other Cutlers Wares. Several of the *Indians* came on Board and were entertain'd, and some of the *English* went on Shore, and lay in the *Indian* Houses all Night; but always took that Caution to keep some of the Natives on Board as Hostages; and these People not using the like Caution, when the *English* had finish'd their Business they surpris'd three or four of the Natives and detain'd them on Board, resolving to carry them to *England*; of which their Friends being appris'd, used various Stratagems to make Reprisals by taking some of the *English*, but had no Opportunity; for our Adventurers never went on Shore afterwards but in a Body and well arm'd, nor would they venture far into the Country, having discover'd an Ambuscade of several hundred *Indians* that lay ready to intercept their Retreat; whereupon our Adventurers cry out mightily of the treacherous Disposition of the *Indians*, whereas they themselves were much more guilty of Treachery in surprising and running away with several of the Natives. It was

Virginia. was natural to expect the *Indians* would revenge this piece of Violence if they could have met with an Opportunity, either upon themselves or the next *Europeans* that visited their Coast; and whenever they have upon the like Provocations endeavour'd to do themselves Justice, our People never fail to exclaim against the Treachery and Barbarity of the *Indians*, who have much more Reason to complain of the *Europeans* for their Invasions and Treachery than we have to exclaim against them for retaliating such Injuries.

Captain  
Weymouth  
returns to  
England.

There happen'd nothing more worth mentioning in this Voyage, but that our Adventurers having made a very good Market, set sail for *England* on *Sunday* the 16th of *June*, and made the Islands of *Scilly*, near the Land's End of *England*, on the 16th of *July* following.

The enterprizing and mercantile Part of the Nation being by this time sufficiently appriz'd that a very advantageous Commerce might be carry'd on with *North-America*, tho' they should not meet with Gold and Silver, as the *Spaniards* had done in that Part of the World, and Sir *Walter Ralegh's* Patent being forfeited by his Attainder in the first Year of this Reign, several Gentlemen and Merchants petition'd his Majesty King *James I.* for a Patent to enable them to raise a joint Stock, in order to settle Colonies in *Virginia*, observing that this could never be done effectually but by a Company or Corporation.

King  
James's  
Patent for  
planting  
Virginia.

Whereupon King *James*, by his Letters Patents, dated the 10th of *April*, 1606, reciting, That Sir *Thomas Gates* and Sir *George Summers*, Knights, *Richard Hackluit*, Clerk, Prebend of *Westminster*, *Edward Maria Wingfield*, *Thomas Hankham*, and *Ralegh Gilbert*, Esquires,

Esquires, *William Parker* and *George Popham*, Virginia.  
 Gentlemen, and divers others his loving Subjects, had petition'd him for Leave to send Colonies to *Virginia*, and such other Parts of *America* as either appertain'd to this Crown, or which were not actually possess'd by any other Christian Prince or People, and lying between 34 and 45 Degrees of Northern Latitude, and within an hundred Miles of the Sea-coast; and, for the speedy Accomplishment of the said Plantation, intended to divide themselves into two several Companies, the one consisting of the Adventurers of the City of *London*, who were desirous to fix themselves between the 34th and 41st Degrees of North Latitude; and the other, consisting of the Adventurers of the Cities of *Bristol* and *Exeter*, and the Town of *Plymouth*, who were desirous to settle between 38 and 45 Degrees on the Coast of *Virginia* in *America*. His Majesty, in order to promote so noble a Work, which might tend to the Glory of God by propagating the Christian Religion among the Infidels and Savages, and bring them to Humanity and Civility, did graciously accept their Petition: And for himself, his Heirs and Successors, did grant and agree, that the said Sir *Thomas Gates*, Sir *George Summers*, *Richard Hackluit*, and *Edward Maria Wingfield*, Adventurers of the City of *London*, and all others that should associate with them, should be call'd the first Colony, and might begin their first Plantation at any Place upon the said Coast of *Virginia* or *America*, where they should think fit, between 34 and 41 Degrees of Latitude; and should have all the Lands, Woods, Rivers, Ports, Fishings and Hereditaments whatsoever to the same belonging or appertaining,

Virginia.

appertaining, from the first Seat of their Plantation for fifty Miles either way along the Coast North and South; and an hundred Miles to the Westward within Land, with all the Islands over-against the said Coast, for the Space of an hundred Miles at Sea, with all the Lands, Ports, Rivers, Harbours, Fishings and Mines thereto belonging or appertaining; and Liberty to build, plant, and fortify thereon: And that no other Subjects of this Crown should be permitted to settle themselves on the Lands to the Westward of this Colony without their Leave. And his Majesty did grant to the aforesaid *Thomas Hanbam, Raleigh Gilbert, William Parker, and George Popbam*, of the Cities of *Bristol* and *Exeter*, and Town of *Plymouth*, in the County of *Devon*, and all others that should associate with them, that they should be call'd *the second Colony*, and might begin their first Plantation upon the said Coast of *Virginia* or *America*, where they should think fit, between 38 and 45 Degrees of Latitude, and enjoy all the Lands, Ports, Rivers, Fishings, and Hereditaments thereto belonging, with the like Extent of Land and Sea from the Seat of their Plantation, as was granted to the first Colony.

And it was provided, that the respective Colonies should not plant within the Space of one hundred Miles of each other.

That each Company should have a Council consisting of thirteen Persons, in whom the Government should be lodg'd; but limited by certain Articles under the Privy-Seal.

They were empower'd also to dig Mines in and beyond their respective Limits to the Westward, paying the Crown a Fifth of all Gold, and a Fifteenth of all Copper Ore they should  
get.

get. They were also empower'd to seize all <sup>Virginia.</sup> Ships that should trade within their respective Limits, to coin Money, raise Forces for their Defence, &c.

The *London* Adventurers, or the first Com- <sup>Three</sup>pany, were no sooner authoriz'd to send Co- <sup>Ships sent</sup>lonies to *Virginia* by this Patent but they <sup>out by the</sup>fitted out three Vessels (*viz.*) one of an hundred <sup>*London*Ad-</sup>Tons, another of forty, and a Pinnace of twenty <sup>venturers.</sup>Tons, in which were sent an hundred and ten Landmen, with Arms, Ammunition, Tools and Implements for Building, Fortification and Tillage, Cloathing, Toys, and other Merchandize, to traffick with the *Indians*, and every thing proper for planting a Colony: The Command of this little Squadron being committed to Captain *Christopher Newport*, an excellent Seaman, and one who was used to *West-India* Voyages; but the Orders for the Government of the Colony, and the Names of the Members of the Council, who were to have the Administration of Affairs when they arriv'd in *Virginia*, were seal'd up, and directed not to be open'd till they went on Shore.

They set sail from *London* on the 20th of *December*, 1606, but the Wind not being favourable, they made it the 5th of *January* before they reach'd the *Downs*, and were detain'd here and upon the Coast of *England* several Weeks more. After which they bent their Course to the *Canary Islands*, where they took in fresh Water, and then sail'd to the *Caribbee Islands*, where they arriv'd on the 23d of *February*. They set their Men on Shore on several of these Islands, and remain'd amongst them a Month and upwards, but chiefly on the Island of *Nevis*, where their



Virginia. Men liv'd upon the Provisions they found in the Island.

On the 3d of *April* they set sail from *Nevis*, and on the 26th of the same Month discover'd the Land of *Virginia*, and the same Day were so fortunate as to enter the Bay of *Chespeak*, between the two Capes; the Southermost of which they nam'd Cape *Henry*, and the Northermost Cape *Charles*, in Compliment to the two Princes, the King's Sons; which Capes are about seven Leagues (not nine Leagues, as I said by Mistake in describing their Situation) asunder.

They could not possibly have found a better Place for their Purpose (tho' they were driven thither by a Storm, and hit upon it by Accident) there being more commodious Rivers and Harbours in this Bay than in any Part of *North-America*; the Want whereof, in a great measure, defeated Sir *Walter Raleigh's* Attempts of settling Colonies on this Coast.

They land  
at Cape  
*Henry*, in  
37 Degrees  
North  
Latitude.

A Skirmish with  
the Natives.

They landed first on the South Side, near Cape *Henry*, which lies in 37 Degrees North Latitude, and found it a very fruitful and delightful Country; which while some of the Gentlemen were taking a View of with uncommon Pleasure after the Fatigue of a tedious and tempestuous Voyage, they fell into an Ambuscade of *Indians*, who shot a Shower of Arrows from the Woods and desperately wounded two of the *English*; but upon the firing a Volley of small Shot they took to their heels and fled, giving Notice by Fires from Place to Place of the Arrival of our Adventurers.

The Water, upon sounding the South Side of the Entrance of the Bay, being found so shallow

shallow that their Ships could not come near the Shore, it was resolv'd to try the opposite Coast, where they found the Channel close to the Land to be eight or ten Fathom deep. Whereupon they nam'd that Point of Land *Point Comfort*, and brought their Ships thither, having the Day before erected a Crois at Cape *Henry*, and formally taken possession of the Country in the Name of King *James I.*

Virginia.

*Point Comfort.*

Possession taken of the Country.

At their Landing on Cape *Comfort*, five of the Natives appear'd at a distance, and seem'd very much afraid of the *English*, till Captain *Newport* made Signs of Peace and Friendship, when they laid down their Bows and Arrows, and came forwards with a great deal of Courage, inviting the *English* to their Town, which they pointed to, and call'd by the Name of *Kecoughtan*; and a Party of our Adventurers going thither with them were entertain'd very hospitably. They brought them also Pipes and Tobacco to smoak, and danced and sung after the Manner of their Country, to divert their new Guests; of whom, however, they seem'd to have some Apprehensions, for when the *English* first came to the Town, they set up a lamentable Howling, and laying their Faces to the Ground tore it up with their Nails; which the *English* then look'd upon as some religious Ceremony, but I am apt to think, by their Howling and Gestures, they rather express'd their Fears that those Foreigners would one Day subdue their Country, being acquainted with the Execution they had done with their Fire-Arms in the first Encounter they had with their Countrymen on the other Side the Bay. The Entertainment being ended, Captain *Newport* made the Natives

The *English* entertain'd by the Natives.

Virginia.

some Presents of Beads and other Toys, and then return'd to his Ship.

As to the Colony, the first Business they enter'd upon after they landed was to open their Orders, where they found the following Gentlemen appointed of the Council (*viz.*) *Bartholomew Gosnold*, *Edward Wingfield*, *Christopher Newport*, *John Smith*, *John Ratcliffe*, *John Martin*, and *George Kendall*, of whom *Wingfield* was chosen President, but they thought fit to leave Captain *Smith* out of the Council; for it seems the rest of the Gentlemen were so set against him that they had confin'd him Prisoner ever since their leaving *England*; which *Purchase* insinuates was occasion'd by their Envy at his superior Talents, and because the Company in *England* seem'd to rely more on his Skill and Experience than on any of the rest: And it appears, that the Planters themselves were so convinc'd of his Abilities afterwards, that they were oblig'd not only to admit him into their Council, but in a manner to resign the Administration into his Hands, after they had by their perpetual Jarrs and weak Management almost ruin'd the Company's Affairs. To proceed.

On the 4th of *May*, Captain *Newport* had an Interview with one of their *Weroances*, or Kings, as the *English* call them, nam'd *Paspabe*, and the Day following with *Rapahanna*, the *Weroance* or Chief of another Tribe, who invited the *English* to his Town, and treated them handsomely. The next three or four Days they sail'd up the River *Powhatan*, to which they gave the Name of *James River*, in search of a proper Place to settle the Colony; and having pitch'd upon one between forty and fifty

fifty Miles from the Mouth of the River, they landed all the Men there that were intended to be left in the Country, and began to erect a slight Fort, which they barricado'd with Trees, and built some few Huts, to which they gave the Name of *James Town*. Virginia.

The Place they chose was a Peninsula, two Thirds thereof being encompass'd by the River *Powhatan*, and the other Third by a small narrow River, capable however of receiving Vessels of an hundred Tons almost as far as the main River, and at Spring Tides it over-flows and runs into the River *Powhatan*, making the Place a perfect Island, containing about two thousand Acres of firm Land, besides a great deal of marshy Ground; which Situation was look'd upon as a great Security against the Attacks of the *Indians*. The Colony fix at James Town.

The very first Night the *English* landed, the Natives surrounded the Island with their Canoes; but finding our Adventurers upon their guard and ready to receive them they fled. On the 18th of *May*, the *Weroance* *Paspabe*, in whose Country they were settled, came to their Quarters, attended by an hundred armed *Indians*; and observing the *English* stand to their Arms, would have had them laid them down; but the Colony apprehending he had some hostile Intentions refused, and one of his Company stealing a Hatchet, the Person from whom he took it struck the Savage, and took it from him; whereupon his Countrymen were preparing to revenge the Affront, and the *English* to defend their Companion, when the *Weroance* suddenly rose up and departed in a great Rage: However, he sent a Buck to the Fort as a Present soon after, and pretended to be their Friend, offering them

Virginia. them as much of his Country as they desir'd  
 for a Plantation ; but I find the Colony remain'd jealous of this *Weroance*, suspecting he only waited for an Opportunity to surprize them.

Captain  
*Newport*  
 returns to  
*England*.

The Colony  
 reduc'd  
 to great  
 Distress.

On the 15th of *June*, 1607, their Fort was finish'd, being of a triangular Figure, with three Bastions and four or five Pieces of Artillery mounted on each. And now they thought themselves strong enough to resist all the Power of the Natives. They planted also two Pieces of Ground on the Peninsula with *Indian* Corn to serve them the succeeding Winter ; and Captain *Newport*, on the 22d of *June*, 1607, return'd to *England*, leaving in the Colony one hundred and four effective Men, who soon began to find the Want of the Ships, from which they had hitherto purchased Bread, Flower, and strong Liquors, and remain'd in pretty good Health : But the Fruits of the Country being now the principal Part of their Food, and very little good Liquor stirring, many of the Colony fell sick of Fluxes and Fevers, and several dy'd, among whom were Captain *Gosnold*, one of the Council, and some other Gentlemen of Quality ; and others were cut off by the Natives in the Woods, as they wander'd in search of Fruits or Game, and the rest were in a manner shut up and besieg'd in their Fort, where with continual Watching, bad Diet, and Want of good Lodging, they were reduc'd to a very miserable Condition, and by the Month of *September* had bury'd fifty of the Colony : The rest also had perish'd if the Natives had continu'd their Attacks ; but it seems they were now become more pacifick, and consented to traffick with the *English* again, giving them

them Venison, Wild-fowl, Corn, and other Provisions for their Merchandize. But every Man endeavouring to under-sell his Neighbour, and the *Indians* imagining they had been cheated and impos'd upon therefore in their former Bargains, broke off all Commerce and Intercourse with the Colony again, and they were a second time reduc'd to a starving Condition. Whereupon every one turn'd his Eyes upon Captain *Smith* as the only Man that could extricate them out of these Difficulties; and having depos'd their President, they made choice of another, who committed the Conduct of their Affairs entirely to the Captain. This Gentleman having made some Addition to their Fortifications, to secure the Colony against the Attacks of the *Indians*, and made their Houses and Lodgings more commodious, he took seven arm'd Men with him in his Boat, and went down the River in order to purchase Corn of the more distant Tribes of *Indians*, who refusing also to sell him any, he went to their Houses and took their Corn away by Force. Whereupon three or four score of the Savages assembled, and marching with their Idol carry'd before them charg'd the *English* with their Bows and Arrows. The Captain return'd their Compliment with a Volley of his Muskets, loaden with Pistol Shot. Whereupon they ran away, leaving their Idol behind them; and this brought them to a Capitulation, wherein they agreed, That upon restoring their God they would furnish them with as much Corn as they wanted: And having loaded his Boat, he return'd in Triumph to the Fort, where he found the President and some others had form'd a Design to abandon the Plantation, and return

Virginia.

Captain *Smith* goes in search of Provisions.

Takes it by Force from the Natives on their Refusal to sell him any.

A Design form'd to abandon the Fort.

Virginia.



*Smith*  
taken by  
the King  
of *Pow-*  
*hatan*.

His Life  
saved by  
*Pacabunta*  
*Powhaton's*  
Daughter,  
and a  
Peace  
made be-  
tween the  
Natives  
and the  
Colony.

return in the Pinnacle to *England*: But having now Plenty of Corn, and abundance of Wild-fowl in the Rivers, as the Winter came on these Thoughts were laid aside for the present; and Captain *Smith* proceeded on another Expedition to make Discoveries and bring in more Corn for the Colony, in which he had several successful Encounters with the Forces of the *Weroance* of *Powhatan*; but going on Shore in a certain Creek with only two of his Men, he fell into an Ambuscade of his Enemies, the two Men were kill'd, and himself falling into a Bog was taken Prisoner by *Apaconkanough*, *Powhatan's* General, and being brought before that Prince, he order'd his Brains to be beaten out with Clubs, a usual Execution among the Savages: However, his Life was sav'd by the Intercession of *Pacabunta*, *Powhatan's* Daughter, who was so enamour'd with the Captain that she took him in her Arms, and vow'd she would die with him if he suffer'd, and at length prevail'd upon her Father not only to give him his Life but his Liberty, and furnish him with whatever he wanted; and the Captain returning to the Fort was frequently visited by this Lady, who reveal'd to him the Stratagems of his Enemies, and defeated the Designs of the *Indians* against the Fort, tho' 'tis said she was not more than fourteen or fifteen Years of Age when she transacted these Affairs.

In the mean time the Colony had laid another Plot to abandon the Plantation, which the Captain return'd just time enough to prevent; but upon his Arrival, *Powhatan's* People bringing to the Fort great Plenty of Corn, Venison, wild Fowl, and all manner of Provisions, all of them alter'd their Minds, and

and determin'd to wait till they receiv'd fresh Supplies from *Europe*: Nor was it long after Captain *Smith's* Return to the Fort before Captain *Newport* came from *England* with Supplies of Men and Provisions; but the *Phoenix*, commanded by Captain *Nelson*, which came in Company with him till they made the Land of *Virginia*, was driven back as far as the *Caribbee Islands* by stormy Weather, and did not arrive at *James-Town* till some time afterwards.

Captain *Newport* had receiv'd Directions from the Company in *England* to endeavour to cultivate a Friendship with the *Indian* Princes, and particularly with *Powhatan*, who is stiled Emperor by our Adventurers, the rest paying him some kind of Homage, tho' all of them seem to have been Sovereigns in their respective Territories.

To *Powhatan*, therefore, the Company sent a Crown of gilded Copper, a Bed, and Chair of State, with Robes and other Ensigns of Majesty, ordering the Colony to see him solemnly crown'd, upon Condition that he would acknowledge the King of *Great-Britain* his Sovereign, without resigning however any Part of his Dominions to him or his Subjects, except what they should purchase of him or his Vassals for a valuable Consideration; which *Powhatan* agreeing to, Captain *Newport* and Captain *Smith* marched with three or four score more of the Colony to *Powhatan's* Capital, where they crown'd and enthron'd the *Indian* Monarch in the best manner their Circumstances would admit of; and the other Princes, who attended his Coronation, had Presents made them, and promis'd also to acknowledge the King of *Great-Britain* their



Virginia.

Sovereign, several of them accepting of Copper and other Merchandize for such Parts of their respective Territories as they yielded to the *English*; but great Complaints were made by some against Captain *Newport's* Conduct in paying too great a Submission towards *Powhatan*, and suffering him to take all manner of *English* Merchandize at his own Price, whereby the Value of *English* Goods was sunk; and would purchase nothing to any Advantage: And *Powhatan* and his vassal Princes became exceeding insolent in their Demands. The Captain is also censur'd for embezzling the Provisions he brought for the Use of the Colony, and selling those very Provisions the Company sent them at extravagant Prices, making a perfect Tavern of his Ship for three or four Months he remained in the Country, and eating up Part of those Stores with his Seamen which were design'd for the Supply of the Colony, whereby they were reduc'd to great straits as soon as he was gone, and must have perish'd if Captain *Smith* had not taken some extraordinary Measures for their Preservation; for the Colony relying on the late Treaty of Alliance concluded with the *Indians*, imagin'd they should be supply'd with Corn and Flesh from the Country by way of Barter or Truck for their Goods, and had neglected to plant Corn, or lay up any Provisions against a Time of Need; from which they were chiefly diverted by an Affair which they apprehended would make all their Fortunes at once, namely, the gathering the gilded Sand they found in a neighbouring Rivulet, which they took to be Gold, and were so confident of it that they loaded Captain *Newport's* Ship home with it, tho'

The Colony send home common Sand for Gold Dust.

it

it prov'd to their great Disappointment common Dust. But they sent home also certain Specimens of Pitch, Tar, Glass, and Soap-Ashes, which had been made by some *Poles and Germans* the Company hir'd to go to *Virginia* to promote these Manufactures; and these might have turn'd to good Account if the Colony had not been diverted from proceeding in them by other Pursuits.

Virginia.

Pitch,  
Tar, and  
Glass  
made in  
Virginia.

In the mean time Captain *Smith* observing to what low Circumstances the Colony was reduc'd again, and that the *Indians* refus'd to sell them Provisions unless at extravagant Prices, he made several Incurfions into the Country, and compel'd the Natives to bring him in both Corn and Flesh at the former Prices, representing to the Council that the *Indians* were not to be dealt with in any other manner; they must either resolve to abandon the Country or exert their Authority, and shew the *Indians* they were in a Condition to force Provisions from them, if they were refus'd. This he look'd upon as the only way to preserve the Colony from starving, and to plant the Country to Advantage.: And the Council not being able to find out any other Expedients for their Preservation, thought fit to concur in the Captain's Measures. He afterwards proceeded to rebuild *James-Town*, which had been destroy'd by a Fire while he and Captain *Newport* were attending on *Powhatan*. He also caused a sufficient Quantity of *Indian* Corn to be planted, to serve them the following Year: And the Ship *Phoenix* arriving soon after with Provisions from *Europe*, the Colony was now in no Want of any thing. Whereupon Captain *Smith* left the Council to take care of the Fort, and went with a Party

The Eng-  
lish take  
Corn by  
Force  
from the  
Natives.

Virginia.

Captain  
Smith  
makes  
further  
Discoveries.

Defeats  
several  
Indian  
Princes.

upon further Discoveries up the several Bays and Rivers ; at which all the *Indian* Nations were greatly alarm'd, no longer doubting but the Design of the *English* was to make an entire Conquest of their Country, and therefore opposed him wherever they thought themselves strong enough, and laid Ambuscades in the Woods and Bogs to cut off his Retreat ; but he was so fortunate as to escape all their Stratagems, defeated several Bodies of *Indians*, and made *Paspabe* and several more of their Chiefs Prisoners. In these Excursions he discover'd the Country of the *Monacans*, that of the *Acomacks* on the Eastern Side of the Bay of *Chesapeake*, the Nations of *Wicomoco* and *Patowmack*, and even the *Sasquehannab Indians* at the Head of the Bay of *Chesapeake* ; and so harra's'd the Territories of the Emperor *Powhatan* that he and his vassal Princes were glad to make their Submission, and to accept of such a Peace as *Smith* was pleas'd to grant them.

I shall not go about to justify this Conduct of *Smith* any further than it was necessary ; but if we would lay the Saddle upon the right Horse, the original Cause of these Outrages must be ascrib'd either to the Company in *England*, who made so little Provision for the Colony that they had no way to subsist but by Rapine, or upon some of those they employ'd, who took no care to plant Corn, or lay-in Provisions at the proper Seasons, whereby they were reduc'd to the wretched Circumstances already mention'd : And the Roguery of the Captains and Agents employ'd to carry over Supplies to the Colony was still another Occasion of their Distress ; for it seems they frequently apply'd such Stores to their own Use,

Use, and what was worse, sold them to the Colony at extravagant Rates; and under all these Wants and Mismanagements it was no wonder there were Divisions amongst them, which was another Reason they had no better Success, and were forced to plunder the Country instead of planting it. Virginia.

Captain *Smith* observes, that two Thirds of the Adventurers came over with a View of finding every thing provided to their Hands without any Care or Labour of their own, and were subsisted by the Labours of the other industrious Third, till he compell'd them all to take a Share in the Work, and then he soon planted Ground enough to subsist the Colony in Plenty: And by moderate Exercise and good Food saw them not only restor'd to their Healths, but in a very flourishing Condition; and as there was now no longer any Necessity of procuring Food from the *Indians* by Violence, they liv'd and traffick'd very amicably together; and the *Weroances* suffer'd him to make several other Settlements in their Country. When their Affairs were in this prosperous Situation, there arriv'd six or seven Ships from *England*, with between three and four hundred Planters, and such ample Supplies of Ammunition and Provision as would have enabled the Colony to have made an entire Conquest of *Virginia*, or at least to have procur'd what Terms they saw fit of the *Indians*, if they had been under any Command; but as things were manag'd, this Supply only brought the Affairs of the Colony into Confusion.

For the Company in *England* imagining that the Divisions among the Council in *Virginia*, in whom the Government there was lodg'd,

Virginia.



Lord De  
la War  
appointed  
Governor.

Sir George  
Summers  
and the  
two other  
Deputies  
cast away  
on the I-  
lands of  
Bermudas.  
Part of  
their Fleet  
arrive in  
Virginia.

lodg'd, were the Occasion of most of the Mismanagements that had happen'd, procur'd a new Patent from King *James*, whereby they were impower'd to appoint a Governor, with a more ample Authority than they had by the preceding Patent, and prevail'd on the Lord *De la War* to accept of the Government of their new Colony, who thereupon made Sir *Thomas Gates*, Sir *George Summers*, and Captain *Newport* his Deputies till his Arrival: And these Gentlemen set sail from *England* with nine Ships and five hundred Men in the Month of *May*, 1609. All the three Deputy Governors being embark'd in one Ship, were unfortunately cast away on the Islands of *Bermudas*, being then uninhabited, but they and all their People escap'd to the Shore, where finding Plenty of Provisions they took possession of these Islands for the Crown of *England*; and from Sir *George Summers* they have been ever call'd *The Summer Islands*.

In the mean time the rest of their Fleet arriv'd safe in the Bay of *Chesapeake*, with the Re-inforcement abovemention'd, where they found Captain *Smith* President; but gave out they were not oblig'd to obey him, since there was another Commission granted, which had superseded his, and they expected the Arrival of the Deputy Governors every Day.

However, Captain *Smith* kept them in tolerable Order while he remain'd amongst them; and made some new Settlements, particularly at *Nansamund* and the Falls of *James River*; but being unfortunately blown up with Gun-powder, as he was out upon Discovery, he was so mangled and wounded that he was forced to return to *England*; after which there happen'd such Divisions among the *English* again

again that every thing was neglected which tended either to their Defence or Subsistence; and they were reduc'd by the Sword, Sickneſs or Famine, from five hundred to three or four ſcore, when Sir *Thomas Gates* and Sir *George Summers* arriv'd from *Bermudas* to their Relief, having built two Veſſels with ſuch Materials as they found upon that Iſland, to tranſport them and their People to *Virginia*; but meeting with nothing but Complaints from the Colony, and ſeeing little Likelihood of ſucceeding in the Plantation, as they wanted Proviſions and all other Neceſſaries, they agreed to return to *England* with the Colony; and were actually ſailing out of the Bay when the Lord *De la War* arriv'd from *England*, and oblig'd them all to go back to *James-Town*.

The Lord *De la War*, upon his Arrival, reprimanded the Planters for their Diviſions, Idleneſs, and ill Conduct, which had occaſion'd their Miſfortunes, adviſing them to reform, or he ſhould be compell'd to draw the Sword of Juſtice and cut off the Delinquents, declaring, however, he had much rather draw his Sword in their Defence and Protection; and telling them, for their Encouragement, that he had brought them ſuch Plenty of Proviſions that they would be in no danger of wanting for the future, if they were not wanting to themſelves in providing ſuch Things as the Country produced. Then he proceeded to conſtitute a Council, conſiſting of Sir *Thomas Gates*, his Lieutenant General, Sir *George Summers*, his Admiral, the Honourable *George Percy*, one of his Captains, Sir *Ferdinando Weinman*, his Maſter of the Ordinance, and *Chriſtopher Newport*, his Vice-Admiral. Theſe  
and

## THE PRESENT STATE

and the rest of his Officers having taken the Oaths to the Government, and entered on their several Employments, his next Care was to furnish his People with Flesh ; for notwithstanding there were not less than five or six hundred Hogs in the Plantation when Captain *Smith* went to *England*, there was not one left alive at this time : They had been either eaten by the Colony or kill'd by the *Indians*, who, to distress them, had also driven all the Deer and other Game out of the Country ; and the *English* were so ill provided with Nets, that tho' there was Plenty of Fish in their Rivers, they knew not how to take them.

The Company had sent over a Supply of Cloathing, Biscuit, Flower, Beer, and other Liquors ; but taking it for granted that they had Hogs, Venison, Fowl and Fish enough in the Country, had made no Provision of Flesh. Whereupon Sir *George Summers*, the Admiral, was dispatch'd to *Bermudas* to bring over live Hogs from thence ; for these Sir *George* found Plenty of in that Island when he was cast away there, tho' there were no People upon it. The Governor also set some to fishing within the Bay, and others without, where there were Shoals of Cod-fish, but their Nets and Tackle were so defective that they could not catch many ; whereupon he endeavour'd to settle a Correspondence with *Powhatan* and other *Indian* Princes, that he might purchase Flesh of them for *English* Goods, and in some of these Negotiations he succeeded, particularly with the King of *Patowmack*, one of the most potent of the *Indian* Princes. But notwithstanding he represented to *Powhatan* that he had already promised to acknowledge the King of *England* for his Sovereign, accepted  
of

of a Crown and Scepter, and other Ensigns of <sup>Virginia.</sup> Royalty from him, with Presents of great Value, this Prince would give him no other Answer, but that he expected the *English* should depart his Country, or confine themselves within the Limits of *James-Town* Island, and not range through every Part of the Country, as they continued to do, only with a View of subduing it, as he apprehended, threatening to issue his Orders to cut them off and destroy them, if ever they were found without the Limits he prescrib'd them; and commanded the Messengers his Lordship sent to him not to see his Face again unless they brought him a Coach and six Horses, for in these he had been inform'd by some *Indians*, who had been in *England*, their great *Weroances* were drawn in.

*Powhatan* threatens the *English*

The Lord *De la War* finding he was to expect no Friendship from *Powhatan*, determined he should fear him: Having taken an *Indian* Prisoner, therefore, he cut off his Right-hand, and sent him to his Master *Powhatan*, letting him know that he would serve all his Subjects in that manner, and burn all the Corn in his Country (which was ripe at this time) if he did not forbear all Acts of Hostility for the future; which had so good an Effect that the Colony lived in Peace and Plenty for some time, every Day making fresh Discoveries, and forming new Alliances with some *Indian* Princes. And thus the Company's Affairs being happily establish'd again by the Conduct of the Lord *De la War*, Sir *Thomas Gates* was sent to *England* to give an Account of the State of the Colony, the Ships being freighted home with Cedar, black Walnut, and Iron Ore; which Returns ap-  
Vol. XXX. L 11 pear'd

Lord *De la War* brings him to Terms.



Virginia. pear'd so inconsiderable, that the Company were in suspense whether they should not send for the Lord *De la War* and the Colony home: However, they first desir'd Sir *Thomas Gates's* Opinion upon it, who told them, that these were not the only Returns they were to expect; that if they would send over Men who understood how to make Pitch and Tar, and plant Hemp and Flax, they might furnish *England* with all manner of naval Stores; and that it would be very easy also to set up a Manufacture of Silk, the Country abounding in Mulberry-Trees as well as Silk-Grass; that the Soil was exceeding fruitful, producing Corn, Grass, Grapes, and other Fruits in abundance; that *European* Cattle and Poultry multiply'd prodigiouſly, and there was great Plenty of Venison, Fish and Fowl, which they could never want when they should be provided with Boats, Nets, and Engines to take them: The Company need then be at very little Charge to support the Colony. On the contrary, they would in a short time meet with Returns answerable to their Expectations. Whereupon the Company resolv'd to proceed with Alacrity to improve their *Virginian* Plantation; in which Resolution they were confirm'd by the Lord *De la War*, who return'd to *England* about this time (*Anno* 1610.) for the Recovery of his Health.

Naval  
Stores to  
be had in  
*Virginia*.  
And Silk.

Lord *De la War*  
returns to  
*England*.

He acquainted the Company, that he had no Intention to abandon their Service; but as soon as his Health was restor'd he would return to his Government again. In the mean time he had left Mr. *George Percy* his Deputy Governor, a Man of great Honour and Resolution, in whose Conduct they might confide till Sir *Thomas Gates* should return thither:

That

That Captain *Argoll* had settled a Trade with <sup>Virginia.</sup> several of the *Indian* Chiefs ; and for the Defence of the Colony he had erected three Forts more than he found there, viz. two near *Point Comfort*, and a third at the Falls of *James River*, adjoining to which were large Fields he had ordered to be planted with *Indian* Vines, and Roots ; so that there was no Danger of the Colony's being in any Distress for the future, if they were not wanting to themselves.

On the 10th of *May*, 1611, Sir *Thomas Dale* arrived at *Virginia* with three Ships and Supplies of Men, Cattle, and Provisions, and immediately set his People to work to plant Corn (which the Colony had neglected, tho' it was late in the Spring) and had a tolerable good Crop.

Sir *Thomas Gates* arriv'd in *August* following with six Ships, three hundred and fifty Planters, and a proportionable Supply of Cattle, Ammunition and Provisions, taking the Government upon him as Deputy to the Lord *De la War*, who still remain'd sick in *England*. This Gentleman planted and fortify'd *Henrico County*, to the Westward of *James-Town*, and made Lines, defended with Palisadoes, to preserve their Cattle from the *Indians* ; for still King *Powhatan* refused the Alliance of the *English*, and harrafs'd and plunder'd their Plantations which lay expos'd. Whereupon Captain *Argoll* took an Opportunity of surprizing his celebrated Daughter, the Princess *Pacabunta*, in the Year 1612, and carry'd her to *James-Town*, where she was treated however according to her Quality, and the eminent Services she had done the *English* : And still continuing her good Offices, the

*Gates's*  
Admini-  
stration.

Virginia. King her Father was, after two Years, reconciled to the Colony, and consented to her marrying Mr. *John Rolf*, an *English* Gentleman. And had more of our People intermarry'd with the *Indians* I am inclin'd to think it would have been the most effectual Way of establishing the Colony in Peace; for *Powhatan* is said to look upon this Match as a sincere Mark of the Friendship of the *English*. But our Adventurers appear'd unaccountably squeamish in this Particular. They seem'd to despise and abhor such Alliances, which rendered the Natives averse to us afterwards. Whereas, if the *English* had continu'd to intermarry with them, they would in time have become one Nation, and those Massacres and other Calamities that ensu'd had infallibly been avoided. The Natives probably would have embrac'd the Christian Religion voluntarily, as this Princess did. But to proceed.

A Peace between the *English* and King *Powhatan*. A Peace being concluded with King *Powhatan* upon this Marriage, in the Year 1613, the *English* and his Subjects lived in a good Understanding, and traffick'd together for some time: And the *Chickahommony Indians*, another Tribe, by their Example also concluded a Peace with the Colony, which now appear'd in a very flourishing Condition: And in the Year 1616, Sir *Thomas Dale* leaving the Administration of the Government to Captain *Yardly*, return'd to *England*, carrying Mr. *Rolf* and the Princess his Wife with him, where King *James's* Queen and Court paid her the same Honours that were due to a *European* Lady of the same Quality, after they were inform'd by Captain *Smith* what Services she had done the *English* Nation, and particularly how she had saved the Captain's Life

The Princess *Pacabunta* comes to *England*.

Life when his Head was upon the Block. But <sup>Virginia.</sup> it seems before this Princess marry'd Mr. *Rolf*, she had been given to understand that Captain *Smith* was dead ; for he was the first Man she had set her Affections upon, and I make no doubt he had promised to marry her when he was in her Father's Court ; for when he came to wait upon her, on her Arrival in *England*, she appear'd surpris'd, turned away from him with the utmost Scorn and Resentment, and it was some Hours before she would be prevail'd with to speak to him. She could not believe any Man would have deceiv'd her for whom she had done so much, and run so many Hazards ; and when she did vouchsafe to hear his Excuses, she still reproach'd him with Ingratitude. In all her Behaviour, 'tis said, she behav'd herself with great Decency and suitable to her Quality, and mighty Expectations there were of the future Services she would have done the *English* upon her Return to her own Country ; but she was taken ill at *Gravesend*, as she was about to embark for *Virginia*, and dy'd in that Town a very devout Christian, 'tis said, leaving one only Son, named *Thomas Rolf*, whose Posterity now flourish in *Virginia*, and enjoy Lands descended to them as Heirs of the Princess *Pacahuntia*. But to return.

Captain *Yardly*, during his Administration, <sup>Captain Yardly first encourages the planting Tobacco.</sup> first promoted the planting of Tobacco, finding there began to be a great Demand for it in *Europe*, which brought an immediate Gain to the Company ; but 'tis said he did not so much regard the Buildings and Fortifications, and planting of Corn, as he ought to have done. On the contrary, he entered into the greatest Intimacy with the *Indians*, employ'd them

Virginia.

Argoll

Governor.

Lord De  
la War  
dies.The French  
driven  
from New-  
England.  
Powhatan  
dies.Sir George  
Yardly's  
second Go-  
vernment.

them in hunting and fishing for the Colony, and they lived together very sociable in his Time. Captain *Argoll*, who succeeded him, did not approve of this Familiarity and Confidence in the Natives, but repair'd the Forts that were running to decay, and affected to render himself more formidable to the *Indians* than his Predecessor. Both these Gentlemen seem to have been but Deputies to the Lord *De la War*; for in the Year 1618, that Nobleman embark'd again for his Government of *Virginia* with a Re-inforcement of two hundred Men, and Supplies for the Colony; but meeting with contrary Winds, which rendered the Passage more tedious than usual, the Ship's Company became sickly, and his Lordship dy'd in the Voyage, with thirty or forty Planters more that embark'd with him. Whereupon Mr. *Argoll* was continued some time longer in the Government, which he spent in making Discoveries on the Coast of *New-England* and *New-Scotland*, or *Acadia*; and finding the *French* had made some Settlements there he expell'd them from thence, the Crown of *England* claiming those Countries as Parts of *Virginia*. This Year (1618) also died the famous *Powhatan*, being succeeded in his Empire by his Brother *Itopatin*; but he being a weak Prince, *Oppaconcanough*, King of *Chickahommony*, afterwards usurp'd the Empire, reducing several more of the neighbouring *Weroances* under his Dominion; however, both *Oppaconcanough* and *Itopatin* renewed the Peace with the *English* on the Death of *Powhatan*.

Governor *Argoll*, being recall'd from *Virginia* soon after his Expedition to the Northward, left the Administration in the Hands  
of

of Captain *Powel*, to whom Captain *Yardly* succeeded, having been knighted by King *James*. He carried over with him a Re-inforcement of twelve hundred Men, and proportionable Supplies of Cattle and Provisions. I presume the Company were by this time sensible of the Advantage of planting Tobacco; and as Sir *George Yardly* first put them upon it, thought him the properest Person to encourage that Plantation.

Sir *George*, upon his Arrival, apply'd himself to render the Government as like that of *England* as possible. He increased the Number of the Council, intending they should supply the Place of a House of Lords, and summoned an Assembly of Burgesses from every Settlement in the Country. The first Assembly or Parliament sat at *James-Town* in *Virginia*, in *May*, 1620, and then composed but one House, tho' they afterwards separated, and sat as the Parliament do in *England* in two Houses; and Mr. *Beverley* insinuates, that the Views of the upper and lower House have been different ever since.

*Negroes* were first brought over to *Virginia* this Year in a *Dutch Ship*, and proving extremely serviceable in planting Tobacco, more were imported annually from *Guinea*: And now Sir *George* proceeded to parcel out the Lands, allotting to the Company a certain Proportion in several Districts for the Support of the Government; other Portions were allotted for the Use of a College and Schools intended to be erected. Glebes were assign'd in every Parish for the Support of the Ministers, and the Planters had their respective Shares allotted them; whereupon, 'tis said, they became exceeding industrious, and began to vye with

*Virginia.*

The Government settled as in *England*.

The first Assembly, 1620.

*Negroes* first imported.

The Lands parcel'd out among the Planters.

Virginia.

~~~~~

The  
Colony  
flourishes.

with each other in Planting, Building, and other Improvements ; and Encouragements were offered to all such as should come and settle in *Virginia*, and increase the Colony. Whereupon fresh Supplies of Men and Cattle continually arriv'd, and new Settlements were daily made in all Parts of the Country. Salt-works were set up at Cape *Charles*, on the Eastern Shore, and an Iron-work at *Falling-Creek* in *James River*, where they found the Iron Ore good, and had near brought that Work to Perfection. At this time, says my Author, (Mr. *Beverley*) the Fame of the Riches and Plenty in which the *English* liv'd at *Virginia* was exceeding great, and ascribes their Happiness in a great measure to the prudent Conduct of Sir *George Yardly*, but condemns him however for neglecting the Fortifications ; and indeed if he took upon him to parcel out the Lands of the *Indians* among the *English* without their Leave, and gave them no valuable Consideration for them, it could not be expected the Natives should long remain their Friends ; however, during his Government, I meet with no Complaints or Misunderstandings on either Side, which makes me of opinion these Allotments were made with the Consent of the *Indians* ; and if the succeeding Governor had behaved himself in the like friendly manner towards the Natives, possibly none of those Heart-burnings or Massacres which follow'd had ever happen'd.

Wyat'sGo-  
vernment.

Sir *George Yardly's* Government of three Years expiring in the Year 1621, he was succeeded by Sir *Francis Wyat*, a young Gentleman, who arriv'd in *James-Town* in the Month of *October*, with twelve hundred Planters ; and the same Year fifty Men more  
were

were carry'd thither by Captain *Newport*, <sup>Virginia.</sup> whom he planted in a Part of the Country to which he gave his own Name. But there was, it seems, such Quantities of Tobacco exported from *Virginia* at this time, that Orders were sent from *England*, that no Planters should be permitted to send over more than an hundred Weight of Tobacco in one Year. They were advised to apply themselves to the making of Pot-ash and other Manufactures; to plant more Corn, and improve their Stocks of Cattle instead of running too much upon Tobacco.

In the Year 1622, according to Colonel *Beverley*, inferior Courts were first instituted by the General-Assembly under the Name of Country Courts, for the Trial of civil and criminal Causes, reserving an Appeal to the Governor and Council, which remain'd still the supreme Court of Judicature. The Colonel proceeds to give us an Account of the Massacre which happen'd the same Year, wherein he observes, that the great Increase of the Planters, and the long Quiet the *English* had enjoy'd among the *Indians* since the Marriage of the Princess *Pacabunta* with Mr. *Rolf*, had lull'd all Men into a fatal Security. The *English* became every where familiar with the *Indians*, eating, drinking and sleeping amongst them; by which means they were perfectly acquainted with all our *English* Strength and the Use of our Arms, knowing at all times when and where to find our People, whether at home or in the Woods, in Bodies or dispers'd, in Condition of Defence or indefenceable. This exposing of their Weakness gave them Occasion to think more contemptibly of the *English* than otherwise perhaps they would have done, for

Vol. XXX. M m m which



Virginia.

which Reason they became more hardy to attempt any thing against them.

*Oppaconcanough's*  
Plot to  
massacre  
the *Eng-  
lish*.

Thus, upon the Loss of one of their leading Men (a War-Captain, as they call him) who was supposed to be justly put to death however, their King *Oppaconcanough* appear'd enrag'd, and in Revenge laid the Plot of a general Massacre of the *English*, to be executed on the 22d of *March*, 1622, a little before Noon, at a time when our Men were all at work abroad in their Plantations, dispers'd and unarm'd. This Conspiracy was to have taken Effect upon all the several Settlements at one and the same Instant, except on the *Eastern* Shore, whither this Plot did not reach. The *Indians* had been made so familiar with the *English* as to borrow their Boats and Canoes to cross the River when they went to consult with their neighbouring *Indians* upon this execrable Conspiracy; and to colour their Design the better, they brought Presents of Deer, Turkies, Fish, and Fruits to the *English* the Evening before. The very Morning of the Massacre they came freely and unarm'd among them, eating with them, and behaving themselves with the same Freedom and Friendship as formerly till the very Minute they were to put their Plot in Execution; then they fell to work all at once, every where surprising and knocking the *English* on the head, some with their Hatchets, which they call *Tommabauks*, others with the Hoes and Axes of the *English* themselves, shooting at those who escap'd the Reach of their Hands; sparing neither Age nor Sex, but destroying Man, Woman, and Child, according to their cruel Way of leaving none behind to resent the Outrage. But whatever was not done by Surprize that Day  
was

was left undone, and many that made early <sup>Virginia.</sup> Resistance escap'd.

By the Account taken of the Christians <sup>Three</sup> murder'd that Morning, they were found to <sup>hundred</sup> be three hundred and forty seven, most of <sup>and forty</sup> them falling by their own Instruments and <sup>seven</sup> Working-tools. murder'd.

The Massacre had been much more general had not this Plot been providentially discover'd to the *English* some Hours before the Execution. It happen'd thus :

Two *Indians*, that used to be employ'd by <sup>The Con-</sup> the *English* to hunt for them, happen'd to lie <sup>spiracy</sup> together the Night before the Massacre in an <sup>discover'd</sup> *Englishman's* House where one of them was <sup>by an</sup> employ'd. The *Indian* that was the Guest <sup>Indian.</sup> fell to persuading the other to rise and kill his Master, telling him that he would do the same by his own the next Day : Whereupon he discover'd the whole Plot that was design'd to be executed on the morrow. But the other, instead of entering into the Plot and murdering his Master, got up (under Pretence of going to execute his Comrade's Advice) went into his Master's Chamber, and reveal'd to him the whole Story that he had been told. The Master hereupon arose, secured his own House, and before Day got to *James-Town*, which together with such Plantations as could receive Notice time enough, were saved by this Means ; the rest also who happen'd to be watchful in their Defence escaped. Captain *Crosbaw* in his Vessel at *Patowmack* had notice given him by a young *Indian*, by which Means he came off untouch'd.

The Occasion of *Oppaconcanough's* furious Repentment was this : The War-Captain mentioned before to have been killed was called

Virginia.  
The Occa-  
sion of this  
Masſacre.

*Nemattanow.* He was an active *Indian*, a great Warrior, and in much Esteem amongst them; insomuch, that they believed him to be invulnerable and immortal, because he had been in many Conflicts and escaped untouch'd from them all. He was also a very cunning Fellow, and took great Pride in preserving and increasing this their Superstition concerning him, affecting every thing that was odd and prodigious to work upon their Admiration; for which purpose, he would often dress himself up with Feathers after a fantastick Manner, and by much Use of that Ornament obtained among the *English* the Nick-name of *Jack of the Feather*.

*Nemattanow's*  
Character.

This *Nemattanow* coming to a private Settlement of one *Morgan*, who had several Toys, he had a mind to persuade him to go to *Pamunky* to dispose of them. He gave him Hopes what mighty Bargains he might meet with there, and kindly offered him his Assistance. At last *Morgan* yielded to his Persuasion, but was no more heard of; and it is believed that *Nemattanow* killed him by the Way, and took away his Treasure; for within a few Days this *Nemattanow* returned to the same House with *Morgan's* Cap upon his Head, where he found two sturdy Boys, who asked for their Master, and would have had him before a Justice of Peace, but he refused to go, and very insolently abused them; whereupon they shot him down, and as they were carrying him to the Governor he died.

As he was dying he earnestly press'd the Boys to promise him two Things; 1<sup>st</sup>, That they would not tell how he was killed; and, 2<sup>dly</sup>, That they would bury him among the *English*. So great was the Pride of this vain Infidel,

Infidel; that he had no other Views but the being esteemed after his Death (as he had endeavoured to be while he was alive) invulnerable and immortal, tho' his increasing Faintness sufficiently convinced him of the Falsity of both. He imagined, that being buried among the *English* perhaps might conceal his Death from his own Nation, who might think him translated to some happier Country. Thus he pleased himself to the last Gasp with the Boys Promises to carry on the Delusion. The killing this *Indian* Champion was all the Provocation given to that haughty and revengeful Man *Oppaconcanough* to act this bloody Tragedy, and to take such indefatigable Pains to engage in such horrid Villany all the Kings and Nations bordering upon the *English* Settlement on the *Western Shore of Chesapeake*.

This Massacre (adds Mr. *Beverley*) gave the *English* a fair Pretence of endeavouring the total Extirpation of the *Indians*, but more especially of *Oppaconcanough* and his Nation: Accordingly they set themselves about it, making use of the *Roman* Maxim (*Faith is not to be kept with Hereticks*) to obtain their Ends; for after some Months fruitless Pursuit of them who could but too dexterously hide themselves in the Woods, the *English* feigned a Desire of Peace, giving them all manner of fair Words and Promises of Oblivion, designing thereby (as their own Letters now on Record, and their own Actions thereupon prove) to draw the *Indians* home, and entice them to plant their Corn near their Habitations adjoining to those of the *English*, and then to cut it up when the Summer should be too far spent, and so to leave them no Hopes of another Crop that Year; by which Means they proposed to bring them

Virginia.

The *English* act a treacherous Part,

Virginia. them to want Necessaries and starve. And the  
 and mas- *English* did accordingly bring the *Indians* to  
 sacre the plant their Corn at their usual Habitations,  
*Indians* in whereby they gained an Opportunity of repay-  
 their turn. ing them some Part of the Debt in their own  
 coin; for they fell suddenly upon them, cut  
 to pieces such of them as could not make their  
 escape, and afterwards totally destroy'd their  
 Corn.

Another Effect of the Massacre of the *Eng-  
 lish* was the reducing all the Settlements again  
 to six or seven in Number for their better De-  
 fence. Besides, it was such a disheartening to  
 some good Projects, then just advancing, that  
 to this Day they have never been put in exe-  
 cution; namely, the Glass-houses in *James-  
 Town*, and the Iron-work at *Falling-Creek*,  
 which has been already mentioned. The Mas-  
 sacre fell so hard upon this last Place, that  
 none escaped but a Boy and a Girl, who with  
 great Difficulty hid themselves.

The Glass  
 Manufac-  
 ture and  
 Iron-work  
 ruined.

A Lead-  
 Mine dis-  
 cover'd.

The Superintendant of this Iron-work had  
 also discover'd a Vein of Lead-Ore, which he  
 kept private, and made use of to furnish all  
 the Neighbours with Bullets and Shot: But he  
 being cut off with the rest, and the Secret not  
 having been communicated, this Lead-Mine  
 could never after be found, till Colonel *Bird*  
 some Years ago prevailed with an *Indian*, under  
 Pretence of Hunting, to give him a Sign, by  
 dropping his Tommahawk at the Place (he not  
 daring publickly to discover it for fear of be-  
 ing murder'd.) The Sign was accordingly  
 given, and the Company at that time found  
 several Pieces of good Lead-Ore upon the  
 Surface of the Ground, and mark'd the Trees  
 thereabouts; notwithstanding which, I know  
 not by what Witchcraft it happens, but no  
 Mortal

Mortal to this Day could ever find that Place again, tho' it be upon Part of the Colonel's own Possessions ; and so it rests till Time and thicker Settlements discover it.

Thus the Company of Adventurers having, by frequent Acts of Mismanagement, met with vast Losses and Misfortunes, many grew sick of it, and parted with their Shares, and others came into their Places, and promoted the sending in fresh Recruits of Men and Goods ; but the chief Design of all Parties concerned was to fetch away Merchandise from thence, aiming more at sudden Gain than to form any regular Colony, or establish a Settlement in such a manner as to make it a lasting Happiness to the Country.

Several Gentlemen went over upon their particular Stocks, separate from that of the Company, with their own Servants and Goods, each designing to obtain Land from the Government as Captain *Newport* had done, or at least to obtain Patents according to the Regulation for granting Lands to Adventurers ; others sought their Grants of the Company in *London*, and obtained Authorities and Jurisdictions, as well as Land, distinct from the Authority of the Government ; which was the Foundation of great Disorder, and the Occasion of their following Misfortunes. Among others, one Captain *Martin*, having made very considerable Preparations towards a Settlement, obtained a suitable Grant of Land, and was made one of the Council there ; but he grasping still at more, and aiming at Dominion as well as boundless Possessions, caused so many Differences, that at last he put all Things into Distraction ; and the *Indians*, still seeking Revenge, took Advantage of these Dissentions,

Virginia.

Grants to particular Persons independent of the Company.

Occasions Confusion.

Another Massacre and

Virginia.

and fell foul again on the *English*, gratifying their Vengeance with new Blood-shed.

The Company dissolved.

The Crown appoints a Governor, &c.

The fatal Consequences of the Company's Male-Administration cried so loud, that King *Charles I.* coming to the Crown of *England*, express'd a tender Concern for the poor People that had been betray'd thither and lost; upon which Consideration he dissolved the Company in the Year 1626, reducing the Country and Government under his own immediate Direction, appointing the Governor and Council himself, and ordering all Patents and Process to issue in his own Name, reserving to himself a Quit-Rent of two Shillings for every hundred Acres of Land, and so *pro rata*.

The Country being thus taken into the King's Hands, his Majesty was pleased to re-establish the Constitution by a Governor, Council and Assembly, and to confirm the former Methods and Jurisdictions of the several Courts, as they had been appointed in the Year 1620, and placed the last Resort in the Assembly. He likewise confirmed the Rules and Orders made by the first Assembly for apportioning the Land and granting Patents to particular Adventurers.

This was a Constitution according to their Hearts Desire, and Things seemed now to go on in a happy Course for Encouragement of the Colony: People flocked over thither apace, every one took up Land by Patent to his liking, and, not minding any thing but to be Masters of great Tracts of Land, they planted themselves separately on their several Plantations; nor did they fear the *Indians*, but kept them at a greater distance than formerly; and they, for their Parts, seeing the

*English*

*English* so sensibly increase in Number, were glad to keep their distance and be peaceable. Virginia.

This Liberty of taking up Land, and the Ambition each Man had of being Lord of a vast, tho' unimproved Territory, together with the Advantage of the many Rivers which afford a commodious Road for Shipping at every Man's Door, has made the Country fall into such an unhappy Settlement and Course of Trade, that to this Day they have not any one Place of Cohabitation among them that may reasonably bear the Name of a Town.

The Constitution being thus firmly established, and continuing its Course regularly for some time, People began to lay aside all Fears of any future Misfortune. Several Gentlemen of Condition went over with their whole Family, some for bettering their Estates, others for Religion, and other Reasons best known to themselves; among these the noble *Cecilus Calvert*, Lord *Baltimore*, a Roman-Catholick, thought, for the more quiet Exercise of his Religion, to retire with his Family into that new World; for this purpose, he went to *Virginia*, to try how he liked the Place; but the People there looked upon him with an evil Eye, on account of his Religion, for which alone he sought this Retreat, and by their ill Treatment, discouraged him from settling in that Country.

Upon that Provocation his Lordship resolved upon a farther Adventure, and finding Land enough up the Bay of *Chesapeake*, which was likewise blest with many brave Rivers, and as yet altogether uninhabited by the *English*, he began to think of making a new Plantation of his own; and for his more certain Direction in obtaining a Grant of it, he



*Virginia.* undertook a Journey Northward, to discover the Land up the Bay, and observe what might most conveniently square with his Intem.

*Lord Baltimore obtains a Grant of Maryland.* His Lordship finding all Things in this Discovery according to his Wish returned to *England*; and because the *Virginia* Settlements at that time reached no farther than the South-side of *Patowmack-River*, his Lordship got a Grant of the Propriety of *Maryland*, bounding it to the South by *Patowmack-River* on the Western Shore, and by a Line from *Point Look-out* on the Eastern Shore; but died himself before he could embark for the promised Land.

*Maryland* had the Honour to receive its Name from Queen *Mary*, Royal Consort of King *Charles I.*

The old Lord *Baltimore* being thus taken off, and leaving his Designs unfinish'd, his Son and Heir, in the Year 1633, obtained a Grant or Patent, and went over in Person to plant this new Colony.

By this unhappy Accident a Country which Nature had so well contrived for one became two separate Governments. This produced a most unhappy Inconvenience to both; for these two being the only Countries under the Dominion of *England* that plant Tobacco in any Quantity, the ill Consequence to both is, that when one Colony goes about to prohibit the Traff or mend the Staple of that Commodity, to help the Market, then the other, to take the Advantage of that Market, pours into *England* all they can make, both good and bad, without Distinction. This is very injurious to the other Colony, which had voluntarily suffer'd so great a Diminution in the Quantity to mend the Quality; and this is  
noto-

notoriously manifested from that incomparable *Virginia* Law appointing sworn Agents to examine their Tobacco. Virginia.

Neither was this all the Mischief that happen'd to *Virginia* upon this Grant, for the Example of it had dreadful Consequences, and was in the end one of the Occasions of another Massacre of the *Indians*; for this Precedent of my Lord *Baltimore's* Grant, which intrenched upon the Charters and Bounds of *Virginia*, was Hint enough for other Courtiers (who never intended a Settlement as my Lord did) to find out something of the like Kind to make Money of. This was the Occasion of several very large Defalcations from *Virginia*, within a few Years afterwards, which were forwarded and assisted by the Contrivance of the Governor Sir *John Harvey*; insomuch, that Other not only the Land itself, Quit-Rents and all, but the Authorities and Jurisdictions that belonged to that Colony, were given away; nay, *Virginia* sometimes in those Grants he included the very separated from it. Settlements that had been before made.

As this Gentleman was irregular in this, so he was very unjust and arbitrary in his other Methods of Government: He exacted with Rigour the Fines and Penalties which the unwary Assemblies of those Times had given chiefly to himself, and was so haughty and furious to the Council and the best Gentlemen of the Country, that his Tyranny grew at last insupportable; so that in the Year 1639 the Council sent him Prisoner to *London*, and with him two of their Number to maintain the Articles against him. This News being brought to King *Charles I.* his Majesty was very much displeased, and without hearing any thing caused him to return Governor again; but by

Virginia. the next Shipping he was graciously pleas'd to change him; and so made amends for this Man's Male-Administration, by sending the good and just Sir *William Berkeley* to succeed him.

A third  
Massacre.

While these Things were transacting there was so general a Dissatisfaction, occasion'd by the Oppressions of Sir *John Harvey*, and the Difficulties in getting him out, that the whole Colony was in Confusion. The subtle *Indians*, who took all Advantages, resent'd the Incroachments upon them by his Grants: They saw the *English* uneasy and disunited among themselves, and, by the Direction of *Oppaconcanough* their King, laid the Ground-work of another Massacre, wherein by Surprise they cut off near five hundred Christians more. But this Execution did not take so general Effect as formerly, because the *Indians* were not so frequently suffered to come among the inner Habitations of the *English*; and therefore the Massacre fell severest on the South-side of *James-River*, and on the Heads of the other Rivers, but chiefly of *York-River*, where this *Oppaconcanough* kept the Seat of his Government.

*End of the Thirtieth Volume.*

T H E

---

T H E  
T A B L E  
T O T H E  
Third Volume of *AMERICA*.

A

|                                                                                                    |                                                                            |
|----------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|----------------------------------------------------------------------------|
| <b>A</b> COMAC, a Country<br>of Virginia Page 329                                                  | <i>Dies in an Attempt to subdue<br/>it</i> <i>ibid.</i>                    |
| AFRICA, the Ancients knew<br>nothing of it beyond the<br>Equator 1                                 | Peter de Orsua attempts to<br>discover this Country 209                    |
| Objections to this Opinion 2                                                                       | Two Friars successful in dis-<br>covering it 210                           |
| Farther Reasons to shew the<br>Ancients never sail'd round<br>Africa 11                            | Texeira sails up the River<br>to Peru <i>ibid.</i>                         |
| Almagro's Expedition to Chili<br>83                                                                | The Sources of the River<br>Amazon 211                                     |
| AMAZON Country 197                                                                                 | Its Course and Magnitude<br><i>ibid.</i>                                   |
| The Situation and Extent<br>198                                                                    | The Air, Winds and Seasons<br>of the Amazon Country<br>212                 |
| The River Amazon disco-<br>vered by Gonzalo Pizar-<br>ro <i>ibid.</i>                              | Trees and Fruits <i>ibid.</i>                                              |
| The Difficulties of the first<br>Discovery 199                                                     | Corn, Roots and Plants <i>ibid.</i>                                        |
| Orellana with fifty Soldiers<br>embarks on Board a Bri-<br>gantine, and runs down<br>the River 205 | Animals <i>ibid.</i>                                                       |
| Sails to Spain, and obtains<br>the Government of the<br>Amazon Country 207                         | Persons of the Natives 213                                                 |
|                                                                                                    | Their Genius, Habits, Go-<br>vernment and Wars <i>ibid.</i>                |
|                                                                                                    | Their Religion 214                                                         |
|                                                                                                    | No Gold in this Country <i>ib.</i>                                         |
|                                                                                                    | America possess'd by the Spani-<br>ards alone for one hundred<br>Years 247 |
|                                                                                                    | Andes of Chili 34, 37                                                      |
|                                                                                                    | Animals of Brazil 284                                                      |
|                                                                                                    | <i>Animals</i>                                                             |

## The T A B L E.

|                                                        |               |
|--------------------------------------------------------|---------------|
| <i>Animals of Chili</i>                                | 70            |
| <i>Animals of La Plata</i>                             | 188           |
| <i>Animals of Virginia</i>                             | 339           |
| <i>Animals of Hispaniola and the Spanish Islands</i>   | 222, 223, 230 |
| <i>Animals of the Amazon Country</i>                   | 212           |
| <i>Angol, a City of Chili</i>                          | 56            |
| <i>Aranco, a Town and Country of Chili</i>             | ibid.         |
| <i>Argol, Governor, his Administration in Virginia</i> | 451           |
| <i>Assembly, or Parliament, the first in Virginia</i>  | 455           |
| <i>Affumption, a Town of La Plata</i>                  | 177           |
| <i>Augustin Cape in Brazil</i>                         | 265           |

### B

|                                                 |          |
|-------------------------------------------------|----------|
| <b>B</b> AHIA, a Port and Province of Brazil    | 265, 268 |
| Baldivia. <i>See</i> Valdivia                   | 53       |
| Baltimore, Lord, obtains a Grant of Maryland    | 466      |
| Bermudas Islands discover'd by Summer and Gates | 446      |
| Brewer's Harbour                                | 107      |
| BRAZIL, its Situation                           | 256      |
| <i>The Name and Face of the Country</i>         | 257      |
| <i>Springs, Lakes and Rivers</i>                | ib.      |
| <i>The Sea, Harbours and Capes</i>              | 258      |
| <i>Air, Winds and Seasons</i>                   | ib.      |
| <i>The Provinces and Towns of Brazil</i>        | 261      |
| <i>Captainship of Bahia</i>                     | 265      |
| <i>Trade and Shipping</i>                       | 261      |
| <i>The Voyage from Portugal to Brazil</i>       | 270      |

|                                                                   |       |
|-------------------------------------------------------------------|-------|
| <i>From Brazil to Guinea</i>                                      | ib.   |
| <i>Whale-Fishery</i>                                              | 271   |
| <i>Ship-building</i>                                              | ibid. |
| <i>The Way of Life of the Portuguese at Bahia</i>                 | ibid. |
| <i>Carriages and Visits</i>                                       | 272   |
| <i>Artificers</i>                                                 | ibid. |
| <i>Slaves</i>                                                     | 273   |
| <i>Diamonds and other precious Stones</i>                         | 278   |
| <i>Towns, Houses and Furniture of the Natives</i>                 | ibid. |
| <i>Some vagrant Nations</i>                                       | 279   |
| <i>Two great Nations of the Brazilians</i>                        | 280   |
| <i>Tapuyers, their Persons</i>                                    | ib.   |
| <i>They wear no Cloaths</i>                                       | ib.   |
| <i>Ornaments</i>                                                  | 281   |
| <i>Tupinambes, their Persons and Food</i>                         | ibid. |
| <i>Arts and Sciences</i>                                          | 282.  |
| <i>Animals, those of Europe carried thither</i>                   | 284.  |
| <i>Beasts and Fowls proper to this Country</i>                    | ibid. |
| <i>Serpents and Insects</i>                                       | 285   |
| <i>Fish</i>                                                       | 287   |
| <i>Amphibious Animals</i>                                         | ibid. |
| <i>Vegetables of Brazil</i>                                       | 288   |
| <i>Minerals</i>                                                   | 295   |
| <i>The History of Brazil</i>                                      | 296   |
| <i>Knivet's Account of Canibals, Giants, Monsters, &amp;c.</i>    | 298   |
| <i>The Religion of the Brazilians</i>                             | 301   |
| <i>Marriages and Funerals</i>                                     | 303   |
| <i>Wars and Arms</i>                                              | 304   |
| <i>The Dutch take Olinda and the whole Province of Pernambuco</i> | 305   |
| <i>Count Maurice Governor of Dutch</i>                            |       |

## The TABLE.

|                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                               |                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                              |
|---------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|----------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|
| <p>Dutch Brazil            <i>ibid.</i><br/> <i>Reduces three Provinces more</i>    306<br/> <i>The present Inhabitants of</i><br/> <i>Brazil</i>                    <i>ibid.</i><br/> <i>The Force of the Portuguese</i><br/> <i>there</i>                    308<br/> <b>BRITISH PLANTATIONS,</b><br/> <i>their Situation and Extent</i>    311<br/> <i>The several Provinces</i>    312<br/> <i>Buccaneers, their Original</i>    235<br/> <i>Buenos Ayres</i>            176</p> <p style="text-align: center;"><b>C</b></p> <p><b>CANIBALS, &amp;c. Knivet's</b><br/> <i>Account of them</i>            298<br/> <i>Cape Henry and Cape Charles</i><br/> <i>in Virginia</i>                434<br/> <i>Castro Town</i>                55<br/> <b>CAUPOLICAN, General of the</b><br/> <i>Chilese</i>                    88<br/> <i>Taken and put to death</i>    93<br/> <i>Chesapeake, a Country and Bay</i><br/> <i>in Virginia</i>                316<br/> <b>CHILI, its Name</b>            33<br/> <i>Situation, Extent and Face</i><br/> <i>of the Country</i>            34<br/> <i>Weather on the Andes</i>    39<br/> <i>Springs and Rivers</i>        43<br/> <i>Baths</i>                      44<br/> <i>Lakes and Rivers</i>          45<br/> <i>Ports, Seas, Winds and</i><br/> <i>Tides</i>                      47<br/> <i>Seasons</i>                    48<br/> <i>Provinces and chief Towns</i>    51<br/> <i>Buildings of the Chilefians</i>    58<br/> <i>Natives of Cuyo no fixed</i><br/> <i>Abode</i>                      59</p> | <p><i>Fortresses</i>                60<br/> <i>Their Persons and Habits</i>    61<br/> <i>Their Ornaments</i>          63<br/> <i>Genius and Temper</i>        64<br/> <i>Their Food and Diversions</i>    65<br/> <i>Exercifes, Learning and Phy-</i><br/> <i>sick</i>                        67<br/> <i>Their Aversion to Servitude</i>    68<br/> <i>Animals of Chili</i>          70<br/> <i>Vegetables of Chili</i>        73<br/> <i>European Fruits</i>          75<br/> <i>Mines</i>                      76<br/> <i>Foreign Trade</i>            77<br/> <i>The Difference between Cuyo</i><br/> <i>and Chili Proper</i>          78<br/> <i>The Defarts of Pampas</i>    79<br/> <i>The History of Chili</i>        82<br/> <i>Almagro's Expedition thi-</i><br/> <i>ther</i>                        83<br/> <i>Valdivia's Invasion</i>        <i>ibid.</i><br/> <i>The Civil Wars of the Spa-</i><br/> <i>niards in Chili</i>            85<br/> <i>The Chilefians revolt</i>        87<br/> <i>The Spaniards routed</i>        90<br/> <i>Valdivia taken and executea</i><br/> <i>ibid.</i>                        <i>ibid.</i><br/> <i>The Chilefians obtain a si-</i><br/> <i>cond Victory</i>                92<br/> <i>The Spaniards driven out of</i><br/> <i>all Chili almost</i>            93<br/> <i>Six Spanifh Towns taken by</i><br/> <i>them</i>                        94<br/> <i>Remarks on thefe Calamities</i><br/> <i>95</i><br/> <i>The Hollanders attempt to</i><br/> <i>settle Colonies in Chili</i>    <i>ib.</i><br/> <i>A Treaty between the Dutch</i><br/> <i>and the Chilefians</i>        102<br/> <i>The Dutch abandon Chili</i><br/> <i>106</i></p> |
|---------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|----------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|

## The T A B L E.

|                                 |                              |          |
|---------------------------------|------------------------------|----------|
| Narborough's Voyage thither     | <i>Trees and Fruits</i>      | 222, 224 |
| Anno 1669                       | CUMBERLAND, Earl, takes      |          |
| Magellanick Streights           | Porto Rico                   | 242      |
| The Account the Spaniards       | Loses his Men by Sicknefs,   |          |
| give of the State of Chili      | and forced to quit it        | ibid.    |
|                                 | Cuyo, a Province of Chili    | 57       |
| Remarks on the Spanish Ac-      |                              |          |
| counts of America               | D                            |          |
| Chili described                 | DARIEN, Isthmus, the Ad-     |          |
| Governor Pullen proposes set-   | vantage of erecting Forts    |          |
| tling Colonies in Chili         | thereon                      | 166      |
| Captain Pain's Remarks on       | Daries, Virginia             | 383      |
| Chili                           | De la War, Lord, made Go-    |          |
| The Author's Remarks on Go-     | vernor of Virginian          | 446      |
| vernor Pullen's Project of      | His prudent Administration   |          |
| settling Colonies in Chili      |                              | 447      |
|                                 | His Death                    | 454      |
| Chiloe Island                   | Defire, a Port of Patagonia  | 118      |
| Comfort Cape or Point in Vir-   | Diamonds and other precious  |          |
| ginia                           | Stones lately discover'd in  |          |
| Conception City                 | Brazil                       | 278, 295 |
| Copiapo Town                    | Domingo, St. the Capital of  |          |
| Coquimbo Town                   | Hispaniola                   | 272      |
| Croatan, an Island on the Coast | DRAKE repulsed at Porto-     |          |
| of Carolina                     | Rico                         | 241      |
| CROMWELL attempts the Con-      | Brings Sir Walter Raleigh's  |          |
| quest of Hispaniola             | first Colony from the Island |          |
| His Forces reduce Jamaica ib.   | of Roanoak in Virginia       | 405      |
| C U B A, Situation and Ex-      | DUTCH attempt to settle      |          |
| tent                            | Colonies in Chili            | 95       |
| Face of the Country, Rivers,    | A Treaty between them and    |          |
| Harbours and Seasons            | the Chilefians               | 102      |
| Chief Towns                     | The Dutch abandon Chili      | 106      |
| St. Jago                        | They take Olinda and the     |          |
| The Havana                      | whole Province of Per-       |          |
| Some Description of the Peo-    | nambuco                      | 385      |
| ple                             | Count Maurice, Governor of   |          |
| Fortifications of the Havana    | Dutch Brazil                 | ibid.    |
|                                 | Reduces                      |          |
| Churches and Weather            |                              |          |
| Forts                           |                              |          |
| Animals                         |                              |          |

# The T A B L E.

*Reduces three Provinces more*

306

## E

**ELIZABETH**, a County  
in Virginia 327  
Essex, a County in Virginia  
328

## F

**FAITH**, St. a City of La  
Plata 176  
Ferdinando, John, Island 134  
The Plantation of it by the  
English proposed 135  
Florida, the French settle there  
247  
France, its Ports and Planta-  
tions in Hispaniola 228  
Fronteira, St. John, a Town of  
Chili 57

## G

**GARDENS** and Orchards  
in Virginia 388  
Gates, Sir Thomas, cast away  
on the Islands of Bermudas  
446  
Gilbert and Gofnold, their  
Voyage to Virginia 422  
Glocester, a County in Virgi-  
nia 328  
Government of Virginia mo-  
delled after that of England  
455  
Greenville, Sir Edward, car-  
ries a Colony to Virginia 401  
Guasco, a Port-Town of Chili  
56  
Guayra, a Province of La  
Plata 174  
Vol. XXX.

## H

**HAVANA**, a celebrated  
Town and Harbour in the  
Island of Cuba 217, 219  
Henrico, a Virginian County  
325

**HISPANIOLA ISLAND**,  
the Name, Situation, Ex-  
tent and Face of the Coun-  
try 272  
Subdivision and chief Towns  
ibid.  
Towns in Hispaniola subject  
to the French 228  
The various Complexions of  
the People of the Island  
229  
The Beasts, Birds, Fowls,  
Fishes and Insects 230  
Their Vegetables and Sugar-  
works 231  
History of Chili 82  
History of La Plata 190  
History of Hispaniola 232  
History of the Island of Porto-  
Rico 239  
History of Virginia 392

## I

**JAGO**, St. the Capital of  
Chili 91  
Jago, St. Capital of Cuba 217  
JAMES I. King of Great-  
Britain, his Patent for plant-  
ing Virginia, An. 1606 430  
James Town in Virginia, the  
first English Colony establish'd  
in America 248, 324  
Jesuites sent abroad well quali-  
fied 193  
O o o Jesuites



## The TABLE.

|                                                                                            |              |                                                                                            |              |
|--------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|--------------|--------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|--------------|
| <i>Jesuites Sovereigns of La Plata</i>                                                     | <i>ibid.</i> | <i>Massacre of the English in Virginia by the Natives</i>                                  | 458          |
| <i>Imperial, a City of Chili</i>                                                           | 54           | <i>Massacre of the Natives by the English</i>                                              | 462          |
| <i>Indian Corn, some Account of it</i>                                                     | 377          | <i>Mendoza, a Town of Chili</i>                                                            | 57           |
| <i>John Fernando, an Island on the South-Sea</i>                                           | 134          | <i>Middlesex, a County in Virginia</i>                                                     | 328          |
| <i>Iron Mines and Iron Works in Virginia</i>                                               | 456          | <i>Mines of Gold, &amp;c. in Chili</i>                                                     | 37, 76       |
| <i>Julian, St. a Port in Patagonia</i>                                                     | 112          | <i>Mines of Gold, Diamonds, &amp;c. in Brazil</i>                                          | 293          |
| K                                                                                          |              | <i>Mines of Iron and Lead in Virginia</i>                                                  | 462          |
| <b>K</b> ENT, a County in Virginia                                                         | 327          | <i>Mocking-Bird</i>                                                                        | 365          |
| <i>King William County in Virginia</i>                                                     | <i>ibid.</i> | N                                                                                          |              |
| <i>King and Queen County in Virginia</i>                                                   | 328          | <b>N</b> Ansamund, a County in Virginia                                                    | 326          |
| L                                                                                          |              | <i>Narborough, Capt. his Voyage to Chili</i>                                               | 107, 124     |
| <b>L</b> ANCASTER County in Virginia                                                       | 329          | <i>Naval Stores, the Produce of Virginia</i>                                               | 391          |
| <i>La Plata. See Plata.</i>                                                                |              | <i>Negroes first carried to Virginia</i>                                                   | 455          |
| <i>Lewis, St. a Port-Town belonging to the French in Hispaniola</i>                        | 228          | <i>Nemattanow, a Virginian Champion, killed, which occasions a Massacre of the English</i> | 460          |
| <i>Logane, a French Port in Hispaniola</i>                                                 | <i>ibid.</i> | <i>Newfoundland Fishery begun</i>                                                          | 247          |
| <i>London Company, incorporated by a Patent from K. James I. send Colonies to Virginia</i> | 433          | <i>Newport, Capt. carries over the first Colony to James Town in Virginia</i>              | 433          |
| M                                                                                          |              | <i>Norfolk, a County in Virginia</i>                                                       | 326          |
| <b>M</b> agellanick Streights described                                                    | 117, 129     | <i>Northampton, a County in Virginia</i>                                                   | 329          |
| <i>Manufactures of Glass, &amp;c. in Virginia</i>                                          | 443          | <i>Northumberland, a County in Virginia</i>                                                | <i>ibid.</i> |
| <i>Maryland granted to Lord Baltimore</i>                                                  | 466          |                                                                                            | O            |

# The TABLE.

## O

|                                                                                 |     |
|---------------------------------------------------------------------------------|-----|
| <b>OLINDA</b> , a City of Brazil                                                | 264 |
| Oppaconcanough, a Virginian King, his Plot to massacre the English              | 458 |
| Orchards and Gardens in Virginia                                                | 380 |
| Orellana first sails down the River Amazon, and procures a Grant of the Country | 205 |
| Oromante, a Town of Chili                                                       | 57  |
| Orfua, Peter, his Voyage down the River Amazon                                  | 209 |
| Oforno, a Port-Town in Chili                                                    | 55  |

## P

|                                                                                        |          |
|----------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|----------|
| <b>PACAHUNTA</b> , Princess, the Daughter of Powhatan, saves the Life of Captain Smith | 440      |
| Her Friendship for the English                                                         | ibid.    |
| She marries Mr. Rolf, an English Gentleman                                             | 452      |
| Makes Peace between her Father and the English                                         | ibid.    |
| She comes over to England, and dies here                                               | 452, 453 |
| <b>PAIN</b> 's Observations on Spanish America                                         | 155      |
| Pampa's, Desarts in Chili                                                              | 79       |
| Paragua. See Plata                                                                     | 168      |
| Parana River                                                                           | 171      |
| Parana Province                                                                        | 175      |
| Patagonia, the most Southern                                                           |          |

## Province of South-America

|                                                        |              |
|--------------------------------------------------------|--------------|
|                                                        | 58, 113, 131 |
| Patowmack, a River in Virginia                         | 466          |
| Paul's, St. a Town near the Mines in Brazil            | 277          |
| Penguins describ'd                                     | 116          |
| Pernambuco, a Province of Brazil                       | 263          |
| Petitguaves, a French Port on the Island of Hispaniola | 228          |
| Pizarro Gonzalo, discovers the River Amazon            | 199          |
| Plantations British. See British Plantations           | 311          |
| <b>PLATA</b> or <b>PARAGUA</b>                         |              |
| The Name, Situation, Extent, and Face of the Country   | 168          |
| Its Seas, Lakes, Rivers and Seasons                    | 170          |
| The Provinces, chief Towns and Buildings               | 174          |
| Indian Towns in La Plata                               | 178          |
| The Persons and Habits of the Natives                  | 181          |
| Their Genius and Temper, Food and Exercises            | 182          |
| Their Husbandry, Plants, Animals, and Minerals         | 184          |
| The History of La Plata                                | 190          |
| The Jesuites Sovereigns of Part of La Plata            | 193          |
| The Religion and Marriages of the Natives              | 194          |
| <b>PORTO RICO</b> Island                               |              |
| Its Situation, Extent, and Face of the Country         | 237          |
| Winds and Seasons                                      | 238          |

### The T A B L E.

|                                                                                                                                                              |          |                                                                                                                     |       |
|--------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|----------|---------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|-------|
| <i>Chief Towns</i>                                                                                                                                           | ibid.    | Raphanock, a River in Virginia                                                                                      | 310   |
| <i>History of the Island</i>                                                                                                                                 | 239      | <i>Rattle-Snakes</i>                                                                                                | 345   |
| <i>Affaulted by Drake</i>                                                                                                                                    | 241      | Richmond and Stafford Counties in Virginia                                                                          | 328   |
| <i>Porto Rico Town taken by the Earl of Cumberland</i>                                                                                                       | 242      | Rio Janeiro Province and River of Brazil                                                                            | 276   |
| <i>Produce of the Country</i>                                                                                                                                | 243      | Roanok, an Island on the Coast of Carolina, where the first Colonies of the English were settled and left to perish | 399   |
| POWHATON, the Virginian King or Emperor, takes Captain Smith Prisoner                                                                                        | 440      | S.                                                                                                                  |       |
| <i>He spares his Life, and sends him back with Honour at the Intercession of his Daughter Pacahunta</i>                                                      | ib.      | SALVADOR, St. the Capital of Brazil                                                                                 | 265   |
| <i>Powhatan is crown'd by the English, and acknowledges King James his Sovereign</i>                                                                         | 441      | Seal Island on the Coast of Patagonia                                                                               | 111   |
| <i>He afterwards proves an Enemy to the English, but makes Peace with them on the Marriage of his Daughter Pacahunta with Mr. Rolf, an English Gentleman</i> | 451, 452 | Seals describ'd                                                                                                     | ibid. |
| Prince George and Prince Charles Counties in Virginia                                                                                                        | 326      | Sebastian, St. a Town of Brazil                                                                                     | 276   |
| Princess Anne County in Virginia                                                                                                                             | ibid.    | Serpents. See Snakes                                                                                                |       |
|                                                                                                                                                              |          | Silk Grass in Virginia                                                                                              | 391   |
|                                                                                                                                                              |          | Slaves in Brazil                                                                                                    | 273   |
|                                                                                                                                                              |          | Smith, Captain, his Services in settling and protecting the Colony of James-Town in Virginia                        | 443   |
|                                                                                                                                                              |          | Taken Prisoner by King Powhatan                                                                                     | 440   |

R.

|                                  |                                  |
|----------------------------------|----------------------------------|
| <b>R</b> ALEGH, Sir Walter       | Snakes and Serpents 205, 343,    |
| <i>Sends Colonies to Vir-</i>    | 350                              |
| <i>ginia</i>                     | SPANIARDS and Spaniſh            |
| 394                              | America 245                      |
| <i>His Patent for it granted</i> | Spaniſh Accounts of the State of |
| <i>by Queen Elizabeth, An-</i>   | Chili, with Remarks upon         |
| <i>no 1584</i>                   | <i>them</i> 122, 126, 253        |
| <i>ibid.</i>                     | Spaniſh Iſlands in America de-   |
| <i>He leaves the Colonies he</i> | <i>ſcribed</i> 215               |
| <i>ſent thither to periſh</i>    | <i>The</i>                       |
| 412                              |                                  |

## The TABLE.

|                                                                                           |          |                                                                    |          |
|-------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|----------|--------------------------------------------------------------------|----------|
| <i>The Spaniards almost driven out of Chili by the Natives</i>                            | 93, 98   | Vipers. See Snakes.                                                |          |
| <i>Spirito Sancto, a Province of Brazil</i>                                               | 275      | <b>VIRGINIA</b>                                                    | 314.     |
| <i>Sugar Plantations of the French and Spaniards in Hispaniola prejudicial to Britain</i> | 231      | <i>The Face of the Country</i>                                     | 315      |
| <i>Sugar of Brazil</i>                                                                    | 269      | <i>Its Capes, Bays, Seas, Rivers, Springs, and Lakes</i>           | 316, 317 |
| <i>Summers, Sir George, cast away on the Islands of Bermudas</i>                          | 446      | <i>The Air and Seasons</i>                                         | 318      |
|                                                                                           |          | <i>Diseases and Remedies</i>                                       | 319, 338 |
|                                                                                           |          | <i>Terrible Thunder</i>                                            | 320      |
|                                                                                           |          | <i>Provinces and chief Towns</i>                                   | 323      |
|                                                                                           |          | <i>Their Persons, Habits, Genius and Temper</i>                    | 332, 333 |
|                                                                                           |          | <i>Arts and Sciences</i>                                           | 335      |
|                                                                                           |          | <i>Food and Diversions</i>                                         | 336, 337 |
|                                                                                           |          | <i>Animals</i>                                                     | 339      |
|                                                                                           |          | <i>Birds</i>                                                       | 361      |
|                                                                                           |          | <i>Soil and Vegetables</i>                                         | 375      |
|                                                                                           |          | <i>Corn and Husbandry</i>                                          | 377      |
|                                                                                           |          | <i>History of Virginia</i>                                         | 392      |
|                                                                                           |          | <i>Discover'd by Cabot</i>                                         | ibid.    |
|                                                                                           |          | <i>Mr. Raleigh first attempted to fix Colonies there</i>           | 394      |
|                                                                                           |          | <i>Mr. Raleigh's Patent to send Colonies to America</i>            | ibid.    |
|                                                                                           |          | <i>Two Ships sent to Virginia</i>                                  | 397      |
|                                                                                           |          | <i>An inoffensive hospitable People</i>                            | 400      |
|                                                                                           |          | <i>A second Voyage by Sir Edward Greenville</i>                    | 401      |
|                                                                                           |          | <i>He burns an Indian Town</i>                                     | ib.      |
|                                                                                           |          | <i>He sails to the Island of Roanok</i>                            | ibid.    |
|                                                                                           |          | <i>Sir Edward leaves a Colony at Roanok and returns to England</i> | 402      |
|                                                                                           |          | <i>They discover as far as Chesapeake to the North</i>             | ibid.    |
|                                                                                           |          | <i>The Indians enter into a Confederacy</i>                        |          |
| <b>T.</b>                                                                                 |          |                                                                    |          |
| <b>TAPIA, a Town of La Plata</b>                                                          | 175      |                                                                    |          |
| <b>Tapuyers, a Nation of North-Brazil</b>                                                 | 280      |                                                                    |          |
| <b>Terra del Fogo, the most Southerly Part of South-America</b>                           | 117, 130 |                                                                    |          |
| <b>Tobacco, the planting it in Virginia first encouraged by Sir George Yardly</b>         | 453      |                                                                    |          |
| <b>Tucuman, a Province of La Plata</b>                                                    | 175      |                                                                    |          |
| <b>Tupinambes, a Nation of South-Brazil.</b>                                              | 281      |                                                                    |          |
| <b>V.</b>                                                                                 |          |                                                                    |          |
| <b>VALDIVIA, or Baldivia, his Conquest of Chili</b>                                       | 83       |                                                                    |          |
| <i>He is defeated and put to death by the Chilese</i>                                     | 91       |                                                                    |          |
| <b>Valdivia Town founded</b>                                                              | 88       |                                                                    |          |
| <i>Its commodious Harbour described</i>                                                   | 107, 121 |                                                                    |          |
| <b>Vincent, St. a Town and Province of Brazil</b>                                         | 277      |                                                                    |          |

## The T A B L E.

|                                                                                           |       |                                                                                                             |       |
|-------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|-------|-------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|-------|
| <i>federacy against them</i>                                                              | 403   | <i>A Skirmish with the Natives</i>                                                                          | ibid. |
| <i>A Conspiracy against the English defeated</i>                                          | 405   | <i>Point Comfort</i>                                                                                        | 435   |
| <i>The Chiefs of the Indians cut in pieces</i>                                            | ibid. | <i>Possession taken of the Country</i>                                                                      | ibid. |
| <i>The first Colony carry'd back to England</i>                                           | ibid. | <i>The English entertain'd by the Natives</i>                                                               | ibid. |
| <i>Fifteen Men left at Roanoak by Sir Edward Greenville</i>                               | 406   | <i>An Interview with some Weroances</i>                                                                     | 436   |
| <i>A third Colony sent thither by Sir Walter Raleigh</i>                                  | ib.   | <i>The Fort of James-Town erected</i>                                                                       | 437   |
| <i>Mr. Howe kill'd by the Indians</i>                                                     | 407   | <i>The Friendship of the Natives very precarious</i>                                                        | 438   |
| <i>A Detachment sent to Croatan</i>                                                       | ibid. | <i>Captain Newport returns to England</i>                                                                   | ibid. |
| <i>The second Colony lost</i>                                                             | ibid. | <i>The Colony reduc'd to great Distress</i>                                                                 | ibid. |
| <i>The third Colony left to perish</i>                                                    | 412   | <i>Captain Smith goes in search of Provisions</i>                                                           | 439   |
| <i>Captain Gilbert and Gofnold's Voyage, An.</i>                                          | 1602  | <i>Takes them by Force from the Natives on their Refusal to sell him any</i>                                | ibid. |
|                                                                                           | 422   | <i>A Design formed to abandon the Fort</i>                                                                  | ibid. |
| <i>Captain Pringe's Voyage from Bristol to Virginia, An.</i>                              | 1603  | <i>Smith taken by the King of Powhatan</i>                                                                  | 440   |
| <i>Weymouth, Captain, his Voyage to Virginia</i>                                          | 429   | <i>His Life saved by Pacahunta Powhatan's Daughter, and a Peace made between the Natives and the Colony</i> | ib.   |
| <i>King James's Patent, incorporating the Virginian Adventurers in two Companies, An.</i> | 1606  | <i>Powhatan crown'd</i>                                                                                     | 441   |
| <i>The London Company</i>                                                                 | 431   | <i>The Colony load a Ship home with gilded Dust</i>                                                         | 442   |
| <i>The Plymouth Company</i>                                                               | ib.   | <i>Smith restores the Affairs of the Colony</i>                                                             | 445   |
| <i>The London Company send three Ships to Virginia</i>                                    | 433   | <i>Divisions among the Planters</i>                                                                         | ibid. |
| <i>They land in Chesapeake Bay in Virginia</i>                                            | 434   | <i>A new Patent</i>                                                                                         | 446   |
| <i>Cape Henry and Cape Charles</i>                                                        | ibid. | <i>Lord De la War Governor</i>                                                                              | ib.   |
| <i>The Commodiousness of this Bay</i>                                                     | ibid. | <i>Deputy Governors</i>                                                                                     | ibid. |
|                                                                                           |       | <i>Summers and Gates cast away on Bermudas</i>                                                              | ib.   |
|                                                                                           |       | <i>The</i>                                                                                                  |       |

## The T A B L E.

|                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                     |                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                          |
|-------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|
| <p><i>The Colony reduced very low</i> 447</p> <p><i>Resolve to quit the Country</i> ib.</p> <p><i>Lord De la War arrives and prevents it</i> ibid.</p> <p><i>His prudent Administration</i> ibid.</p> <p><i>Powhatan threatens the English</i> 449</p> <p><i>Lord De la War brings him to Terms</i> ibid.</p> <p><i>Lord De la War returns to England</i> 450</p> <p><i>Gates's Administration</i> 451</p> <p><i>Pacahunta marry'd to Mr. Rolfe</i> 452</p> <p><i>A Peace between the English and Powhatan</i> ibid.</p> <p><i>Pacahunta comes to England</i> ibid.</p> <p><i>Yardly promotes the Tobacco Plantation</i> 453</p> <p><i>Argoll's Administration</i> 454</p> <p><i>Lord De la War dies</i> ibid.</p> <p><i>Powhatan dies</i> ibid.</p> <p><i>Yardly Governor a second time</i> ibid.</p> <p><i>The Government settled on the same Foot as in England,</i> 1620 455</p> <p><i>The first Assembly</i> ibid.</p> <p><i>Negroes first imported</i> ibid.</p> <p><i>The Lands parcell'd out among the Planters</i> ibid.</p> <p><i>The Colony flourishes</i> 456</p> <p><i>Wyat's Government</i> ibid.</p> <p><i>Courts of Justice</i> 457</p> <p><i>The English massacred by the Indians</i> 458</p> <p><i>Treachery of the English, who massacre the Indians</i> 461</p> | <p><i>Manufactures of Glass ruin'd and Iron Mines</i> 462</p> <p><i>The Company dissolved</i> 464</p> <p><i>The Crown appoints a Governor</i> ibid.</p> <p><i>Lord Baltimore's Grant of Maryland</i> 466</p> <p><i>Other Parts of Virginia separated from it</i> 467</p> <p><i>Uragua, a Province and River of La Plata</i> 171, 175</p> |
|-------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|

### W

|                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                              |
|----------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|
| <p><b>WARWICK</b>, a County in Virginia 327</p> <p><i>Weroances, or Virginian Kings, an Interview between them and the English</i> 436</p> <p><i>Westmorland, a County in Virginia</i> 329</p> <p><i>Whale Fishery at Brazil</i> 271</p> <p><i>Williamsburgh, a Town in Virginia</i> 325</p> |
|----------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|

### X

|                                                  |
|--------------------------------------------------|
| <p><b>XAVIER</b>, St. a Town of La Plata 175</p> |
|--------------------------------------------------|

### Y

|                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                             |
|-----------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|
| <p><b>YARDLY</b>, Sir George, Governor of Virginia, first promotes the planting of Tobacco there 453</p> <p><i>He settles the Government like that of England, and divides the Lands among the Planters</i> 455</p> <p><i>York, a County and River in Virginia.</i> 327</p> |
|-----------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|